THE

Palace of Pleasure

ELIZABETHAN VERSIONS OF ITALIAN AND FRENCH NOVELS
FROM BOCCACCIO, BANDELLO, CINTHIO, STRAPAROLA,
QUEEN MARGARET OF NAVARRE,
AND OTHERS

DONE INTO ENGLISH

BY WILLIAM PAINTER

NOW AGAIN EDITED FOR THE FOURTH TIME

BY JOSEPH JACOBS

VOL. I.

LONDON: PUBLISHED BY DAVID NUTT IN THE STRAND
MDCCCXC
# TABLE OF CONTENTS.

## VOLUME I.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Preface</th>
<th>ix</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Introduction</td>
<td>xi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Preliminary Matter (From Haslewood)</td>
<td>xxxvii</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Appendix of Documents relating to Painter</td>
<td>liii</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Analytical Table of Contents of the Whole Work</td>
<td>lxiii</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Index of Novels</td>
<td>xcii</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

## TOME I.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Novel</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>I. Horatii and Curiatii</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II. Rape of Lucrece</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III. Mucius Scævola</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IV. Coriolanus</td>
<td>29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V. Appius and Virginia</td>
<td>35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VI. Candaules and Gyges</td>
<td>46</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VII. Cresus and Solon</td>
<td>49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VIII. Rhacon and Cartomes</td>
<td>53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IX. Artaxerxes and Sinetas</td>
<td>54</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>X. Chariton and Menalippus</td>
<td>56</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XI. Cyrus and PANTHEA</td>
<td>58</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XII. Abdominus King of Scythia</td>
<td>69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XIII. Alexander and the Scythian Ambassadors</td>
<td>71</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XIV. Metellus on Marriage</td>
<td>74</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XV. Lais and Demosthenes</td>
<td>77</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XVI. Fabricius and Pyrrhus</td>
<td>78</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Title</td>
<td>Page</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------------------------------------</td>
<td>------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NOVEL</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XVII. Camillus and Schoolmaster</td>
<td>80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XVIII. Papirius Pætextatus</td>
<td>83</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XIX. Plutarch's Anger</td>
<td>85</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XX. Ἐσοφ's Fable of the Lark</td>
<td>86</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXI. Hannibal and Antiochus</td>
<td>88</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXII. Androclus (Androcles)</td>
<td>89</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXIII. Favorinus</td>
<td>91</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXIV. Sertorius</td>
<td>95</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXV. Sibylline Leaves</td>
<td>98</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXVI. Master and Scholar</td>
<td>99</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXVII. Seleucus and Antiochus</td>
<td>102</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXVIII. Timon of Athens</td>
<td>112</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXIX. Marriage of Widow and Widower</td>
<td>114</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXX. The Three Rings</td>
<td>116</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXXI. Borsieri and Grimaldi</td>
<td>119</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXXII. Aleerto of Bologna</td>
<td>122</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXXIII. Rinaldo of Este</td>
<td>125</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXXIV. King of England's Daughter</td>
<td>130</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXXV. Randolfo Ruffolo</td>
<td>138</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXXVI. Andruccio</td>
<td>143</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXXVII. Earl of Angiers</td>
<td>156</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXXVIII. Giletta of Narbonne</td>
<td>171</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXXIX. Tancred and Gismonda</td>
<td>180</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XL. Mahomet and Irene</td>
<td>190</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XLI. Lady falsely accused</td>
<td>198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XLII. Didaco and Violenta</td>
<td>218</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XLIII. Lady of Turin</td>
<td>240</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XLIV. Aleran and Adelasia</td>
<td>249</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XLV. Duchess of Savoy</td>
<td>285</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XLVI. Countess of Salisbury</td>
<td>334</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ADVERTISEMENT TO READER</td>
<td>364</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
PREFACE.

THE present edition of Painter’s “Palace of Pleasure,” the storehouse of Elizabethan plot, follows page for page and line for line the privately printed and very limited edition made by Joseph Haslewood in 1813. One of the 172 copies then printed by him has been used as “copy” for the printer, but this has been revised in proof from the British Museum examples of the second edition of 1575. The collation has for the most part only served to confirm Haslewood’s reputation for careful editing. Though the present edition can claim to come nearer the original in many thousands of passages, it is chiefly in the mint and cummin of capitals and italics that we have been able to improve on Haslewood: in all the weightier matters of editing he shows only the minimum of fallibility. We have however divided his two tomes, for greater convenience, into three volumes of as nearly as possible equal size. This arrangement has enabled us to give the title pages of both editions of the two tomes, those of the first edition in facsimile, those of the second (at the beginning of vols. ii. and iii.) with as near an approach to the original as modern founts of type will permit.

I have also reprinted Haslewood’s “Preliminary Matter,” which give the Dryasdust details about the biography of Painter and the bibliography of his book in a manner not too Dryasdust. With regard to the literary apparatus of the book, I have
perhaps been able to add something to Haslewood’s work. From the Record Office and British Museum I have given a number of documents about Painter, and have recovered the only extant letter of our author. I have also gone more thoroughly into the literary history of each of the stories in the “Palace of Pleasure” than Haslewood thought it necessary to do. I have found Oesterley’s edition of Kirchhof and Landau’s Quellen des Dekameron useful for this purpose. I have to thank Dr. F. J. Furnivall for lending me his copies of Bandello and Belleforest.

I trust it will be found that the present issue is worthy of a work which, with North’s “Plutarch” and Holinshed’s “Chronicle,” was the main source of Shakespeare’s Plays. It had also, as early as 1580, been ransacked to furnish plots for the stage, and was used by almost all the great masters of the Elizabethan drama. Quite apart from this source of interest, the “Palace of Pleasure” contains the first English translations from the Decameron, the Heptameron, from Bandello, Cinthio and Straparola, and thus forms a link between Italy and England. Indeed as the Italian novelle form part of that continuous stream of literary tradition and influence which is common to all the great nations of Europe, Painter’s book may be termed a link connecting England with European literature. Such a book as this is surely one of the landmarks of English literature.
INTRODUCTION.

A YOUNG man, trained in the strictest sect of the Pharisees, is awakened one morning, and told that he has come into the absolute possession of a very great fortune in lands and wealth. The time may come when he may know himself and his powers more thoroughly, but never again, as on that morn, will he feel such an exultant sense of mastery over the world and his fortunes. That image* seems to me to explain better than any other that remarkable outburst of literary activity which makes the Elizabethan Period unique in English literature, and only paralleled in the world's literature by the century after Marathon, when Athens first knew herself. With Elizabeth England came of age, and at the same time entered into possession of immense spiritual treasures, which were as novel as they were extensive. A New World promised adventures to the adventurous, untold wealth to the enterprising. The Orient had become newly known. The Old World of literature had been born anew. The Bible spoke for the first time in a tongue understood of the people. Man faced his God and his fate without any intervention of Pope or priest. Even the very earth beneath his feet began to move. Instead of a universe with dimensions known and circumscribed with Dantesque minuteness, the mystic glow of the unknown had settled down on the whole face of Nature, who offered her secrets to the first comer. No wonder the Elizabethans were filled with an exulting sense of man's capabilities, when they had all these realms of thought and action suddenly and at once thrown open before them. There is a confidence in the future and all it had

* It was suggested to me, if I remember right, by my friend Mr. R. G. Moulton.
INTRODUCTION.

to bring which can never recur, for while man may come into even greater treasures of wealth or thought than the Elizabethans dreamed of, they can never be as new to us as they were to them. The sublime confidence of Bacon in the future of science, of which he knew so little, and that little wrongly, is thus eminently and characteristically Elizabethan.*

The department of Elizabethan literature in which this exuberant energy found its most characteristic expression was the Drama, and that for a very simple though strange reason. To be truly great a literature must be addressed to the nation as a whole. The subtle influence of audience on author is shown equally though conversely in works written only for sections of a nation. Now in the sixteenth century any literature that should address the English nation as a whole—not necessarily all Englishmen, but all classes of Englishmen—could not be in any literary form intended to be merely read. For the majority of Englishmen could not read. Hence they could only be approached by literature when read or recited to them in church or theatre. The latter form was already familiar to them in the Miracle Plays and Mysteries, which had been adopted by the Church as the best means of acquainting the populace with Sacred History. The audiences of the Miracle Plays were prepared for the representation of human action on the stage. Meanwhile, from translation and imitation, young scholars at the universities had become familiar with some of the masterpieces of Ancient Drama, and with the laws of dramatic form. But where were they to seek for matter to fill out these forms? Where were they, in short, to get their plots?

Plot, we know, is pattern as applied to human action. A story, whether told or acted, must tend in some definite direction if it is to be a story at all. And the directions in which stories can go are singularly few. Somebody in the *Athenæum*—probably Mr. Theodore Watts, he has the habit of saying such things—has remarked that during the past century only two novelties in plot,

* There was something Elizabethan in the tone of men of science in England during the “seventies,” when Darwinism was to solve all the problems. The Marlowe of the movement, the late Professor Clifford, found no Shakespeare.
Undine and Monte Christo, have been produced in European literature. Be that as it may, nothing strikes the student of comparative literature so much as the paucity of plots throughout literature and the universal tendency to borrow plots rather than attempt the almost impossible task of inventing them. That tendency is shown at its highest in the Elizabethan Drama. Even Shakespeare is as much a plagiarist or as wise an artist, call it which you will, as the meanest of his fellows.

Not alone is it difficult to invent a plot; it is even difficult to see one in real life. When the denouement comes, indeed—when the wife flees or commits suicide—when bosom friends part, or brothers speak no more—we may know that there has been the conflict of character or the clash of temperaments which go to make the tragedies of life. But to recognise these opposing forces before they come to the critical point requires somewhat rarer qualities. There must be a quasi-scientific interest in life, a dispassionate detachment from the events observed, and at the same time an artistic capacity for selecting the cardinal points in the action. Such an attitude can only be attained in an older civilisation, when individuality has emerged out of nationalism. In Europe of the sixteenth century the only country which had reached this stage was Italy.

The literary and spiritual development of Italy has always been conditioned by its historic position as the heir of Rome. Great nations, as M. Renan has remarked, work themselves out in effecting their greatness. The reason is that their great products overshadow all later production, and prevent all competition by their very greatness. When once a nation has worked up its mythic element into an epos, it contains in itself no further materials out of which an epos can be elaborated. So Italian literature has always been overshadowed by Latin literature. Italian writers, especially in the Middle Ages and the Renaissance, were always conscious of their past, and dared not compete with the great names of Virgil, Ovid, Horace, and the rest. At the same time, with this consciousness of the past, they had evolved a special interest in the problems and arts of the present. The split-up of the peninsula into so many small states, many of
INTRODUCTION.

them republics, had developed individual life just as the city-states of Hellas had done in ancient times. The main interest shifted from the state and the nation to the life and development of the individual.* And with this interest arose in the literary sphere the dramatic narrative of human action—the Novella.

The genealogy of the Novella is short but curious. The first known collection of tales in modern European literature dealing with the tragic and comic aspects of daily life was that made by Petrus Alphonsi, a baptized Spanish Jew, who knew some Arabic.† His book, the Disciplina Clericalis, was originally intended as seasoning for sermons, and very strong seasoning they must have been found. The stories were translated into French, and thus gave rise to the Fabliau, which allowed full expression to the esprit Gaulois. From France the Fabliau passed to Italy, and came ultimately into the hands of Boccaccio, under whose influence it became transformed into the Novella.‡

It is an elementary mistake to associate Boccaccio's name with the tales of gayer tone traceable to the Fabliaux. He initiated the custom of mixing tragic with the comic tales. Nearly all the novelle of the Fourth Day, for example, deal with tragic topics. And the example he set in this way was followed by the whole school of Novellieri. As Painter's book is so largely due to them, a few words on the Novellieri used by him seem desirable, reserving for the present the question of his treatment of their text.

Of Giovanne Boccaccio himself it is difficult for any one with a love of letters to speak in few or measured words. He may have been a Philistine, as Mr. Symonds calls him, but he was surely a Philistine of genius. He has the supreme virtue of style. In fact, it may be roughly said that in Europe for nearly two centuries there is no such thing as a prose style but Boccaccio’s.

* See Burckhardt, Cultur der Renaissance in Italien, Buch II., especially Kap. iii.
† On Peter Alphonsi see my edition of Caxton's Æsop, which contains selections from him in Vol. II.
‡ Signor Bartoli has written on I Procurori di Boccaccio, 1874, Landau on his Life and Sources (Leben, 1880, Quellen des Dekameron, 1884), and on his successors (Beiträge zur Geschichte der ital. Novelle, 1874). Mr. Symonds has an admirable chapter on the Novellieri in his Renaissance, vol. v.
Even when dealing with his grosser topics—and these he derived from others—he half disarms disgust by the lightness of his touch. And he could tell a tale, one of the most difficult of literary tasks. When he deals with graver actions, if he does not always rise to the occasion, he never fails to give the due impression of seriousness and dignity. It is not for nothing that the Decamerone has been the storehouse of poetic inspiration for nearly five centuries. In this country alone, Chaucer, Shakespeare, Dryden, Keats, Tennyson, have each in turn gone to Boccaccio for material.

In his own country he is the fountainhead of a wide stream of literary influences that has ever broadened as it flowed. Between the fifteenth and the eighteenth centuries the Italian presses poured forth some four thousand novelle, all avowedly tracing from Boccaccio.* Many of these, it is true, were imitations of the gayer strains of Boccaccio's genius. But a considerable proportion of them have a sterner tone, and deal with the weightier matters of life, and in this they had none but the master for their model. The gloom of the Black Death settles down over the greater part of all this literature. Every memorable outburst of the fiercer passions of men that occurred in Italy, the land of passion, for all these years, found record in a novella of Boccaccio's followers. The Novelle answered in some respects to our newspaper reports of trials and the earlier Last Speech and Confession. But the example of Boccaccio raised these gruesome topics into the region of art. Often these tragedies are reported of the true actors; still more often under the disguise of fictitious names, that enabled the narrator to have more of the artist's freedom in dealing with such topics.

The other Novellieri from whom Painter drew inspiration may be dismissed very shortly. Of Ser Giovanni Fiorentino, who wrote the fifty novels of his Pecorone about 1378, little is known nor need be known; his merits of style or matter do not raise him above mediocrity. Straparola's Piacevole Notti were composed in Venice in the earlier half of the sixteenth century, and are chiefly interest-

* Specimens of these in somewhat wooden English were given by Roscoe in his Italian Novelists.
INTRODUCTION.

ing for the fact that some dozen or so of his seventy-four stories are folk-tales taken from the mouth of the people, and were the first thus collected: Straparola was the earliest Grimm. His con-
temporary Giraldi, known as Cinthio (or Cinzio), intended his _Ecatomithi_ to include one hundred _novelle_, but they never reached beyond seventy; he has the grace to cause the ladies to retire when the men relate their smoking-room anecdotes of _feminine impudiche_. Owing to Dryden's statement "Shakespeare's plots are in the one hundred novels of Cinthio" (Preface to _Astrologer_), his name has been generally fixed upon as the representative Italian novelist from whom the Elizabethans drew their plots. As a matter of fact only "Othello" (Ecat. iii. 7), and "Measure for Measure" (ib. viii. 5), can be clearly traced to him, though "Twelfth Night" has some similarity with Cinthio's "Gravina" (v. 8): both come from a common source, Bandello.

Bandello is indeed the next greatest name among the _Novellieri_ after that of Boccaccio, and has perhaps had even a greater influence on dramatic literature than his master. Matteo Bandello was born at the end of the fifteenth century at Castelnuovo di Scrivia near Tortona. He lived mainly in Milan, at the Dominican monastery of Sta Maria delle Grazie, where Leonardo painted his "Last Supper." As he belonged to the French party, he had to leave Milan when it was taken by the Spaniards in 1525, and after some wanderings settled in France near Agen. About 1550 he was appointed Bishop of Agen by Henri II., and he died some time after 1561. To do him justice, he only received the revenues of his see, the episcopal functions of which were performed by the Bishop of Grasse. His _novelle_ are nothing less than episcopal in tone and he had the grace to omit his dignity from his title-
pages.

Indeed Bandello's novels* reflect as in a mirror all the worst sides of Italian Renaissance life. The complete collapse of all the older sanctions of right conduct, the execrable example given by the petty courts, the heads of which were reckless because their position was so insecure, the great growth of wealth and

* The Villon Society is to publish this year a complete translation of Bandello by Mr. John Payne.
luxury, all combined to make Italy one huge hot-bed of unblushing vice. The very interest in individuality, the spectator-attitude towards life, made men ready to treat life as one large experiment, and for such purposes vice is as important as right living even though it ultimately turns out to be as humdrum as virtue. The Italian nobles treated life in this experimental way and the novels of Bandello and others give us the results of their experiments. The Novellieri were thus the "realists" of their day and of them all Bandello was the most realistic. He claims to give only incidents that really happened and makes this his excuse for telling many incidents that should never have happened. It is but fair to add that his most vicious tales are his dullest.

That cannot be said of Queen Margaret of Navarre, who carries on the tradition of the Novellieri, and is represented in Painter by some of her best stories. She intended to give a Decameron of one hundred stories—the number comes from the Cento novelle aftichi, before Boccaccio—but only got so far as the second novel of the eighth day. As she had finished seven days her collection is known as the Heptameron. How much of it she wrote herself is a point on which the doctors dispute. She had in her court men like Clement Marot, and Bonaventure des Périers, who probably wrote some of the stories. Bonaventure des Périers in particular, had done much in the same line under his own name, notably the collection known as Cymbalum Mundi. Marguerite's other works hardly prepare us for the narrative skill, the easy grace of style and the knowledge of certain aspects of life shown in the Heptameron. On the other hand the framework, which is more elaborate than in Boccaccio or any of his school, is certainly from one hand, and the book does not seem one that could have been connected with the Queen's name unless she had really had much to do with it. Much of its piquancy comes from the thought of the association of one whose life was on the whole quite blameless with anecdotes of a most blameworthy style. Unlike the lady in the French novel who liked to play at innocent games with persons who were not innocent, Margaret seems to have liked to talk and write of things
INTRODUCTION.

not innocent while remaining unspotted herself. Her case is not a solitary one.

The whole literature of the Novella has the attraction of graceful naughtiness in which vice, as Burke put it, loses half its evil by losing all its grossness. At all times, and for all time probably, similar tales, more broad than long, will form favourite talk or reading of adolescent males. They are, so to speak, pimples of the soul which synchronise with similar excrescences of the skin. Some men have the art of never growing old in this respect, but I cannot say I envy them their eternal youth. However, we are not much concerned with tales of this class on the present occasion. Very few of the novelle selected by Painter for translation depend for their attraction on mere naughtiness. In matters of sex the sublime and the ridiculous are more than usually close neighbours. It is the tragic side of such relations that attracted Painter, and it was this fact that gave his book its importance for the history of English literature, both in its connection with Italian letters and in its own internal development.

The relations of Italy and England in matters literary are due to the revivers of the New Learning. Italy was, and still is, the repository of all the chief MSS. of the Greek and Latin classics. Thither, therefore, went all the young Englishmen, whom the influence of Erasmus had bitten with a desire for the New Learning which was the Old Learning born anew. But in Italy itself, the New Learning had even by the early years of the sixteenth century produced its natural result of giving birth to a national literature (Ariosto, Trissino). Thus in their search for the New Learning, Englishmen of culture who went to Italy came back with a tincture of what may be called the Newest Learning, the revival of Italian Literature.

Sir Thomas Wyatt and the Earl of Surrey "The Dioscuri of the Dawn" as they have been called, are the representatives of this new movement in English thought and literature, which came close on the heels of the New Learning represented by Colet, More, Henry VIII. himself and Roger Ascham. The adherents of the New Learning did not look with too favourable eyes on
INTRODUCTION.

the favourers of the Newest Learning. They took their ground not only on literary lines, but with distinct reference to manners and morals. The corruption of the Papal Court which had been the chief motive cause of the Reformation—men judge creeds by the character they produce, not by the logical consistency of their tenets—had spread throughout Italian society. The Englishmen who came to know Italian society could not avoid being contaminated by the contact. The Italians themselves observed the effect and summed it up in their proverb, Inglese italianato e un diabolo incarnato. What struck the Italians must have been still more noticeable to Englishmen. We have a remarkable proof of this in an interpolation made by Roger Ascham at the end of the first part of his Schoolmaster, which from internal evidence must have been written about 1568, the year after the appearance of Painter’s Second Tome.* The whole passage is so significant of the relations of the chief living exponent of the New Learning to the appearance of what I have called the Newest Learning that it deserves to be quoted in full in any introduction to the book in which the Newest Learning found its most characteristic embodiment. I think too I shall be able to prove that there is a distinct and significant reference to Painter in the passage (pp. 77–85 of Arber’s edition, slightly abridged).

But I am affraide, that ouer many of our traveleris into Italie, do not exchewe the way to Circes Court: but go, and ryde, and runne, and flie thether, they make great hast to cum to her: they make great fute to ferue her: yea, I could point out some with my finger, that neuer had gone out of England, but onelie to ferue Circes, in Italie. Vanitie and vice, and any licence to ill liuyng in England was counted flale and rude vnto them. And fo, beyng Mules and Horfes before they went, returned verie Swyne and Asses home agayne; yet euerie where verie Foxes with as futter and bufie heades; and where they may, verie Woolues, with cruell malicious hartes. A maruelous mon-

* See Prof. Arber’s reprint, p. 8.
INTRODUCTION.

wolfe. If you thinke, we judge amisse, and write to fore against you, heare, what the *Italian* fayth of the English Man, what the mafter reporteth of the scholer: who vtereth playnlie, what is taught by him, and what learned by you, sayinge *Englilhe Italianato, e vn diabolò incarnato*, that is to say, you remaine men in shape and faction, but becum deuils in life and condition. This is not, the opinion of one, for some priuate spite, but the judgemeent of all, in a common Prouerbe, which riseth, of that learnyng, and thofe maners, which you gather in *Italie*: a good Scholehoufe of wholesome doctrine, and worthy Maflers of commendable Scholers, where the Mafler had rather difname hym selfe for his teachyng, than not shame his Scholer for his learnyng. A good nature of the mafler, and faire conditions of the scholers. And now chose you, you *Italian* Engilsh men, whether you will be angrie with vs, for calling you monsters, or with the *Italianes*, for callyng you deuils, or else with your owne felues, that take so much paines, and go fo farre, to make your felues both. If some yet do not well underland, what is an English man Italianated, I will plainlie tell him. He, that by liuing, and traueling in *Italie*, bringeth home into England out of *Italie*, the Religion, the learning, the policie, the experience, the maners of *Italie*. . . . These be the inchantements of *Circes*, brought out of *Italie*, to marre mens maners in England; much, by example of ill life, but more by preceptes of fonde bookes, of late translated out of *Italian* into English, fold in euery shop in London, commended by honest tites the soner to corrupt honest maners: dedicated ouer boldlie to vertuous and honourable personages, the easelier to beglie simple and innocent wittes. It is pitie, that thofe, which haue authoritie and charge, to allow and difallow bookes to be printed, be no more circumspect herein, than they are. Ten Sermons at Paules Croffe do not fo much good for moyung men to trewe doctrine, as one of thofe bookes do harme, with inticing men to ill liuing. Yea, I say farde, thofe bookes, tend not fo much to corrupt honett liuing, as they do, to subuer trewe Religion. Mo Papiftes be made, by your mery bookes of *Italie*, than by your earnest bookes of *Louain*. . . .

Therfore, when the busie and open Papiftes abroad, could not, by their contentious bookes, turne men in England faft enough, from troth and right judgement in doctrine, than the futile and secrete Papiftes at home, procured bawdie bookes to be translated out of the *Italian* tonge, whereby ouer many yong wittes and wittes
INTRODUCTION.

allured to wantonness, do now boldly contemne all seuerely bookees that founde to honestie and godlines. In our forefathers tyme, whan Papistrie, as a standyng poole, couered and ouerflowed all England, feue bookees were read in our tong, fayung certaine bookees of Cheualrie, as they sayd, for pastime and pleasure, which, as some say, were made in Monasteries, by idle Monkes, or wanton Chanons: as one for example, Morte Arthure: the whole pleasure of Morte Arthur, which booke flandeth in two speciall poyntes, in open mans slaughter, and bold bawdrye: In which booke those be counted the nobleft Knightes, that do kill moft men without any quarrell, and commit fowle aduolteres by subtle fhiftes: as Sir Lannelote, with the wife of king Arthure his master: Syr Trifram with the wife of king Marke his vnclle: Syr Lamerocke with the wife of king Lote, that was his owne aunte. This is good fluffe, for wife men to laughe att or honest men to take pleaure at. Yet I know, when Gods Bible was banifhed the Court, and Morte Arthure received into the Princes chamber. What toyes, the dayly readyng of fuch a booke, may worke in the will of a yong inteleman, or a yong mayde, that liueth welthele and idlele, wife men can iudge, and honest men do pitie. And yet ten Morte Arthures do not the tenth part so much harme, as one of these bookees, made in Italie, and translated in England. They open, not fond and common ways to vice, but fuch subtle, cunning, new, and diuerse fhiftes, to carry yong willes to vanitie, and yong wittes to mischief, to teach old bawdes new schole poynthes, as the simple head of an Englishe man is not hable to iuente, nor never was hard of in England before, yea when Papistrie ouerflowed all. Suffer these bookees to be read, and they shal foon displace all bookees of godly learnynge. For they, carying the will to vanitie and marryng good maners, shal easfely corrupt the mynde with ill opinions, and false judgement in doctrine: first, to thinke nothynge of God hym selfe, one speciall poynthe that is to be learned in Italie, and Italian bookees. And that which is moft to be lamented, and there fore more nedefull to be looked to, there be mose of these vngratious bookees fet out in Printe within these feue monethes, than haue bene fene in England many score yeare before. And bicaufe our Englishe men made Italians can not hurt, but certaine perfons, and in certaine places, therfore these Italian bookees are made Englishe, to bryng mischief enough openly and boldly, to all flates great and meane, yong and old, euery where.

And thus you fe, how will intisfed to wantonnes, doth eafelie allure the mynde to falsy opinions: and how corrupt maners in liuinge, breede
ITALY.

They sayes mens They Italie, how England, doctrine: and heresies: And therefore suffer not vaine bookes to breed vanity in mens wills, if yow would haue Goddes trothe take roote in mens myndes. . . .

They genuing themselfes vp to vanity, shakinge of the motions of Grace, driving from them the feare of God, and running headlong into all sinne, first, luftlie contemne God, than scornefullie mocke his worde, and also spitefullie hate and hurte all well willers thereof. Then they haue in more reuerence the triumphes of Petrarche: than the Genesis of Mofes: They make more account of Tullies offices, than S. Paules epistles: of a tale in Boace, than a storie of the Bible. Than they counte as Fables, the holie mifteries of Christian Religion. They make Christ and his Gofpell, onelie ferue Ciuiil policie: Than neyther Religion cummeth amiffe to them. . . .

For where they dare, in cumpance where they like, they boldlie laughe to scorne both protestant and Papift. They care for no scripture: They make no counte of generall counsels: they contenmne the conuent of the Chirch: They passe for no Doctores: They mocke the Pope: They raile on Luther: They allow neyther side: They like none, but onelie themselfes: The marke they shote at, the ende they looke for, the heauen they defire, is onelie, their owne preuent pleasure, and private profit: whereby, they plainlie declare, of whose schole, of what Religion they be: that is, Epicures in liuing, and â€œin doctrine: this last worde, is no more vnknowne now to plaine Englishe men, than the Person was vnknown somtyme in England, vntill som Englishe man tooke peines to fetch that deuelfh opinin out of Italie. . . .

I was once in Italie my selfe: but I thanke God, my abode there, Venice, was but ix. dayes: And yet I fawe in that litle time, in one Citie, more libertie to sinne, than euer I hard tell of in our noble London. Citie of London in ix. yeare. I fawe, it was there, as free to sinne, not onelie without all punishment, but also without any mans marking, as it is free in the Citie of London, to chowe, without all blame, whether a man lust to weare Shoo or Pantocle. . . .

Our Italians bring home with them other faultes from Italie, though not so great as this of Religion, yet a great deale greater, than many good men will beare. For commonlie they cum home, Contempt of marriage. common contemners of mariage and readie persuaders of all other to the same: not because they loue virginitie, nor yet because they hate prettie yong virgines, but, being free in Italie, to go whither so euer lust will carry them, they do not like, that lawe and honestie should be foche a barre to their like libertie at home in England. And
yet they be, the greatest makers of love, the daylie daliers, with such pleasant words, with such finilyng and secret countenances, with such signes, tokens, wagers, purposed to be lost, before they were purposed to be made, with bargains of wearing colours, flores and herbes, to breed occasion of after meeting of him and her, and bolder talking of this and that, etc. And although I have seene some, innocent of ill, and stayde in all honestlie, that have vfed these things without all harme, without all suspicion of harme, yet these knockes were brought first into England by them, that learned them before in Italie in Circes Court: and how Courtlie curteffes fo ever they be counted now, yet, if the meaning and maners of some that do vfe them, were somewhat amended, it were no great hurt, neither to them selues, nor to others.

An other property of this our English Italians is, to be meruelous fingular in all their matters: Singular in knowledge, ignorant in nothing: So singuler in wisedome (in their owne opinion) as scarce they counte the best Counfellor the Prince hath, comparable with them: Common discouurers of all matters: bufie searchers of most secret affaires: open flatterers of great men: priue mislikers of good men: Faire speakers, with finiling countenances, and much curteffie openlie to all men. Ready bakkibers, fore nippers, and spitefull reporters priuily of good men. And beyng brought vp in Italie, in some free Citie, as all Cities be there: where a man may freelie discourse against what he will, against whom he lust: against any Prince, against any governement, yeu against God him selfe, and his whole Religion: where he must be, either Guelphe or Gibiline, either French or Spaniish: and always compelled to be of some partie, of some faction, he shall never be compelled to be of any Religion: And if he medle not over much with Chriftes true Religion, he shall have free libertie to embrace all Religions, and becum, if he lust at once, without any let or punishment, Jewifh, Turkifh, Papifh, and Deuifh.

It is the old quarrel of classicists and Romanticists, of the ancien régime and the new school in literature, which runs nearly through every age. It might be Victor Cousin reproving Victor Hugo, or, say, M. Renan protesting, if he could protest, against M. Zola. Nor is the diatribe against the evil communication that had corrupted good manners any novelty in the quarrel. Critics have practically recognised that letters are a reflex of life long before Matthew Arnold formulated the relation. And in the disputing between Classicists and Romanticists it has invariably happened
that the Classicists were the earlier generation, and therefore more given to convention, while the Romanticists were likely to be experimental in life as in literature. Altogether then, we must discount somewhat Ascham's fierce denunciation, of the Italianate Englishman, and of the Englishing of Italian books.

There can be little doubt, I think, that in the denunciation of the "bawdie stories" introduced from Italy, Ascham was thinking mainly and chiefly of Painter's "Palace of Pleasure." The whole passage is later than the death of Sir Thomas Sackville in 1566, and necessarily before the death of Ascham in December 1568. Painter's First Tome appeared in 1566, and his Second Tome in 1567. Of its immediate and striking success there can be no doubt. A second edition of the first Tome appeared in 1569, the year after Ascham's death, and a second edition of the whole work in 1575, the first Tome thus going through three editions in nine years. It is therefore practically certain that Ascham had Painter's book in his mind* in the above passage, which may be taken as a contemporary criticism of Painter, from the point of view of an adherent of the New-Old Learning, who conveniently forgot that scarcely a single one of the Latin classics is free from somewhat similar blemishes to those he found in Painter and his fellow-translators from the Italian.

But it is time to turn to the book which roused Ascham's ire so greatly, and to learn something of it and its author.† William Painter was probably a Kentishman, born somewhere about 1525.‡ He seems to have taken his degree at one of the Universities, as we find him head master of Sevenoaks' school about 1560, and the head master had to be a Bachelor of Arts. In the next year, however, he left the paedagogic toga for some connection with arms, for on 9 Feb. 1561, he was appointed

* Ascham was shrewd enough not to advertise the book he was denouncing by referring to it by name. I have failed to find in the Stationer's Register of 1566-8 any similar book to which his remarks could apply, except Fenton's Tragical Discourse, and that was from the French.
† See Haslwood's account, reprinted infra, p. xxxvii., to which I have been able to add a few documents in the Appendix.
‡ His son, in a document of 1591, speaks of him as his aged father (Appendix infra, p. Ivii.).
Clerk of the Ordnance, with a stipend of eightpence per diem, and it is in that character that he figures on his title page. He soon after married Dorothy Bonham of Dowling (born about 1537, died 1617), and had a family of at least five children. He acquired two important manors in Gillingham, co. Kent, East Court and Twidall. Haslewood is somewhat at a loss to account for these possessions. From documents I have discovered and printed in an Appendix, it becomes only too clear, I fear, that Painter's fortune had the same origin as too many private fortunes, in peculation of public funds.

So far as we can judge from the materials at our disposal, it would seem that Painter obtained his money by a very barefaced procedure. He seems to have moved powder and other materials of war from Windsor to the Tower, charged for them on delivery at the latter place as if they had been freshly bought, and pocketed the proceeds. On the other hand, it is fair to Painter to say that we only have the word of his accusers for the statement, though both he and his son own to certain undefined irregularities. It is, at any rate, something in his favour that he remained in office till his death, unless he was kept there on the principle of setting a peculator to catch a peculator. I fancy, too, that the Earl of Warwick was implicated in his misdeeds, and saved him from their consequences.

His works are but few. A translation from the Latin account, by Nicholas Moffan, of the death of the Sultan Solyman,* was made by him in 1557. In 1560 an address in prose, prefixed to Dr. W. Fulke's *Antiprognosticon,* was signed "Your familiar friend, William Paynter," † and dated "From Sevenoke xxii. of Octobre;" and the same volume contains Latin verses entitled "Gulielmi Painteri, ludimagistri Seuenochensis Tetrastichon."

It is perhaps worth while remarking that this *Antiprognosticon* was directed against Anthony Ascham, Roger's brother, which may perhaps account for some of the bitterness in the above passage from the *Scholemaster.* These slight productions, however,

† In his own book, and in the document signed by him, the name is always "Painter."
sink into insignificance in comparison with his chief work, "The Palace of Pleasure."

He seems to have started work on this before he left Seven Oaks in 1561. For as early as 1562 he got a licence for a work to be entitled "The Citye of Cyuelite," as we know from the following entry in the Stationers' Registers:—


From his own history of the work given in the dedication of the first Tome to his patron, the Earl of Warwick, it is probable that this was originally intended to include only tales from Livy and the Latin historians. He seems later to have determined on adding certain of Boccaccio's novels, and the opportune appearance of a French translation of Bandello in 1559 caused him to add half a dozen or so from the Bishop of Agen. Thus a book which was originally intended to be another contribution to the New Learning of classical antiquity turned out to be the most important representative in English of the Newest Learning of Italy. With the change of plan came a change of title, and the "City of Civility," which was to have appeared in 1562, was replaced by the "Palace of Pleasure" in 1566.*

The success of the book seems to have been immediate. We have seen above Ascham's indignant testimony to this, and the appearance of the Second Tome, half as large again as the other, within about eighteen months of the First, confirms his account. This Second Tome was practically the Bandello volume; more than half of the tales, and those by far the longest, were taken from him, through the medium of his French translators, Boaistuau and Belleforest. Within a couple of years another edition was called for of the First Tome, which appeared in 1569, with the addition of five more stories from the Heptameron, from which eleven were already in the first edition. Thus the First Tome might be called the Heptameron volume, and the second, that of Bandello. Boccaccio is pretty

* The Dedication is dated near the Tower of London 1 January 1566, which must have been new style (introduced into France two years before).
INTRODUCTION.

evenly divided between the two, and the remainder is made up of classic tales and anecdotes and a few novelle of Ser Giovanni and Straparola. Both Tomes were reprinted in what may be called the definitive edition of the work in 1575.

Quite apart from its popularity and its influence on the English stage, on which we shall have more to say shortly, Painter's book deserves a larger place in the history of English Literature than has as yet been given to it. It introduced to England some of the best novels of Boccaccio, Bandello, and Queen Margaret, three of the best raconteurs of short stories the world has ever had. It is besides the largest work in English prose that appeared between the Morte Darthur and North's Plutarch.* Painter's style bears the impress of French models. Though professing to be from Italian novellieri, it is mainly derived from French translations of them. Indeed, but for the presence of translations from Ser Giovanni and Straparola, it might be doubtful whether Painter translated from the Italian at all. He claims however to do this from Boccaccio, and as he owns the aid of a French "crib" in the case of Bandello, the claim may be admitted. His translations from the French are very accurate, and only err in the way of too much literalness.† From a former dominie one would have expected a far larger proportion of Latinisms than we actually find. As a rule, his sentences are relatively short, and he is tolerably free from the vice of the long periods that were brought into vogue by "Ciceronianism." He is naturally free from Euphuism and for a very good reason, since Euphues and his Englande was not published for another dozen years or so. The recent suggestion of Dr. Landmann and others that Euphuism came from the influence of Guevara would seem to be negatived by the fact that the "Letters of Trajan" in the Second Tome of Painter are taken from Guevara and are no more Euphuistic than the rest of the volume.

Painter's volume is practically the earliest volume of prose trans-

* Always with the exception of exceptions, the Bishop's Bible.
† Mr. P. A. Daniel, in his edition of Painter's "Romeo and Juliet," in the New Shakespere Society's Originals and Analogues, i., 1876, gives the few passages in which Painter has misunderstood Boaistuan. For lexicographical use, however, it would be well to consult Painter's original for any very striking peculiarities of his vocabulary.
lations from a modern language into English in the true Elizabethan period after the influence of Caxton in literary importation had died away with Bourchier the translator of Froissart and of Huon of Bordeaux. It set the ball rolling in this direction, and found many followers, some of whom may be referred to as having had an influence only second to that of Painter in providing plots for the Elizabethan Drama. There can be little doubt that it was Painter set the fashion, and one of his chief followers recognised this, as we shall see, on his title page.

The year in which Painter's Second Tome appeared saw George (afterwards Sir George) Fenton's Certaine Tragicall Discourses writtene oute of Frenche and Latine containing fourteen "histories." As four of these are identical with tales contained in Painter's Second Tome it is probable that Fenton worked independently, though it was doubtless the success of the "Palace of Pleasure" that induced Thomas Marshe, Painter's printer, to undertake a similar volume from Fenton. The Tragicall Discourses ran into a second edition in 1569. T. Fortescue's Foreste or Collection of Histories . . . dooen oute of Frenche appeared in 1571 and reached a second edition in 1576. In the latter year appeared a work of G. Pettie that bore on its title page—A Petite Palace of Pettie his Pleasure—a clear reference to Painter's book. Notwithstanding Anthony à Wood's contemptuous judgment of his great-uncle's book it ran through no less than six editions between 1576 and 1613.* The year after Pettie's first edition appeared R. Smyth's Strange and Tragicall histories Translated out of French. In 1576 was also published the first of George Whetstone's collections of tales, the four parts of The Rocke of Regard, in which he told over again in verse several stories already better told by Painter. In the same year, 1576, appeared G. Turberville's Tragical Tales, translated out of sundrie Italians—ten tales in verse, chiefly from Boccaccio. Whetstone's Heptameron of Civill Discourses in 1582 was however a more important contribution to the English Novella,

and it ran through two further editions by 1593.* Thus in the
quarter of a century 1565—1590 no less than eight collections,
most of them running into a second edition, made their appear-
ance in England. Painter's work contains more than all the rest
put together, and its success was the cause of the whole move-
ment. It clearly answered a want and thus created a demand.
It remains to consider the want which was thus satisfied by Painter
and his school.

The quarter of a century from 1565 to 1590 was the seed-time
of the Elizabethan Drama, which blossomed out in the latter year
in Marlowe's Tamburlaine the Great. The only play which pre-
cedes that period, Gordobuc or Ferrex and Porrex, first played in
1561, indicates what direction the English Drama would natu-
really have taken if nothing had intervened to take it out of
its course. Gordobuc is severely classical in its unities; it is of
the Senecan species. Now throughout Western Europe this was
the type of the modern drama,† and it dominated the more
serious side of the French stage down to the time of Victor Hugo.
There can be little doubt that the English Drama would have
followed the classical models but for one thing. The flood of
Italian novelle introduced into England by Painter and his
school, imported a new condition into the problem. It is essen-
tial to the Classical Drama that the plot should be already known
to the audience, that there should be but one main action, and
but one tone, tragic or comic. In Painter's work and those
of his followers, the would-be dramatists of Elizabeth's time
had offered to them a super-abundance of actions quite novel
to their audience, and alternating between grave and gay,
often within the same story.‡ The very fact of their foreignness
was a further attraction. At a time when all things were new,
and intellectual curiosity had become a passion, the opportunity

* M. Jusserand gives a list of most of these translations of French and Italian novels
in his just issued English Novel in the Elizabethan Age, 1890, pp. 80-1. He also
refers to works by Rich and Gascoigne in which novels occur.
† A partial exception is to be made in favour of the Spanish school, which broke
loose from the classical tradition with Lope de Vega.
‡ It is probable however that the "mixture of tones" came more directly from
the Interludes.
of studying the varied life of an historic country like Italy lent an additional charm to the translated *novelle*. In an interesting essay on the "Italy of the Elizabethan Dramatists,"* Vernon Lee remarks that it was the very strangeness and horror of Italian life as compared with the dull decorum of English households that had its attraction for the Elizabethans. She writes as if the dramatists were themselves acquainted with the life they depicted. As a matter of fact, not a single one of the Elizabethan dramatists, as far as I know, was personally acquainted with Italy.† This knowledge of Italian life and crime was almost entirely derived from the works of Painter and his school. If there had been anything corresponding to them dealing with the tragic aspects of English life, the Elizabethan dramatists would have been equally ready to tell of English vice and criminality. They used Holinshed and Fabyan readily enough for their "Histories." They would have used an English Bandello with equal readiness had he existed. But an English Bandello could not have existed at a time when the English folk had not arrived at self-consciousness, and had besides no regular school of tale-tellers like the Italians. It was then only from the Italians that the Elizabethan dramatists could have got a sufficient stock of plots to allow for that interweaving of many actions into one which is the characteristic of the Romantic Drama of Marlowe and his compeers.

That Painter was the main source of plot for the dramatists before Marlowe, we have explicit evidence. Of the very few extant dramas before Marlowe, *Appius and Virginia, Tancred and Gismunda,* and *Cyrus and Panthea* are derived from Painter.‡ We have also references in contemporary literature showing the great impression made by Painter's book on the opponents of the stage. In 1572 E. Dering, in the Epistle prefixed to *A briefe Instruction*, says: "To this purpose we have gotten our Songs and Sonnets, our Palaces of Pleasure, our unchaste Fables and Tragedies, and such like sor-

---

† It has, of course, been suggested that Shakespeare visited Venice. But this is only one of the 1001 mare's nests of the commentators.
‡ Altogether in the scanty notices of this period we can trace a dozen derivatives of Painter. See Analytical Table on Tome I. nov. iii., v., xI., xXVII., xxxix., xl., xlviii., lvii.; Tome II. nov. i., iii., xiv., xxxiv.
... O that there were among us some zealous Ephesian, that books of so great vanity might be burned up.” As early as 1579 Gosson began in his School of Abuse the crusade against stage-plays, which culminated in Prynne’s Histriomastix. He was answered by Lodge in his Defence of Stage Plays. Gosson demurred to Lodge in 1580 with his Playes Confuted in Five Actions, and in this he expressly mentions Painter’s Palace of Pleasure among the “bawdie comedies” that had been “ransacked” to supply the plots of plays. Unfortunately very few even of the titles of these early plays are extant: they probably only existed as prompt-books for stage-managers, and were not of sufficient literary value to be printed when the marriage of Drama and Literature occurred with Marlowe.

But we have one convincing proof of the predominating influence of the plots of Painter and his imitators on the Elizabethan Drama. Shakespeare’s works in the first folio, and the editions derived from it, are, as is well known, divided into three parts—Comedies, Histories, and Tragedies. The division is founded on a right instinct, and applies to the whole Elizabethan Drama.* Putting aside the Histories, which derive from Holinshed, North, and the other historians, the dramatis personae of the Tragedies and Comedies are, in nineteen cases out of twenty, provided with Italian names, and the scene is placed in Italy. It had become a regular convention with the Elizabethans to give an Italian habitation and name to the whole of their dramas. This convention must have arisen in the pre-Marlowe days, and there is no other reason to be given for it but the fact that the majority of plots are taken from the “Palace of Pleasure” or its followers. A striking instance is mentioned by Charles Lamb of the tyranny of this convention. In the first draught of his Every Man in his Humour Ben Jonson gave Italian names to all his dramatis personae. Mistress Kitely appeared as Biancha, Master Stephen as Stephano, and even the immortal Captain Bobabil as Bobadilla. Imagine Dame Quickly as Putana, and Sir John as Corporoso, and we can see what a profound

* In the Warning for Fair Women there is a scene in which Tragedy, Comedy, and History dispute for precedence.
influence such a seemingly superficial thing as the names of the *dramatis personae* has had on the Elizabethan Drama through the influence of Painter and his men.

But the effect of this Italianisation of the Elizabethan Drama due to Painter goes far deeper than mere externalities. It has been said that after Lamb’s sign-post criticisms, and we may add, after Mr. Swinburne’s dithyrambs, it is easy enough to discover the Elizabethan dramatists over again. But is there not the danger that we may discover too much in them? However we may explain the fact, it remains true that outside Shakespeare none of the Elizabethans has really reached the heart of the nation. There is not a single Elizabethan drama, always of course with the exception of Shakespeare’s, which belongs to English literature in the sense in which *Samson Agonistes, Absalom and Achitophel, Gulliver’s Travels, The Rape of the Lock, Tom Jones, She Stoops to Conquer, The School for Scandal,* belong to it. The dramas have not that direct appeal to us which the works I have mentioned have continued to exercise after the generation for whom they were written has passed away. To an inner circle of students, to the 500 or so who really care for English literature, the Elizabethan dramas may appeal with a power greater than any of these literary products I have mentioned. We recognise in them a wealth of imaginative power, an ease in dealing with the higher issues of life, which is not shown even in those masterpieces. But the fact remains, and remains to be explained, that the Elizabethans do not appeal to the half a million or so among English folk who are capable of being touched at all by literature, who respond to the later masterpieces, and cannot be brought into *rapport* with the earlier masters. Why is this?

Partly, I think, because owing to the Italianisation of the Elizabethan Drama the figures whom the dramatists drew are unreal, and live in an unreal world. They are neither Englishmen nor Italians, nor even Italianate Englishmen. I can only think of four tragedies in the whole range of the Elizabethan drama where the characters are English: Wilkins’ *Miseries of Enforced Marriage,* and *A Yorkshire Tragedy,* both founded on a recent cause célèbre of one Calverly, who was executed 5 August
INTRODUCTION.

1605; Arden of Faversham, also founded on a cause célèbre of the reign of Edward VI.; and Heywood's Woman Killed by Kindness. These are, so far as I remember, the only English tragedies out of some hundred and fifty extant dramas deserving that name.* As a result of all this, the impression of English life which we get from the Elizabethan Drama is almost entirely derived from the comedies, or rather five-act farces, which alone appear to hold the mirror up to English nature. Judged by the drama, English men and English women under good Queen Bess would seem incapable of deep emotion and lofty endeavour. We know this to be untrue, but that the fact appears to be so is due to the Italianising of the more serious drama due to Painter and his school.

In fact the Italian drapery of the Elizabethan Drama disguises from us the significant light it throws upon the social history of the time. Plot can be borrowed from abroad, but characterisation must be drawn from observation of men and women around the dramatist. Whence, then comes the problem, did Webster and the rest derive their portraits of their White Devils, those imperious women who had broken free from all the conventional bonds? At first sight it might seem impossible for the gay roysterers of Alsatia to have come into personal contact with such lofty dames. But the dramatists, though Bohemians, were mostly of gentle birth, or at any rate were from the Universities, and had come in contact with the best blood of England. It is clear too from their dedications that the young noblemen of England admitted them to familiar intercourse with their families, which would include many of the grande dames of Elizabeth's Court. Elizabeth's own character, recent revelations about Mistress Fitton, Shakespeare's relations with his Dark Lady, all prepare for the belief that the Elizabethan dramatists had sufficient material from their own observation to fill up the outlines given by the Italian novelists.† The Great Oyer of Poisoning—the case of Sir Thomas

* Curiously enough, two of the four have been associated with Shakespeare's name. It should be added, perhaps, that one of the Two Tragedies in One of Yarington is English.
† The frequency of scenes in which ladies of high birth yield themselves to men of lower station is remarkable in this connection.

VOL. I.
Overbury and the Somersets—in James the First’s reign could vie with any Italian tale of lust and cruelty.

Thus in some sort the Romantic Drama was an extraneous product in English literature. Even the magnificent medium in which it is composed, the decasyllabic blank verse which the genius of Marlowe adapted to the needs of the drama, is ultimately due to the Italian Trissino, and has never kept a firm hold on English poetry. Thus both the formal elements of the Drama, plot and verse, were importations from Italy. But style and characterisation were both English of the English, and after all is said it is in style and characterisation that the greatness of the Elizabethan Drama consists. It must however be repeated that in its highest flights in the tragedies, a sense of unreality is produced by the pouring of English metal into Italian moulds.

It cannot be said that even Shakespeare escapes altogether from the ill effects of this Italianisation of all the externalities of the drama. It might plausibly be urged that by pushing unreality to its extreme you get idealisation. A still more forcible objection is that the only English play of Shakespeare’s, apart from his histories, is the one that leaves the least vivid impression on us, *The Merry Wives of Windsor*. But one cannot help feeling regret that the great master did not express more directly in his immortal verse the finer issues and deeper passions of the men and women around him. Charles Lamb, who seems to have said all that is worth saying about the dramatists in the dozen pages or so to which his notes extend, has also expressed his regret. “I am sometimes jealous,” he says, “that Shakespeare laid so few of his scenes at home.” But every art has its conventions, and by the time Shakespeare began to write it was a convention of English drama that the scene of its most serious productions should be laid abroad. The convention was indeed a necessary one, for there did not exist in English any other store of plots but that offered by the inexhaustible treasury of the Italian *Novellieri*.

Having mentioned Shakespeare, it seems desirable to make an exception in his case,* and discuss briefly the use he made of

---

* The other Elizabethan dramatists who used Painter are: Beaumont (I. xli.; II. xvii.), Fletcher (I. xlii.; II. xvii., xxii.), Greene (I. lvii.), Heywood (I. ii.), Marston
INTRODUCTION.

XXXV

Painter's book and its influence on his work. On the young Shakespeare it seems to have had very great influence indeed. The second heir of his invention, The Rape of Lucrece, is from Painter. So too is Romeo and Juliet, his earliest tragedy, and All's Well, which under the title Love's Labour Won, was his second comedy, is Painter's Giletta of Narbonne (I. 38) from Bandello.† I suspect too that there are two plays associated with Shakespeare's name which contain only rough drafts left unfinished in his youthful period, and finished by another writer. At any rate it is a tolerably easy task to eliminate the Shakespearian parts of Timon of Athens and Edward III., by ascertaining those portions which are directly due to Painter.‡ In this early period indeed it is somewhat remarkable with what closeness he followed his model. Thus some gushing critics have pointed out the subtle significance of making Romeo at first in love with Rosalind before he meets with Juliet. If it is a subtility, it is Bandello's, not Shakespeare's. Again, others have attempted to defend the indefensible age of Juliet at fourteen years old, by remarking on the precocity of Italian maidens. As a matter of fact Bandello makes her eighteen years old. It is banalities like these that cause one sometimes to feel tempted to turn and rend the criticasters by some violent outburst against Shakespeare himself. There is indeed a tradition, that Matthew Arnold had things to say about Shakespeare which he dared not utter, because the British public would not stand them. But the British public has stood some very severe things about the Bible, which is even yet reckoned of higher sanctity than Shakespeare. And certainly there is as much cant about Shakespeare to be cleared away as about the Bible. However this is scarcely the place to do it. It is clear enough how-


* Shakespeare also used Arthur Brook's poem. On the exact relations of the poet to his two sources see Mr. P. A. Daniel in the New Shakespeare Society's Originals and Analogues, i., and Dr. Schulze in Jahrb. d. deutsch. Shakespeare Gesellsch. xi. 218-20.

† Delius has discussed Shakespeare's "All Well" und Paynter's "Giletta von Narbonne" in the Jahrbuch xxii. 27-44, in an article which is also reprinted in his Abhandlungen ii.

‡ I hope to publish elsewhere detailed substantiation of this contention.
ever, from his usage of Painter, that Shakespeare was no more original in plot than any of his fellows, and it is only the unwise and rash who could ask for originality in plot from a dramatic artist.

But if the use of Italian novelle as the basis of plots was an evil that has given an air of unreality and extraneousness to the whole of Elizabethan Tragedy, it was, as we must repeat, a necessary evil. Suppose Painter's work and those that followed it not to have appeared, where would the dramatists have found their plots? There was nothing in English literature to have given them plot-material, and little signs that such a set of tales could be derived from the tragedies going on in daily life. But for Painter and his school the Elizabethan Drama would have been mainly historical, and its tragedies would have been either vamped-up versions of classical tales or adaptations of contemporary causes célèbres.

And so we have achieved the task set before us in this Introduction to Painter's tales. We have given the previous history of the genre of literature to which they belong, and mentioned the chief novellieri who were their original authors. We have given some account of Painter's life and the circumstances under which his book appeared, and the style in which he translates. We have seen how his book was greeted on its first appearance by the adherents of the New Learning and by the opponents of the stage. The many followers in the wake of Painter have been enumerated, and some account given of their works. It has been shown how great was the influence of the whole school on the Elizabethan dramatists, and even on the greatest master among them. And having touched upon all these points, we have perhaps sufficiently introduced reader and author, who may now be left to make further acquaintance with one another.
HASLEWOOD'S

Preliminary Matter.

OF THE TRANSLATOR.

William Painter was, probably, descended from some branch of the family of that name which resided in Kent. Except a few official dates there is little else of his personal history known. Neither the time nor place of his birth has been discovered. All the heralds in their Visitations are uniformly content with making him the root of the pedigree.* His liberal education is, in part, a testimony of the respectability of his family, and, it may be observed, he was enabled to make purchases of landed property in Kent, but whether from an hereditary fortune is uncertain.

The materials for his life are so scanty, that a chronological notice of his Writings may be admitted, without being deemed to interrupt a narrative, of which it must form the principal contents.

He himself furnishes us with a circumstance,† from whence we may fix a date of some importance in ascertaining both the time of the publication and of his own appearance as an author. He translated from the Latin of Nicholas Moffan, (a soldier serving under Charles the Fifth, and taken prisoner by the Turks) ‡ the relation of the Murder which Sultan Solyman caused to be

* The Visitation Book of 1619, in the Heralds College, supplied Hasted with his account. There may also be consulted Harl. MSS. 1106, 2230 and 6138.
† Palace of Pleasure, Vol. II. p. 663.
‡ The translation is reprinted in the second volume. Of the original edition there is not any notice in Herbert.
perpetrated on his eldest Son Mustapha.* This was first dedicated to Sir William Cobham Knight, afterwards Lord Cobham, Warden of the Cinque Ports; and it is material to remark, that that nobleman succeeded to the title Sept. the 29th, 1558; † and from the author being a prisoner until Sept. 1555, it is not likely that the Translation was finished earlier than circa 1557–8.

In 1560 the learned William Fulke, D.D. attacked some inconsistent, though popular, opinions, in a small Latin tract called “Antiprognosticon contra invtiles astrologorum predictions Noftrodami, &c.” and at the back of the title are Verses,‡ by the author, the first being entitled “Guliemi Painteri ludimagifi Seuenochenfis Tetrafficon.” This has been considered by Tanner as our author,§ nor does there appear any reason for attempting to controvert that opinion; and a translation of Fulke’s Tract also seems to identify our author with the master of Sevenoaks School. The title is “Antiprognosticon, that is to say, an Inuective against the vayne and unprofitable predictions of the Astrologians as Noftrodame, &c. Translated out of Latine into English. Whereunto is added by the author a shorte Treatise in Englyshe as well for the vetter subuerfion of that fained arte, as well for the better vnderftandynge of the common people, vnto whom the fyrt labour semeth not sufficient. 

_Habet & musca splenem & formice sua bilis ineft. 1560_” 12mo. At the back of the title is a sonnet by Henry Bennet: followed in the next page by Painter’s Address. On the reverse of this last page is a prose address “to his louryng frende W. F.” dated “From Seueneoke xx1 of Octobre,” and signed “Your familiar frende William Paynter.”||

---

* This happened in 1552, and Moffan remained a captive until Sept. 1555.
‡ These verses were answered by another Kentish writer. “In concursium Palen-genii Barnabæ Gogie carmen E. Deringe Cantiani,” prefixed to the _firste sixe bokes of the mooste christian poet Marcellius Palingenus_, called the _Zodiakte of Life_. Translated by Barnabe Googe, 1561. 12mo. See Cens. Lit. Vol. II. p. 212. Where it appears that Barnaby Googe was connected with several Kentish families. He married a Darell. His grandmother was Lady Hales.
§ _Bibliotheca_, p. 570.
|| M. S. Ashmole, 302. Mr. H. Ellis has kindly furnished me with the above,
Preliminary Matter—Biographical. xxxix

By the regulations of the school, as grammar-master, he must have been a bachelor of arts, and approved by the Archbishop of Canterbury, and to the appointment was attached a house and salary of £50 per annum.*

Of the appointment to the School I have not been able to obtain any particulars. That situation † was probably left for one under government, of less labour, as he was appointed by letters patent of the 9th of Feb. in the 2d of Eliz. (1560–1) to succeed John Rogers, deceased, as Clerk of the Ordinance in the Tower, with the official stipend of eightpence per diem, which place he retained during life.

In 1562 there was a license obtained by William Jones to print "The Cytie of Cyvelite, translated into Engleshe by william paynter." Probably this was intended for the present work, and entered in the Stationers Register as soon as the translation was commenced, to secure an undoubted copy-right to the Publisher. Neither of the stories bear such a title, nor contain incidents in character with it. The interlocutory mode of delivery, after the manner of some of the originals, might have been at first intended, and of the conversation introducing or ending some of those taken from the collection of the Queen of Navarre, a part is even now, though incongruously, retained. † By rejecting the gallant speeches of the courtiers and sprightly replies of the ladies, and making them unconnected stories, the idea of civility was no longer appropriate, and therefore gave place to a title equally allusive in the adoption of the Palace of Pleasure.

Under this conjecture Painter was three years perfecting the

during a late visit to Oxford, and observes that the reference to Tanner is wrongly stated, the article being in Ashmole's study.

* Hasted's Hist. of Kent, Vol. III. p. 98.

† If Painter had laid in this School the foundation of that fortune, which he afterwards appears to have realised in land, he did no more than was done by a celebrated successor, Thomas Farnaby, a well-known annotator on Horace, who settled his male posterity at Keppington, in the parish of Sevenoaks, where they remained in rank and opulence, till the late Sir Charles Farnaby, Bart., who at one time in the present reign represented the County of Kent, sold that seat and estate to Francis Motley Austen, Esq., the present owner.

‡ George Whetstone has An Heptameron of Civill Discourses, &c. 1582.
Translation of the first volume of the Palace of Pleasure. He subscribes the dedicatory Epistle "nere the Tower of London the firt of Januarie 1566," using the new style, a fashion recently imported from France.* It must be read as 1565-6 to explain a passage in another Epistle before the second volume, where he speaks of his histories "parte whereof, two yeares paft (almost) wer made commune in a former boke," concluding "from my poore house besides the Toure of London, the fourthe of Nouember, 1567." The two volumes were afterwards enlarged with additional novels, as will be described under a future head, and with the completion of this task ends all knowledge of his literary productions.

It nowhere appears in the Palace of Pleasure that Painter either travelled for information, or experienced, like many a genius of that age, the inclination to roam expressed by his contemporary, Churchyard,

"Of running leather were his shues, his feete no where could reste."†

Had he visited the Continent, it is probable, that in the course of translating so many novels, abounding with foreign manners and scenery, there would have been some observation or allusion to vouch his knowledge of the faithfulness of the representation, as, in a few instances, he has introduced events common in our own history.

He probably escaped the military fury of the age by being appointed "Clerk to the great Ordinance," contentedly hearing the loud peals upon days of revelry, without wishing to adventure further in "a game," which, "were subjects wise, kings would not play at." In the possession of some competence he might prudently adjust his pursuits, out of office, to the rational and not unimportant indulgence of literature,‡ seeking in the retirement

* In France the style was altered in 1564. Clavis Calendaria. Vol I. p. 64.
† Bibliographical Miscellanies, 1813. p. 2.
‡ This is confirmed by his making the following observation: "When labour refeth him felle in me, and leifur refrefteth other affairs, nothing delights more that vacant tyme than readinge of Histories in such vulgar speache, wherein my small knowledge taketh repaft." Epistle Dedicatory, Vol. II. p. 4.
of the study, of the vailes of Kent, and of domestic society, that
equanimit of the passions and happiness which must ever flow
from rational amusement, from contracted desires, and acts of
virtue; and which the successive demands for his favourite work
might serve to cheer and enliven.

As the founder of the family* his money must be presumed to
have been gained by himself, and not acquired by descent. It would
be pleasing to believe some part of it to have been derived from
the labours of his pen. But his productions were not of sufficient
magnitude to command it, although he must rank as one of the
first writers who introduced novels into our language, since so
widely lucrative to—printers. Yet less could there accrue a
saving from his office to enable him to complete the purchases of
land made at Gillingham, co. Kent.

At what period he married cannot be stated. His wife was
Dorothy Bonham of Cowling, born about the year 1537, and
their six children were all nearly adults, and one married, at the
time of his death in 1594. We may therefore conclude that event
could not be later than 1565; and if he obtained any portion with
his wife the same date allows of a disposition of it as now re-
quired.

It is certain that he purchased of Thomas and Christopher Webb
the manor of East-Court in the parish of Gillingham, where his
son Anthony P. resided during his father’s lifetime. He also pur-
chased of Christopher Sampson the manor of Twidall in the same
parish with its appurtenances, and a fine was levied for that purpose

* Some of the following notices, probably, relate to branches of the family.—
William Paynter “de Vicefieled,” possessed lands at Horsemonden, Benynden, and
Merden, co. Kent. He left three sons, Alexander, John and Robert. His will
dated 25th Feb. 24. Hen. 7th. (1509) and proved in November following.—John P.
Citizen and Freemason of London, by Will dated 26th Nov. 1532, proved 1537,
gave to the children of his late brother Richard P. late of Littleport, co. Kent, 6s. 8d.
each. He was to be buried at St. Albans, Wood Street, where on inquiry I am
informed the Registers of that period do not exist.—John P. twice mayor of Dover,
died 14th July, 1540, buried at Rainham, same co. See Weever’s Funeral Monu-
ments.—Edmond P. Steward to the Bishop of Ely, held a patent place, and by his
will dated 7th Sept. 14 Eliz. (1572) gave to his brother’s daughter “Johane” forty
pounds. Probably the eldest daughter of our Author.
in Easter Term 16 Eliz. Both the manors remained in the family, and passed by direct line from the above named Anthony, through William and Allington, his son and grandson, to his great grandson Robert, who resided at Westerham, in the same county, and obtained an Act of Parliament, 7 Geo. 1. "to enable him to fell the manors of Twydal and East-Court."*

* Hasted's History of Kent, art. Gillingham. The following pedigree of the family is collected from Hasted and the Harleian MSS.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>William Painter,†</th>
<th>Dorothy, daughter of Bonham,</th>
<th>William of Gillingham, died about the time of the Restoration of Charles II.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Dorothy=John Bagenhall</th>
<th>Helena=John Anthony=John Hornby</th>
<th>Catherine, Catherine=Champ, Anna.‡</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>coheireis of Robt. Harris, Master in Chancery.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

|-----------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Robert.=Eleanor, youngest daughter</th>
<th>Allington=Elizabeth.§</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>who obtained an act of parliament to alienate the manors of Twedall and East Court.</td>
<td>Anna.§</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Arms.** Gules, a chevron between three griffins' heads erased or, on a chief of the second an helmet sable between two pellets. **Crest.** A lizard (as supposed) vert, escaping from the trunk of an old tree, proper.

† Also spelt Paynter and Payneter; but neither used by the above-named William Painter, if we may rely upon the repetition of ten printed authorities.

‡ That Anna was the youngest child, is doubtful, from her father only naming her, besides Helena, as entitled to a portion. She resided with her mother, unmarried, 1617.

§ One of these married William Wiseman, a civilian.
Not any part of the real Estate was affected by the will of William Painter, who appears, from its being nuncupative, to have deferred making it, until a speedy dissolution was expected. It is as follows:

"In the name of God, Amen. The nineteenth day of February in the Year of our Lord God one thousand five hundred ninety four, in the seven and thirtieth year of the reign of our Sovereign Lady Elizabeth, &c. William Painter then Clerk of her Maj. Great Ordinance of the Tower of London, being of perfect mind and memory, declared and entered his mind meaning and last Will and Testament nuncupative, by word of mouth in effect as followeth, viz. Being then very sick and asked by his wife who should pay his son in law John Hornby the portion which was promised him with his wife in marriage, and who should pay to his daughter Anne Painter her portion, and to the others his children which had nothing; * and whether his said wife should pay them the same, the said William Painter answered, Yea. And being further asked whether he would give and bequeath unto his said wife all his said goods to pay them as he in former times used to say he would, to whom he answered also, yea. In the presence of William Pettila, John Pennington, and Edward Songer. Anon after in the same day confirming the premises; the said William Painter being very sick, yet of perfect memory, William Raynolds asking the aforesaid Mr. Painter whether he had taken order for the disposing of his Goods to his wife and children, and whether he had put all in his wives hands to deal and dispose of and to pay his son Hornby his portion,† and whether he would make his said wife to be his whole Executrix, or to that effect, to whose demand the said Testator Mr. William Painter then manifesting his will and true meaning therein willingly answered, yea, in the presence of William Raynolds, John Hornbie and Edward Songer."†

He probably died immediately after the date of the will. Among the quarterly payments at the ordinance office at Christmas 1594 is entered to "Mr. Painter Clerke of thòdiîce xviijb. xv*" and upon Lady Day or New Year’s Day 1595. "To William Painter and to St. Stephen Ridleston ‡ Clarke of Thordîice for the

* Dorothy P. (the Executrix) by her will, dated 3d July, 1617, gave a specific legacy to her granddaughter Thomasine Hornby, which was to be void if she sued or impleaded her executor, relative to any gift, legacy or bequest, under the above will; from which it may be concluded the portion of John Hornby's wife was never properly adjusted.
‡ Proved in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 3d Feb. 1595.
like quarter also warranted xvijth xv*” He was buried in London.* After his death the widow retired to Gillingham, where she died Oct. 19th 1617. Æt. 80, and where she was buried.†

* In the will of Dorothy P., already noticed, is the following direction. ‘In case I dye or departe this life in the Citie of London, to be buryed in the same parish in London where my late loving husband Mr. William Paynter, Clerke of the great Ordinance of the Tower of London, was buryed, and as neere to the place where he was buryed as convenient may be, with some memoriall there to be engraven sett vp or placed as shalbe devised and appoynted by my executor and overfeers hereafter named; yt if elsewhere then alfo at their like discretions and with the like memoriall.” Had she set up such a memorial for her husband, the name would probably have been found in Stowe’s Survey of London. It does not occur in the Registers of the Tower Chapel; Allhallows Barking; St. Catherine’s; or Aldgate. At St. Dunstan’s, Tower Street, the register has been destroyed, and also at St. Alban’s, Wood Street, where there was probably a family vault, and not being the church frequented when he lived by the Tower, the name might have been forgotten by the widow.

† Her Will was not proved until July 1620. It is unusually long, and the bequests are trifling. She particularizes all her grand-children, whom, in the language then used, she calls nephews and nieces. There had probably been some difference in the family to occasion the following passage, whereby she bequeaths the only memorial mentioned of our author. “Item, whereas my very welbeloued niephue William Paynter, and I, and all my children, nowe are and I truit in God to fally continue loving hartie and inward frends, whereof I recyne great loye and contentment, vnto the which my fated niephue, for a gentle remembrance, I give and bequeethe my tablet of gould with a pearle to yt which sometymes was his grandfather’s, beyug nowe all redie in his owne keeping and possesion.” The will is subscribed with a cross, which the feebleness of age might render necessary.

[For some additional points throwing light on the way in which Painter gained his fortune, see Appendix. Collier (Extr. Stat. Reg. ii. 107), attributes to Painter A mourning Ditty upon the Deceas of Henry Earle of Arundel, which appeared in 1579, and was signed ‘Guil. P. G.’ = Gulielmus Painter, Gent.].—J. J.]
BIBLIOGRAPHICAL NOTICES.

Of the first volume of The Palace of Pleasure there were three editions, but of the second only two are known. Each of these, all uncommonly fair and perfect, through the liberal indulgence of their respective owners, are now before me; a combination which has scarcely been seen by any collector, however distinguished for ardour of pursuit and extensiveness of research, since the age of Q. Elizabeth. Their rarity in a perfect state may render an accurate description, though lengthened by minuteness, of some value to the bibliographer. The account of them will be given in their chronological order.


This title is within a narrow fancy metal border, and on the back of the leaf are the Arms of the Earl of Warwick, which fill the page. With signature * 2 commences the dedication, and at ¶ 2 is "a recapitulacion or briefe reheursal of the Arguments of every Nouell, with the places noted, in what author euyer of the fame or the effect be reade and contayned." These articles occupy four leaves each, and five more occupy the address "to the reader,"

* Herbert has this edition entered as printed by Thomas Marshe, upon the authority of Mr. William White, p. 856. It was licensed to Jones as "certen histories collected out of dyuers Ryght good and profitable authours by William Paynter." ib. 1319.
followed by the names of the Authors from whom the "nouels be selected;" making the whole introduction, with title, 14 leaves.

The nouels being 9x. in number, conclude with folio 345, but there are only 289 leaves, as a castration appears of 56.* On the reverse of the last folio are "faultes escaped in the printing;" and besides those corrected, there are "other faultes [that] by small aduise and leffe payne may by waying the discourse be easely amended or lightly pass'd ouer." A distinct leaf has the following colophon:

Imprinted at Lon| don, by Henry Denham, | for Richard Tottell and | William Jones | Anno Domini. 
1566 | Januarij 26. | These bokes are to be solde at 
the long shoppe | at the Cleast ende of Paules.

This volume is rarely discovered perfect. The above was purchased at the late sale of Col. Stanley's library for 30l. by Sir Mark Masterman Sykes, Bt.


A broad metal border, of fancy pattern, adorns the title page. At signature a. ij. begins the Epistle to Sir George Howard, which the author subscribes from his "poore house besides the Toure of London, the fourthe of Novembe 1567:" and that is

* There is a lapse of signatures from O o. j. to A a a. j. and of folios from 145, (misprinted 135) to 201. What occasioned the castration it is impossible to conjecture; the volume is certainly perfect, as the table of Contents has no article for the omitted leaves.

† Herbert, 967. Entered in the Stationers' Register (as Mr. G. Chalmers obligingly informs me) in 1566-7, "to Nycholas Englonde."
followed by a summary of the contents and authorities, making, with the title, 10 leaves. There are xxxiiij novels, and they end at fo. 426. Two leaves in continuation have "the conclusion," with "divers faultes escape in printyng," and on the reverse of the first is the printer's colophon.

Imprinted at London | by Henry Bynneman | for Nicholas Englande | ANNO M.D.LXVII. | Novembris 8.

A copy of this volume was lately in the possession of Messrs. Arch, of Cornhill, Booksellers, with a genuine title, though differently arranged from the above, and varied in the spelling.* When compared, some unimportant alterations were found, as a few inverted commas on the margin of one of the pages in the last sheet, with the correction of a fault in printing more in one copy than the other, though the same edition.†

The Palace | of Pleasure Beautified, | adorned and well furnished with | Pleasaunt Historyes and excellent | Nouelles, selected out of divers | good and commendable Authors. | By William Painter Clarke | of the Ordinance and | Armorie. | 1569. | Imprinted at London in | Fletsfrete neare to S. Dunstones | Church by Thomas Marshe.—4to. Extends to K k. viij, & is folded in eights.

* It stands thus: The second Tome | of the Palace of Pleasure, | containing store of goodly Histories | Tragical matters and other mo. | full argument, very re. | quire for delights | and profit, | Chosen and selected out of | divers good and commendable authors. | By William Painter, Clerk of the | Ordinance and Armorie | Anno. 1567.—Imprinted &c."

Similar differences are found in the earliest stage of the English press. Thus a copy of Caxton's Cato, 1483, in possession of the Duke of Devonshire, has the first line

Here begynneth the prologue or prohemye of the book called:

and in the fine copy belonging to the Library of Lee Priory, it stands

Here begynneth the prologue or prohemye of the booke calld:

† The second volume is undoubtedly the rarest of the two. The industrious Langbaine does not appear to have seen it, as in the Account of the English Dramatic Poets, 1691, he refers more than once to the originals for stories contained in that volume.
The title is in the compartment frequently used by Marsh, having the stationers' arms at the top, his own initials at the bottom, and pedestals of a Satyr and Diana, surmounted with flowers and snakes, on the sides. It is a reprint of the first volume without alteration, except closer types. The introduction concludes on the recto of the eleventh leaf, and on the reverse of fo. 264 is the colophon. Imprinted at London in Flete. Jreate neare unto Saint6l Dunffones | Churche by Thomas Marshe | Anno Domini. 1569.*

THE PALACE | of Pleasure Beautified | adorned and well furnished | with pleasault Histories and | excellent Novels, selected out | of divers good and commendable Authors. By William Painter Clarke | of the Ordinance | and Armarie. | Effstones perused corrected | and augmented. | 1575. | Imprinted at London | by Thomas Marsh.—4to. Extends to signature O o, iiiij. and is folded in eights.†

Title in same compartment as the last. The introduction is given in nine leaves, and the novels commence the folio, and end at 279. The arguments of every novel, transposed from the beginning, continue for three leaves to reverse of O o iiiij, having for colophon,

Imprinted at London by | Thomas Marshe.

Seven novels were added to the former number, and the language improved.

* Dr. Farmer's copy was Vol. I. 1569, and Vol. II. 1567. Purchased at the sale by Mr. Payne for fifteen guineas. [Bibl. Farm. No. 5993.] The opinion Dr. Farmer entertained of their rarity may be given in his own words: "The Two Tomes, which Tom Rawlinson would have called justa volumina, are almost amihilated. Mr. Ames, who searched after books of this sort with the utmost avidity, most certainly had not seen them, when he published his Typographical Antiquities, as appears from his blunders about them: and possibly I myself might have remained in the same predicament, had I not been favoured with a copy by my generous friend, Mr. Lort." Essay on the learning of Shakespeare.

† Hence Tanner and others have been erroneously supposed to describe an edition in Octavo, and I have seen copies where the margin, cropped by the intolerable plough of the binder, might have been shown in proof of the conjecture.
THE SECOND | Tome of the Palace of | Pleasure contayning store of goodbye | Histories, Tragical matters, &c. and other | Morall argumentes, very requi- site for delight and | profyte. | Chose and selected out | of diuers good and commendable au- thors, and now once agayn correc- ted and encreased. | By William Painter, Clerke of the | Ordinance and Armarie. | Im- printed at London | In Fleetstrete by Thomas | MARSHE. —4to. Has signature Z z 4, and is folded in eights.

Title in the compartment last described. The introduction has seven leaves, and the "conclusion" is at fo. 360.* The summary of nouels, which stand as part of the introduction in the former edition, follows, making four leaves after discontinuing the folio. There is no printer's colophon, and the type throughout is smaller than any used before. The translator added one historic tale, and made material alterations in the text.

With respect to the date the year 1582 has been several times given, and it is doubtful if I have discovered the source of the authority. Oldys, among the manuscript notes upon Langbaine, registers "W. Painter's Palace of Pleasure, &c. 4to. 1569, and in 2 vols. 1575, and 1582:" and Mr. Bindley, whose friendly assistance it is always gratifying to record, pointed out to my attention the catalogue of the library of the Honorable Bryan Fairfax,† where the volumes are increased in number, and with only a single date. It stands thus, Lot "336, Painter's Palace of Pleasure, 3 vols." B. L. 1582:" again in the Osterley catalogue, p. 87, is No.

* Folios 225 and 6 are repeated, and several others are erroneously numbered.
† Prepared for sale by suction by Mr. Prestage, of Savile Row, in April, 1756, and sold by private contract to Mr. Child. It forms the principal part of the library at Osterley Park.
‡ It might be expected that the third volume was formed by adding the inferior performance of George Pettie, who imitated our author's title; but that was the article in the succeeding lot. Pettie's work is called; A petite Pallace | of Pettie his Pleasure ; | contayning many pretie Histories | by him fet forth in comely colours | and most delightfully dis-courfed. | Omne tulit punctum, | qui misericordiatis. | Col. Printed at London, by R[ichard] W[atkins]. n. d. but entered in the Stationers' books 1576. Again by Wolfe, n. d. and other editions 1598, 1608, and 1613. The

VOL. 1.
HASLEWOOD'S PRELIMINARY MATTER.

"26, Palace of Pleasure, 1582."* To decide positively on such an unexpected repetition of the date made it desirable to obtain a sight of the copy.† That, with some difficulty, has been effected. On visiting Osterley, strange as it may appear, I found the two volumes bound in one, the same editions as those now printed from, and both wanting title pages!!

There is not much temerity in decisively pronouncing that there never was an edition in three volumes; that the date of 1582 was intended by Oldys to be only applied to the second volume; and that that date was founded on an erroneous conjecture. Two of these points are already disposed of, and the last can require but few words. The translation of the tale of Sultan Soliman, from the circumstance of the dedication to Sir William Cobham, as shewn in a former page, must have been finished about 1557-8, and Painter, on the reprinting, mentions that fact as "twenty-two yeares past or thereabouts," which decides that the printing of the above volume could not be later than 1580.

The Palace of Pleasure, as enlarged by the Translator, is now reprinted. The text of the latest edition of each volume has been carefully preserved; except that, instead of numberless abbreviations, every word is given at length. The character of the work did not require such minuteness, being followed for authority; and the rejecting what might seem a disfigurement of the page, it is hoped, will obtain the sanction of the reader: and it may be observed, that in the later editions many words are contracted which were first printed at length, and others given at length which were before contracted.

In the punctuation some slight alterations have been made, where the sense or uniformity materially required it.

contents of the volume are described in an article by Mr. Utterson in the British Bibliographer, Vol. II. p. 392. For an Account of the author see Wood's Ath. Oxon. by Bliss, 1813, Vol. I. col. 552.

* Class (or rather case, the library not being classed) IX.; division 2; shelf 7; book 26. This explains the numerals used in the Osterley Cat.

† To the unequalled store of bibliography, possessed by the Rev. T. F. Dibdin there has lately been added a copy of the Fairfax catalogue, priced according to the private valuation. There may be found Caxton's Prince Arthur rated at only fifty-five shillings, and lot 336 (the P. of Pleasure) at four guineas: undoubtedly, from the above description in the catalogue, the copy was supposed unique.
From Earl Spencer, with that marked attention which always distinguishes the interest his Lordship takes in every literary undertaking, I received the unsolicited offer of the use of the copy belonging to the library at Althorpe. As there was the first edition of the second volume, it proved a needful and valuable acquisition, and from that source several obscure passages have been corrected, and whole sentences restored, which, in the last edition, appear to have been negligently omitted in the hurry of the press.

For the purpose of collation, Sir Mark Masterman Sykes, Bart. obligingly assisted me with his copy, purchased at the Roxburghe sale; and has since also favoured me with the first edition, to perfect the Bibliographical Notices.

Of an hundred and one novels, the whole number, the larger portion have been traced, as supposed, to their respective originals. In attempting this task, I have derived material assistance from the extensive researches made in that class of literature by Mr. Weber, who, though personally unknown, most promptly supplied the wanted information. The ingenious conjecture as to the origin of the story of Gismonde and Guiscardo, is by Mr. Singer.

It is probable that many of the stories were appropriated as soon as published by the dramatic writers to the purposes of the English Stage.* To the instances discovered by the indefatigable Langbaine I have made some addition.

From the application of Mr. Freeling to Mr. Crewe, I obtained an inspection of the earliest records preserved in the Ordnance Office; and the research was further facilitated by the assistance of Mr. Banovin.

Sir Egerton Brydges, with his accustomed ardency to promote literary investigation, aided my endeavours to discover some trace of the translator as master of the school at Sevenoaks.

* Malone, in a note on the Historical Account of the English Stage, has the following extract from Gosson's Plays confuted in five Actions, printed about the year 1580. "I may boldly say it (says Gosson) because I have seen it, that The Palace of Pleasure, The Golden Asse, The Ethiopian Historie, Amadis of Fraunce, The Round Table, bawdie comedies in Latin, French, Italian and Spanish, have beene thoroughly ransackt to furnish the playe-houses in London."—Reed's Shakespeare, Vol. III. p. 40.
To Mr. George Chalmers and Mr. Utterson, I am indebted for some bibliographical communications, and also to the Rev. T. F. Dibdin for long extracts made from the work by Herbert, preparatory to a new edition of the *Typographical Antiquities*.

When the present edition was announced, it was intended to consist of only one hundred and fifty copies. In order, however, to meet the common hazard of the press, seven quires of each sheet were printed, making about one hundred and sixty-five saleable copies; seven were also taken off on vellum.

JOSEPH HASLEWOOD.

*Conduit Street, November 5th 1813.*

[It is only necessary to add that Haslewood's edition was in two volumes, of which the first ran to 34 (Introductory Matter) + xvii. (Dedication and Table of Contents) + 492 pages. The Second Tome, which is mostly found bound in two parts, ran to xv. (Dedication and Table of Contents) + 700 pages.

The present edition, it will be observed by the above, is really the fourth and a half edition—*i.e.*, it is the fifth of the first Tome, and the fourth of the second. I have however ventured to neglect the reprint of the First Tome in 1569, and taken account only of complete editions. It follows Haslewood's reprint page for page and line for line, except in two points. The Tables of Contents of the two Tomes have been brought together, and their literary history connected directly with the Summary of Contents. In a few cases, where Haslewood inserted passages from the first edition, I have enclosed the interpolations in square brackets. The other point of difference between Haslewood's edition and the present is that we have divided the two Tomes into three volumes of as nearly equal size as possible. While Haslewood has been used as "copy" for the printer, it must be understood that every line has been collated with the British Museum copy of the original, and many thousands of corrections, mostly though not all of a minor kind, made in Haslewood's text.

JOSEPH JACOBS.

4 Haslemere Road, Kilburn,
1st Aug. 1890.]
APPENDIX.

DOCUMENTS RELATING TO PAINTER.

I.
Assignments to Painter (Abstract).

(Record Office Dom. State Papers, Eliz., x1. No. 36.)

July 24, 1566. Assignment by Edward Randolph, Esq., to William Painter, Clerk of the Ordinance, Richard Webb, Master-Gunner of England, and Edward Partridge, Keeper of the Queen's Harquebutts, Dagges, and Curriers, of certain annuities or pensions for a term of years.

II.

Petition of Hartnell, Saint Barbe, and Painter (Abst.).

(Brit. Mus. Lands. MS. 51, No. 25.)

Petition of Raulph Harknell, William Saintbarbe and William Painter to the Lord High Treasurer. c. 1586.

Having lately been called before Sir W. Mildmay, Chanter of the Exchequer, Mr. Fanshawe & Mr. Dodington for the sum of £7,075 and after conference the division was imposed upon Turville Bowland and Painter, and a brief was drawn, it pleased his Honour to will that if they could show cause why the said sums should not be burdened upon them they were to have allowance by petition which they have done and beseech his Honour to have regard to the present state of themselves their
wives and children & by him to at once decide what sum they have to pay.

With regard to their estates:—
Bowland's goods came to but £431:6:8. His land is given to three children, the eldest not twelve years old. As the land cannot be sold during their nonage he humbly begs that the land may be extended and prays that some allowance may be made for the education of the children.

Turville's substance was chiefly in debts, his household stuff was of the value of £120:3:4. Of this £1,441:19:7 is to go to William Saintbarbe, the most part of which sum remains in the hands of the Earl of Warwick and Sir Philip Sydney. Notwithstanding he is willing to pay as much as His Honour shall think good.

William Painter craves remembrance of a note of his estate delivered in 1586, expressing the particulars of all he has in the world to live upon in these his aged days, amounting to about £64 a year. He has a wife and five children all marriageable and unprovided for. He begs his Honour's favourable consideration of his case and promises to be the occasion of saving unto Her Majesty of far greater sums than what he owes to her.

III.

Charge against Turville, Bowland, and Painter (Abst.).

(Brit. Mus. Lansd. MS. 55, No. 3.)


\[
\begin{align*}
\text{£} & \quad \text{s} & \quad \text{d} \\
\text{upon G. Turville} & \quad 2,715 & \quad 2 & \quad 8 \\
\text{R. Bowland} & \quad 2,413 & \quad 2 & \quad 8 \\
\text{W. Painter} & \quad 1,949 & \quad 2 & \quad 8 \\
\end{align*}
\]
Of this sum of £1949:2:8 William Painter confesses in his answer to owe £1079:17:3 which leaves unconfessed the sum of £869:5:5 of which he himself prays to be disburdened for divers good and reasonable considerations:

For Iron sold to the amount of £16:8:4
For Powder sold for £4:8:10
For things conveyed from the Storehouse at Woolwich { 4:0:0
For unserviceable shot sent into Barbary } 173:13:4
For Powder Munition &c. 205:0:0
For sale of Sulphur 10:10:0
Divers allowances 373:6:8
Work done at Portsmouth 8:6:8

He promises to pay what is due from him in reasonable time.

The value of the Lands in Gillingham, Kent, belonging to William Painter is £413:10:0, which brings him in £94:10 of which he has to pay £33:3:2 leaving him £61:6:10.

The said William Painter owes £1200 for land in mortgage and is indebted to divers persons besides.

He humbly beseeches Her Majesty to have pitiful regard for his wife and marriageable children

IV.

POWELL’S CHARGES AGAINST EARL OF WARWICK AND PAINTER (Abstract).

(Hatfield, Calendar iii., No. 581.)

September, 1587. John Powell to the Queen, offers to expose frauds in the Ordnance Office, and begs the Queen to grant him a hearing before the Lord Chancellor, Lord Treasurer, Lord Admiral, and Earl Warwick, which last named he accuses of great oppressions, and one Painter of false recording the office books.
V.

W. Painter's Confession.

(Record Office State Papers, Domestic, Eliz., vol. 224, No. 102.)

xxij° Junii 1589. Willm Painf confesseth that all those things that stande nowe charged upon Thearle of Warrewicke by the twoe bookes delivered by Mr. Coniers and Mr. Bartholme Vodoington were in truthe taken out of the Quenes floare in the Towre of London and other places, and promiseth that before Michaelmas Tearme next he will in writing und' his hand shewe discharget of fo mucho of the fame as the faid Earle is to be dischargd of, and will charge his L. wth fo mucho thereof as in truth he ought to be charged wth by shewing of his owne warrant or other good proof that the fame came to his L. hands or to suche as his Lo. did appoint for the receipt thereof, and the residue he will charge upon suche others as of right are to be charged therewh, and for his bett instruction he placeth a coppie of the faid twoe bookes delivered by the Audito

Signed W. PAINTER.

endorfed. 23 Junii, 1589.

Mr. Painters aunswere for the Charging the E. of Warwick in the 2 books delivered to the Audito of the Prefe.

VI.

(Record Office Dom. Pap. Eliz. ccxxv., No. 38.)

June 22, 1589. Answer of John Powell, Surveyor of the Ordnance, to the informations given against him by Mr. Wm. Paynter. Examined in the office of the Ordnance before Sir Robert Constable and the rest of the officers, and noted in the margin accordingly.
VII.

Application of A. Painter in behalf of his Father (Abst.).

(Brit. Mus. Lansd. MS. 67, f. 47.)

April 6, 1591. He has many times besought his honour to accept of his serviceable endeavours with regard to his duty concerning the indirect government of the office of ordnance, the entries into the books &c. and as he knows that many irregularities have been committed for which he fears he and his aged father may be blamed he has thought it his duty to crave access to his Honour as well to advertise what has been heretofore done as to declare the manner how this office is managed, beseeching his honour, in regard his aged father is clerk of that office, whose duty it is to register all things, not to sign any proportion books of debt or monthe's books but by the delivery of the said clerk or his deputy.

VIII.

Grant in Reversion of Painter's Office (Docquet).

(Record Off. Dom. State Papers, Eliz. ccxxxiiii.)

1591. Grant in reversion of John Grenewaie of the office of Clerk of the Ordnance, with a fee of 8d. per diem, after the death of Wm. Paynter.

IX.

Accounts of the Ordnance (Abstract).

(Record Off. Dom. State Papers, Eliz. ccxliii., No. 96.)

Accounts by John Powell, Wm. Painter and Thos. Bedcock for provisions and stores delivered unto her Majesty's Ordnance up to 31 Dec. 1592. Total of debts £6,786 os 5½d; of payments during
the last year £3,960 17s 6d; Balance due, £2,825 2s 9½d. Also of debts due for provisions brought into the stores, repairs, &c., during the year: total £4055 9s besides Sir Rob. Constable’s debt. With note that as the books of the office have been delivered to the two auditors, the writers cannot set down every particular debt but have done so as far as they could.

X.

Specific Charges against Painter.

(Brit. Mus.: Lansdown MS. 73, No. 59.)

Right Honorable whereas I heartofore exhibited Articles vnsto yo' Lopp therin revealing and Juftlie accusing William Painter clerke of Thordynaunce of notorious Deceiptes and abufe ppe-trated by him in Thexecution of his faide office vnsto whiche he hath made some Answear as is reported./ May it further please yo' Lo I haue thoughte yt my parte to reveal such further and more deceiptes as I haue discovered of his lyke practizes and abuses when he tooke vpon him the charge and discharge of Thoffice as now his fonne feekethe to doe, which I Humblie prostrate heare inclosed. Cravinge of yo' good Lo for prooffe of bothe my Articles I may have Auuthoritie to examine suche witnesfes as I can produce by othe before some Baron of Thexchequer as to Remaine vpon recorde leaft Deceasinghe her Ma^st^ feruece therbye be hindered and I in some forte descredited in synemg to Informe your Lo^pp^ wth matters I cannot proue./

So lyke wise if to yo^ Ho yt shall seeme good to signe the warrantate here to fore by me ñented Auuthorifhinge me and others to pvfe and vewe Thaccomptes of Sir Robert Conftable Knyghte deceased and mst willm Sugdon for Tower matters. I will bringe to lighte suche matters agaynste his fonne whearby yt shall appeare that he is a mofte unfit man to execute anie office of charge or trufte vnnder her ma^st^ beinge so corrupte a man as I will proue him to be./ Pardon Right Ho my boldnes for Dutifull zeale did pricke me to discouer that I and fithence they are
abroache care of my credite dothe continuallie vrge mee not to
be negligent or alowe vntill I haue by good proues confirmed and
establisshed them. So reftinge Readie to pforme the same and
accordinge to my Bounden dutie to do her hignes anie service to
my vttermofte./ I Humblic ceafe to trouble yo' Ho any further
at this tyme. But never will ommitt to pray Thalmightie to in-
creafe yo' Honor with all healethe and happines.

Your Honors moft humble
G. HOGGE.

Endorsed     November 1793
George Hogg to my L.

Discouerie of certain abuies committed by Wm. Paynter clerk
of the Ordinance w'in his office.

Wronges offered by Willm Painter Clerke of Thordenance
entered in his Jornall booke for receiptes broughte into her ma"tes
Store Anno 1575 and 1576.

Right Honorable, firft ther was a receipte for one Laste and a
half of Serpentine powder broughte into her Ma"tes Store and de-
benter made by Painter for the same as made of forraigne Peeter
the xiii"th of Julie 1576, the which I will prooue vnto yo' Ho that
yt was her Ma"tes owen powder brought from Windfo' Caftell the
verie fame Sommer./ Wherein he deceaved her Ma"tes, and made
her pay for that w'ch was her owen./ Defyringe that my proofes
may be taken bye Othe before one of the Barons of her Ma"tes Ex-
chequer./

Secondlie, their was another Receipte made for xii° wh' of
corne powder As made of forraigne provision and brought into her
ma"tes Store and debenter made for the same the xxj"th of Julie
1576 at the Rate of xijd the pownde, the w'ch did amounte to the
fome in money of lxth the w'ch I will prove to be her ma"tes Owen
Powder as aforfayde./

Third, there was another Receipte made for One Laste of Serpen-
tine powder by the sayd Painter at xj° the pownde and debenter made
for the same the xxj"th of Julie 1576 as brought into her maties
Store beinge made lykwyle of forraigne provision the w'ch I will
proove no fuch matter receaved into her ma"tes faide store and
therefore her maße flatlie Deceased by him of the Some of one c and x²
flowerthlie there was lykewyse broughte into her Matless sayde
store by one Constance Watchindroppe the seconde of auguste
1576 certaine bowstaves to the number of fower Thoufande after
fyxe Score to the Hundrethe at the Rate of xiii² the Hundrethe
the which dothe Amounte to v c and xx² and entred by Painter in
his Jornall booke and debenter made for the same I will proove
yno yo° Ho notwithstandinge his debenter and entrie in his sayde
booke that there was xj° of them never brought into her maße
Store / and therfore her Maste Apparentlie Deceased by him of the
some of one c xliii²
fiiftlie whereas there was a Deliverie made in Thoffice of Thordi-
inance the xxvi² of Aprill 1576 for Serpentine Powder Delivered
out of her Matless Store for the shootinge of Thordinance vppon
the wharfe he did enter into his Jornall xx² wht delivered
whearas, I will proove vnvo yof Ho there was but v° Di deli-
vered but heare he Dothe swewe his conninge in the discharginge
of the keep of the Store for the overcharge layd vppon the sayd
keep by him on his Receipte before specified the xxj° of Julie
1576 whearas he did charge the keep w² a latfe of Powder which
was never brought into the Store which he made her Maße pay
for/
Syxtlie he made a Delyuerie of fower hundrethe wht of Serpent-
ine Powder the Lafté of Aprill 1576 for the shootinge of Thordyn-
aunce uppon May 6 vo accordinge to the olde accustomed
manners I will Proove there was but j Two hundredthe wht De-
lyvered whearin he hath abusèd her Maße as in the Article befor
specified./.

XI.

APPLICATION OF J. PAINTER (Abstract).

Brit. Mus. Lansd. MS. 75, No. 55.)

Sept. 26. 1593.—The best experience of faithful and true endeav-
ours is to be opposed by politic and malicious adversaries whose
slanderous informations have lately been used against him which he has truly answered and has been examined by Sir Geo: Carewe with the copies of the monthe's books and therefore he trusts his Hon: will be satisfied. He hopes his slanderers will be punished, or it will be a precedent to others. He has served H. M. faithfully being encouraged by hopes of preferment. He yearly increases H. M. Store to the value of £2,000 by taking the returns of such munitions as return from the seas unspent in H. M. ships, which formerly were concealed and converted to private use. He has deciphered so many deceipts as amount to above £11,000. He is ready to show a number of abuses by which H. M. pays great sums of money which do not benefit her service, and finally by his experience he has been able to do Her Majesty profitable service, the particulars of which he is ready to show when required, and he trusts he deserves more favour and regard than to be utterly discredited and disgraced through the information of the person who through malice seeks to be revenged of him, because he saves H. M. £40 a year which this person sued for, for taking the aforesaid remains.

XII.

Charges against Painter's Son.

(Brit. Mus.: Lansdown MS. 78, No. 29.)

Right Honourable, I thought it my duty to aduertife you of dywte middelemano comytted against her Ma: in and about the Tower, when you sha: shall pleafe to command me to attend you in the meane tyme I hold it most fytt to give you to vnderstand that vnderstandinge of Mr. Anthonie Paynter should make his vawnt of his playnes and truth of thenciing of his fathers place being deputye vnto him thus much I am able to aver that in falfe entryes falfe debentes ymbefeling of powder, and other deceipte as come XVe as by informand reed to be put in against him the last term begonn by hogg who had mistaking the daye
ffor his father I fend yo' loö matter of XXVIj mũ. Against him
It is verry fitt if it may stand wth yo' ho: good liking all booke
and recorde appteying to her Maů be taken into the costody of
fome whom yo' shall think mete to kepe them to her Maů vse
And so leaving the fame to yo' honourable care I doe humbly
take my leave the Tower this XXjth of february
Yr

ho: most humbly
Att Commandme'
N. RAYNBERD.

Endorsed 21 Feb. 1594
Mr. Rainberd steward of ye Tower
to my l:
Informacõn against Mr. Paynter of abuses in his office.
**ANALYTICAL TABLE OF CONTENTS.**

[In the following notes, *Source* refers to the origin whence Painter most probably obtained the tale; *Origin* to the earliest appearance of it in literature: these often coincide. I have included all the information given by Haslewood.]

I. **Horati and Curiath.**

The Romaines and the Albanes being at warres, for injuries mutually inferred, Metius Suffetius, the Albane captaine, deuifed a waye by a combate to ioygne bothe the cities in one. Victory falling to the Romaines, the Romaine victor killed his fitter and was condemned to die. Afterwardes, upon his father's fute, he was deliuered.


*Painter,* Ed. I. (1566) i. 1; II. (1575)* i. 1; III. i. 1; IV. i. 15.*

II. **The Rape of Lucrece.**

Sextus Tarquinius ravished Lucrece. And she, bewailing the loffe of her chastitie, killed herelfe.

*Source and Origin.* — Livy, i. 57–60.

**Parallels.** — I. Ancient: Dionys. Hal. iv. 64; Cicero, *De Fin.* ii. 20–26; Val. Max. 6, i. 1; Ovid, *Fasti,* ii. 761; Aurel. *De Vir. Ill.* 9; Augustin, *De Civit. Dei,* i. 19. II. Medieval: Vincent Bellov. *Spec. Doct.* iv. 100; *Gesta Rom.,* 135; Violier, 113. III. Modern: Hans Sachs, i. 2, 184; 3, 21; *Ein schön spil von der geschicht der edlen Römerin Lucretia,* Strassburg, 1550, 3vo; Kirchhof, vi. 67–70; Eutrapelos, i. 92; *Acerra,* ii. 51; *Histor. Handbüchlein,* 247; Albertinus, 279; Abraham à Sta. Clara, *Etwas für Alle,* ii. 623.

* The reprint of 1569 is not taken into account in giving the pagination.
ANALYTICAL TABLE OF CONTENTS.

Painter, Ed. I. i. 5; II. i. 5; III. i. 8; IV. i. 22.

Derivates.—There can be no doubt Shakspeare derived his Rape of Lucrece from Painter, though he has expanded the four pages of his original into 164 stanzas. Heywood has also a play called The Rape of Lucrece.

III. Mucius Scævola.

The siege of Rome by Porfenna, and the valiant deliverie thereof by Mutius Scæuola, with his floute aunfwere vnto the kinge.

[Source and origin.—Livy, ii. 12. 13.
Parallels.—I. Ancient: Plutarch, Public. 17; Valerius Max. 3. 3. 1; Dionys. 5 27-30; Aurel. Vict. 72; Cicero, pro Sext. 21. 48; Flor. i. 105; Martial, i. 51; Orosius, ii. 5; Augustin, De Civit. v. 18; Zonar, vii. 12; Dio Cass. 45, 31; 46, 19; 53, 8. II. Modern: H. Sachs, i. 2. 156: 2. 3. 39; Kirchhof, i. 15; Acerra, i. 19; Albertinus, 287.

Painter, I. i. 7; II. i. 7; III. i. 12; IV. 26.
Derivates.—A play called Mutius Scævola was played at Windsor in 1577 (Fleay, Hist. of Stage, p. 380)].

IV. Coriolanus.

Martius Coriolanus goinge aboute to represse the common people of Rome with deare of Corne was banifhed. For reuengement whereof he perfwaded Accius Tullius king of the Volfcians, to make warres upon the Romaynes, and he himfelfe in their ayde, came in his owne perfon. The Citie brought to greate miserye, the fathers deuifed meanes to deliuer the fame, and sent vnto the Volfcian campe, the mother, the wife and children of Coriolanus. Vpon whose complaintes Coriolanus withdrewe the Volfcians, and the citie was reduced to quietnes.

[Source and Origin.—Livy, ii. 35 seq.
Parallels.—I. Ancient: Dionys. Hal. viii. 1; Zonar vii. 16; Plutarch Coriolanus; Val. Max. 5. 4. 1; Dio Cass. (Exc. vat.) 16 p. 148; Aur. Vict. 19. II. Medieval: Holkot Narrat. 175; Gesta Rom., Lat. 137; Germ. 89; Violier, 115; Rosarium, i. 120. III. Modern: Abr. à St. Clara; Laubenhütt, 1. 301; Acerra, 2. 17; Albertinus, 291; Kirchhof, vi. 73-6, 82.

Painter, I. i. 9; II. i. 9; III. i. 35; IV. i. 29.
Derivates.—It is possible that Shakspeare first got the idea of the dramatic capabilities of the story of Coriolanus from Painter though he filled in the details from North's Plutarch.]
V. Appius and Virginia.

Appius Claudius, one of the Decemuir of Rome, goeth about to rauifhe Virginia a yonge mayden, which indenour of Appius, when her father Virginius underflode being then in the warres, hee repaired home to rescue his daughter. One that was betrouthed vnto her, clamed her, whereupon rofe great contention. In the ende her owne father, to faue the flame of his flocke, killed her with a Bocher's knife, and went into the Forum, crying vengeance vpnon Appius. Then after much contention and rebellion, the Decemuir were depofed.

[Source.—Giovanni, Pecorone, giorn. xx. nov. 2.
Origin.—Livy, iii. 44, 47-57.
Painter, I. i. 13; II. i. 12; III. i. 31; IV. i. 35.
Derivates.—R. B., A new tragical comedy of Apius and Virginia, 1575.—Webster, Appius and Virginia. Hazlewood also refers to tragedies on the subject by Betterton, Crisp, Dennis, Moncrieff, Brooke, Bidlake, &c. Vincent Brooke, the actor, made his greatest hit in the part of Virginius.]

VI. Candaules and Gyges.

Candaules king of Lidia, fhewing the secretes of his wyues beautie to Gyges, one of his guarde: was by counfaiile of his wife, flaine by the faid Gyges, and depruied of his kingdome.

[Source and Origin.—Herodotus, i. 7-13.
Parallels.—Justin, i. 7. Mod.: Guicciardini, 44; Federmann, Erquick-stunden, 1574, 65; Albertinus, 186; Kirchhof, iv. i.
Painter, I. i. 19; II. i. 18; III. i. 32; IV. i. 46.]

VII. Cræsus and Solon.

King Craefus of Lydia reafoneth with the wyfeman Solon, of the happie life of man. Who little efteeming his good aduife, vnderfloode before his death, that no man (but by vertue) can in this life attaine feliciteit.

[Source and Origin.—Herod. i. 50 seq.
Parallels.—I. Ancient: Diod. xvi. 56; Plutarch, Solon. II. Modern: Albertinus, 235; Kirchhof, Wendenmuth, i. 4; Wanley, Wonders of the Little World, ed. 1774. III. li. 7.]
ANALYTICAL TABLE OF CONTENTS.

Painter, I. i. 21; II. i. 20; III. i. 35; IV. i. 49.

Derivates.—A tragedy under this name was written by Earl Stirling about 1601.

VIII. RHAON AND CARTOMES.

Of a father that made suite, to haue his owne fonne put to death.

[Source and Origin.—Ælian, i. 34.
Parallels.—Wanley, Wonders, IV. iii. 1.
Painter, I. i. 24; II. i. 22; III. i. 39; IV. i. 53.]

IX. ARTAXERXES AND SINETAS.

Water offered of good will to Artaxerxes King of Persia, and the liberall rewarde of the Kinge to the giner.

[Source and Origin.—Ælian, i. 32.
Painter, I. i. 24; II. i. 23; III. i. 40; IV. i. 54.]

X. CHARITON AND MENALIPPUS.

The loue of Chariton and Menalippus.

[Source and Origin.—Ælian, ii. 17 [Melanippus].
Painter, I. i. 25; II. i. 24; III. i. 42; IV. i. 56.]

XI. CYRUS AND PANTHEA.

Kinge Cyrus perfwaded by Arafpas, to díspose himselfe to loue a ladie called Panthea, entreth into a pretie disputation and talke of loue and beautie. Afterwards Arafpas himselfe falleth in loue with the faide ladie, but she indued with greate chaflitie, auoydeth his earneft fute. And when shee heard tell that her husbande was flaine in the feruice of Cyrus, she killed herselfe.

[Source.—Probably Bandello, iii. 9.
Origin.—Xenophon (given as source by Painter).
Parallels.—Anc.: Plutarch, Moralia; De curiositate. Modern: Belleforest; Hist. trag. iv. 265; Wanley, Wonders, I. xi. 30.]
ANALYTICAL TABLE OF CONTENTS.

"Painter, I. i. 27; II. i. 25; III. i. 44; IV. i. 58."

Derivates—"Warres of Cyrus, with the tragical Ende of Panthea, a tragedy, was printed in 1594."

XII. ABDOLMINUS KING OF SCYTHIA.

Abdolominus is from poore estate, aduanced by Alexander the Great, through his honest life, to be kynge of Sydone.

[Source and Origin.—Quinct. Curtius, IV. i. 19–16. Parallels—Anc. : Diod. Sic. xvii. Mod. : Wanley, Wonders, VI. xiv. Painter, I. i. 33; II. i. 31; III. i. 45; IV. i. 69.]

XIII. ALEXANDER AND THE SCYTHIAN AMBASSADOURS.

The oration of the Scythian Ambassadors to Alexander the great, reproving his ambition, and desire of Empire.

[Source and Origin.—Quintus Curtius, ix. 2. Painter, I. i. 34; II. i. 32; III. i. 57; IV. i. 71.]

XIV. METELLUS ON MARRIAGE.

The woordes of Metellus of mariage, and wiuing with the prayfe and dispraife of the fame.

[Source.—Aulus Gellius, Noct. Att. i. 6. Origin.—Livy, ii. 32. Parallels.—I. Ancient : Plut. Coriol. 6. Dio. Halic. vi. 76. Painter, I. i. 36; II. i. 24; III. i. 60; IV. i. 74.]

XV. LAIS AND DEMOSTHENES.

Of Lais and Demosthenes.

[Source and Origin.—A. Gellius, Noct. Att. i. 8. Parallels.—Repeated in Painter II. xiii. Painter, I. i. 38; II. i. 35; III. i. 63; IV. i. 77.]

XVI. FABRICIUS AND PYRRHUS.

C. Fabritius and Emilius Consuls of Rome, beyng promisfed that king Pyrrhus for a somne of money shou'd be slayne (which was a not-
ABLE ENEMIE TO THE ROMAINE STATE adapters Pyrrhus thereof by letters, and of other notable things done by the same Fabritius.

[Source.—A. Gellius, Noct. Att. i. 14.
Origin.—(?) Livy, Epit. xxii.
Parallels.—I. Ancient: Plutarch Pyrr. 18, 19; An seni sit, &c., 21; Cicero, Pro Cel., 14, 24; Brut. 14, 55; 16, 61; Phil. i. 5, 11; Cato, vi. 16; Val. Max., viii. 13, 5; Sueton. Tib., 2; Justin, 18, 2; Ovid, Fasti, xvi. 203.
Painter, I. i. 38; II. i. 36; III. i. 64; IV. i. 78.]

XVII. CAMILLUS AND SCHOOLMASTER.

A Scholomeister traiterously rendring the noble mens fonnes of Faleria to the hands of Camillus, was wel acquited and rewarded for his pains and labour.

[Source.—A. Gellius, Noct. Att. xvii. 24.
Parallels.—I. Ancient: Plutarch, Camillus, 10; Dion. Halic. excerp. Vatec. 13, 1; Frontinus, Strat. iv. 4, 1; Polyænus, Strat. viii. 7; Val. Max. vi. 5, 1; Aur. Victor, De vir. ill. 33; Zonar. vii. 32. II. Modern: Exemplis, 187. III. Modern: Gallensis, Communilog. 1489, i. 11; H. Sachs, III. ii. 46; Hanmer, Hist. Roseng. 1654, 437; Aecror. i. 100; Kirch. i. 18.
Painter, I. i. 39; II. i. 37; III. i. 66; IV. i. 80.]

XVIII. PAPYRUS PRÆTEXTATUS.

The Hyflorie of Papyrus Prætextatus [and how he misled his mother].

[Source and Origin.—A. Gellius, Noct. Att. i. 23.
Parallels—Sabell, Exemp. i. 3; Bruson, Facet. iv. 4; Wanley, Wonders, III. xlvi. 4.
Painter, I. i. 41; II. i. 38; III. i. 69; IV. i. 83.]

XIX. PLUTARCH'S ANGER.

How Plutarche did beate his man, and of pretie talke touching signes of anger.

[Source and Origin.—A. Gellius, Noct. Att. i. 26.
Painter, I. i. 42; II. i. 39; III. i. 71; IV. i. 85.]
XX. Aesop’s Fable of the Lark.

A pretie tale drawne out of the Larke of Asope.

[Source.—A. Gellius, Noct. Att. ii. 29.
Origin and Parallels.—Cf. Caxton’s Æsop, ed. Jacobs, Ro. i. 20; vol. i. p. 238.
Painter, I. i. 42; II. i. 40; III. i. 72; IV. i. 86.
Derivates.—A ballad on the subject, entitled A mirror most true, was licensed to Richard Jones 1576-7.]

XXI. Hannibal and Antiochus.

A merie gefte, uttered by Hanniball to King Antiochus.

[Source and Origin.—A. Gellius.
Painter, I. i. 44; II. i. 41; III. i. 74; IV. i. 88.]

XXII. Androdus.

The marueilous knowledge of a Lion, being acquainted with a man, called Androdus.

[Source.—A. Gellius, Noct. Att. v. 14, 10.
Painter, I. i. 44; II. i. 41; III. i. 79; IV. i. 89.]

XXIII. Favorinus.

A pretie disputation of the philosopher Phauorinus, to perfwade a woman not to put forth her child to nurffe, but to nourishe it herselfe with her owne milke.

[Source and Origin.—A. Gellius, Noct. Att. xvii. 12.
Painter, I. i. 45; II. i. 42; III. i. 77; IV. i. 91.]

XXIV. Sertorius.

Of Sertorius, a noble Romaine capitaine.

[Source and Origin.—A Gellius, Noct. Att.
Painter, I. i. 48; II. i. 45; III. i. 81; IV. i. 95.
Derivates.—A tragedy with this title, by J. Bancroft, appeared in 1679, but it is scarcely likely to have been derived from Painter.]
ANALYTICAL TABLE OF CONTENTS.

XXV. Sibylline Leaves.

Of the bookes of Sybilla.

[Source.—A. Gellius, Noct. Att. i. 19.
Origin.—Pliny, Hist. Nat. xiii. 28.
Painter, I. i. 49 ; II. i. 46 ; III. i. 84 ; IV. i. 98.]

XXVI. Master and Scholar.

A difference and controversie betwene a maister and a scholler, to subtyle that the iudges coulde not geue sentence.

[Source and Origin.—A. Gellius.
Painter, I. i. 80 ; II. i. 46 ; III. i. 85 ; IV. i. 99.]

XXVII. Seleucus and Antiochus.

Seleucus king of Asia, gaue his wife to his owne sonne in mariage, being his mother in lawe; who so feruely did loue her, that he was like to die, whiche by a discrете and wyse inuention, was discouered to Seleucus by a Philition.

[Source and Origin.—Plutarch, Demetrius (probably in Amyot's translation).
Parallels—Val. Max. v. 7 ; Wanley, Wonders, III. ix. 4.
Painter, I. i. 51 ; II. i. 48 ; III. i. 88 ; IV. i. 102.]

XXVIII. Timon of Athens.

Of the straunge and beaftlie nature of Timon of Athens, enemie to mankinde, with his death, buriall, and Epitaphe.

[Source and Origin.—Plutarch, Marc Antonius (probably through Amyot's translation).
Parallels—Erasmus, Adagio ; Sabell. Exemp. ii. 2 ; Reynolds, Treatise of Passions, c. 13 ; Wanley, Wonders, II. ix. 8.
Painter, I. i. 57 ; II. i. 54 ; III. i. 98 ; IV. i. 112.
Derivates.—Shakespeare's Timon of Athens (c. 1608) is founded on this, though much expanded. There is a play of Timon anterior to Shakespeare's, and printed by Mr. Hazlitt.]

XXIX. Marriage of Widow and Widower.

The mariage of a man and woman, hee being the husbBand of xx. wiues : and shee the wife of xxii. husbandes.
[Source.—Pedro di Messia, Selva di varie Lessioni, i. 34.
Origin.—St. Jerome.
Painter, I. i. 59; II. i. 55; III. i. 100; IV. i. 114.]

XXX. The Three Rings.

How Melchisedech a iewe, by telling a pretie tale of three Ringe, saued his life.

[Source.—Boccaccio, Decameron, giorn. i., nov. 3.
Parallels.—Med.: Shebet Jehuda (Heb.), Gesta Rom. 89. Lessing, Nathan der Weise.
Painter.—I. i. 60; II. i. 56; III. i. 102; IV. i. 116.]

XXXI. BORSIERI AND GRIMALDI.

One called Guglielmo Borsiere with certaine wordes well placed, taunted the couetous life of Ermino Grimaldi.

[Source.—Boccaccio, Dec., giorn. i., nov. 8.
Origin.—Benvenuto Ram baldi. Commentary on Inferno xvi.
Painter.—I. i. 61; II. i. 57; III. i. 105; IV. i. 119.]

XXXII. ALBERTO OF BOLOGNA.

Maifter Alberto of Bologna, by a pleasaunt aunswear made a gentlewoman to blueshe, which had thoughte to have put him out of countenaunce, in telling him that he was in loue with her.

[Source and Origin.—Boccaccio, Dec. i. 10.
Painter.—I. i. 63; II. i. 58; III. i. 108; IV. i. 122.]

XXXIII. RINALDO OF ESTE.

Rinaldo of Efti being robbed, arriued at Caftel Guglielmo, and was succoured of a wydowe: and restored to his losses, retouning faulfe and founde home to his owne houfe.

[Source.—Boccaccio, Dec. ii. 2.
Origin.—Pantschatantra (Fables of Bidpai), II. iv. tr. Benfey, 183.]
XXXIV. THE KING OF ENGLAND'S DAUGHTER.

Three yonge men hauing fondlye consumed all that they had, became verie poore, whose nephewe (as he returned out of Englande into Italie,) by the wave fell into acquaintance with an abbote, whom (vpon further familiaritie) he knewe to be the king of Englande's daughter, whiche toke him to husbande. Afterwardes he restored his vncles to all their lostes, and sent them home in good state and reputation.

[Source and Origin."—Boccaccio, Dec., giorn. ii., nov. 3.
Painter.—I. i. 68; II. i. 63; III. i. 116; IV. i. 130.]

XXXV. LANDOLFO RUFFOLO.

Landolpho Ruffolo being impooperifed, became a pirate and taken by the Geneuois, was in daunger of drowning, who fauing himselfe vpon a little coafer full of rich ieweles, was receiued at Corfu, and beinge cherished by a woman, returned home very riche.

[Source and Origin.—Boccaccio, Decamerone, giorn. ii., nov. 4.
Painter.—I. i. 73; II. i. 68; III. i. 124; IV. i. 138.]

XXXVI. ANDRUCCIO.

Andreuccio of Perugia being come to Naples to buy horfes, was in one night furprised, with three maruellous accidentes. All which hauinge escaped with one Rubie he returned home to his house.

[Source.—Boccaccio, Decamerone, giorn. ii., nov. 5.
Origin.—Fabliau, Boivin de Provins. Barbazan, i. 357.
Painter.—I. 76; II. i. 71; III. i. 129; IV. i. 143.]

* Landau, Quellen, p. 35, points out that the tale is related to the "Youngest-best" folk tales, which deal with the successes of the youngest.
XXXVII. THE EARL OF ANGIERS.

The earl of Angiers being falsely accused, was banished out of Fraunce, and left his two sons in fondry places in England, and retournyng (vniknownen) by Scotlande, founde them in great authoritie, afterwandes he repayed in the habite of a feruante, to the Frenche kinges armie, and being knowne to be innocent, was againe aduaunced to his first eflate.

[Source.—Boccaccio's, Decameron, giorn. ii., nov. 8.
Origin.—Dante, Purg. vi. 22, and frame of Seven Wise Masters.
Parallels.—Mediæval: Guillaume de la Barre, ed. P. Meyer; Jacob à Voragine, Legenda aurea, 176; Gesta Rom. 48; Mod.: Goethe, Vertriebener Graf.
Painter.—I. i. 85; II. i. 78; III. i. 142; IV. i. 156.
Derivates.—Ayres, the German dramatist (+ 1605), who derived much from the English comedians, had a drama called Graf von Angiers.]

XXXVIII. GILETTA OF NARBONNE.

Giletta, a Phliuson's daughter of Narbon, healed the French King of a Fiflula, for reward whereof the demanded Beltramo Counte of Roffiglione to hufband. The Counte being maried against his will, for despite fled to Florence and loued another. Giletta his wife, by pollicie founde meanes to lye with her hufbande, in place of his louer, and was begotten with childe of two sonnes: which knowne to her husband, he receiued her againe, and afterwards he liued in great honour and felicitie.

[Source.—Boccaccio, Decameron, giorn. iii., nov. 9.
Origin.—? Terence Hecyra.
Painter.—I. i. 95; II. i. 87; III. i. 157; IV. i. 171.
Derivates.—The main plot of Shakespeare's All's Well that Ends Well certainly comes from Painter.]

XXXIX. TANCREDI AND GISMONDA.

Tancred Prince of Salerne, caufed his daughter's louer to be flayne, and fente his harte vnto her in a cup of golde: whiche afterwades she put into poyfoned water, and drinking thereof died.
ANALYTICAL TABLE OF CONTENTS.

[Origin.—Boccaccio, Decameron, giorn. iv., nov. i.
Source.—Romance of Raoul de Cougy.
Painter.—I. i. 100; II. i. 92; III. i. 166; IV. i. 180.
Derivates.—R. Wilmot, Tancred and Gismund (performed 1568, printed 1591); Turberville, Tragical Tales, iv.]

XL. MAHOMET AND IRENE.

Mahomet one of the Turkish Emperours, executeth cursed crueltie vpon a Grecque maiden, whome hee tooke prisoner, at the wyning of Constantinople.

[Source and Origin.—Bandello, Part i., nov. 10 (through French translation of Boaisstau, 1559, no. 2).
Parallels.—Belleforest, Histories tragiques, i. 30 seq.; Knowles, Turk. Hist. 350 seq.; Wanley, Wonders, IV. x. 6.
Painter.—I. i. 107; II. i. 94; III. i. 176; IV. i. 190.
Derivates.—Peele's Famous play of the Turkish Mahomet and Hyren the Fair Greek, played in 1594 and 1601 (not extant). Ayres had also a drama on Mahomet. Also, L. Carlell, Osmond the Great Turk, 1657; G. Swinhoe, Unhappy fair Irene, 1658; C. Goring, Irene, 1708; Dr. Johnson, Irene, 1749.]

XLI. LADY FALSELY ACCUSED.

A Ladie faflie accused of adultrie, was condempned to be deououred of Lions: the maner of her deliuerie, and how (her innocencie being knowne) her accuser felt the paines for her prepared.

[Source and Origin.—Bandello (through Belleforest's translation, 1559, no. 2).
Painter.—I. i. 112; II. i. 103; III. i. 184; IV. i. 198.]

XLII. DIDACO AND VIOLENTA.

Didaco a Spaniarde, is in loue with a poore maiden of Valencia, and secretly marieth her, afterwaeres lothinge his first mariage, because she was of base parentage, he marieth an other of noble birth. His first
wyfe, by fecrete meffenger prayeth his company, whose requête he accomplisheth. Being a bedde, shee and her maide killeth him. She throweth him into the streete: shee in desperate wife confessed the facto before the Maiestrates, and is put to death.

[Source.—Boaistua, 1559, no. 5.
Origin.—Bandello, Part i., nov. 42.
Painter.—I. i. 125; II. i. 114; III. i. 204; IV. i. 218.]

Derivates.—T. Achely put the story into verse, 1576. Beaumont and Fletcher's *Triumph of Death*, the second of their *Four Plays in One*.

XLIII. LADY OF TURIN.

Wantones and pleaunting life being guides of insolencie, doth bring a miserable end to a faire ladie of Thurin, whom a noble man aduanced to high estate: as appereth by this historie, wherein he executeth great crueltie vpon his sayde ladie, taken in adulterie.

[Source.—Boaistua, 1559, no. 4.
Origin.—Bandello, Part ii., nov. 12.
Parallels.—Belleforest, i. 78 seq. Q. Margaret, *Heptameron*, nov. 32 (cf. Painter I. 57, infra and parallels there).
Painter.—I. i. 135; II. i. 127; III. i. 226; IV. i. 240.]

XLIV. ALERAN AND ADELASIA.

The loue of Alerane of Saxone, and of Andelafia the daughter of the Emperour Otho the thirde of that name. Their flight and departure into Italie, and how they were known againe, and what noble houfes of Italie descended of their race.

[Source and Origin.—Bandello, Part ii., nov. 27 (Belleforest, 1559, no. 1).
Parallels.—Belleforest, i. 57 seq.
Painter.—I. i. 20 (sic); II. i. 130; III. i. 245; IV. i. 249.]

XLV. DUCHESS OF SAVOY.

The Duchesse of Sauoie, being the kinge of England's sister, was in the Duke her husbandes absence, vniueltlye accused of adulterie, by a noble man, his Lieutenante: and shoulde haue beene put to death, if by the provisio and valiant combate of Don Iohn di Mendoza, (a gentleman of Spaine) she had not beene deliuered. With a discours of maruelous accidentes, touchinge the fame, to the singuler praise and commendation of chaste and honest Ladies.
ANALYTICAL TABLE OF CONTENTS.

[Source. — Boaistuau, 1559, no. 6.
Parallels. — Belleforest, i. 107, seq.
Painter. — I. i. 226; II. i. 153; III. i. 271; IV. i. 285.
Derivates. — De la Peend, History of John Lord Mandozze, 1565 (cf. Brit. Bibliographer, ii. 523). De la Peend must have had proof sheets of Painter.]

XLVI. THE COUNTESS OF SALISBURY.

A King of England loued the daughter of one of his noble men, which was Countesse of Salesburie, who after great fute to atchieue that he could not winne, for the entire loue he bare her, and her greate constancie, hee made her his queene and wife.

[Source. — Bandello, Part ii., nov. 26 (through Boaistuau, no. 1).
Origin. — Froissart, i., cc. 77–89. (N.B. — There is a confusion between Edward III. and the Black Prince, who was really the Countess' lover.)
Parallels. — Belleforest, i. § 18.
Painter. — I. i. 258; II. i. 182; III. i. 320; IV. 334.
Derivates. — The Shakespearian part of Edward III. is derived from the work of Painter.]

XLVII. GALGANO AND MADONNA MINOCIA.

A gentleman called Galgano, long time made fute to Madonna Minoccia: her husband fir Stricca (not knowing the fame) duiers times praisd and commended Galgano, by reafon whereof, in the absence of her husband, she fent for him, and yelded herself vnto him, tellinge him what wordes her husband had spoken of him, and for recompence he refused to dilyonest her.

[Source and Origin. — Ser Giovanni Fiorentino, Peccorone, I. i.
Parallels. — Masuccio, Novellino, 1450, nov. 21.
Painter. — I. i. 279; II. i. 199; III. i. 351; IV. ii. 3.]

XLVIII. BINDO AND RICCIARDO.

Bindo a notable Architec, and his sonne Ricciardo, with all his familie, from Florence went to dwell at Venice, where being made Citizens for diuers monuments by them done there, through inordinate expences were forced to robbe the Trefasure houfe. Bindo beinge flaine
by a pollicie deuifed by the Duke andflate, Ricciardo by fine subtelties deliuereth himſelſe from foure daungers. Afterwards the Duke (by his owne confeffion) vnderſtandinge the fleightes, giueth him his pardon and his daughter in mariage.

[Source and Origin.—Ser Giovanne, Pecor., giorn. ix., nov. 1.
Painter.—I. i. 282; II. i. 202; III. i. 356; IV. ii. 8.
Derivates.—Henslowe’s Diary, 4 Mar. and 5 June 1592, has references to a tragedy of Bindo and Ricardo, evidently derived from this.]

XLIX. Filenio Siferno.

Philenio Siferno, a Scholler of Bologna, being mocked of three faire Gentlewomen, at a bancket made of fet purpose he was reuenged on them all.

[Source and Origin.—Straparola, Piac. Notti, II., nov. 2.
Painter.—I. i. 289; II. i. 208; III. i. 386; IV. i. 18.]

L. Muleteer’s Wife.

The piteous and chaſte death of one of the muleters wiues of the Queene of Nauarre.

[Source and Origin.—Q. Margaret, Heptameron 2.
Painter.—I. i. 296; II. i. 214; III. i. 377; IV. ii. 29.]

LI. King of Naples.

A king of Naples, abufing a Gentleman’s wiſe, in the end did weare the hornes himſelf.

[Source and Origin.—Q. Margaret, Heptameron, 3.
Parallels.—Bandello, Part iv., nov. 10.
Painter.—I. i. 298; II. i. 216; III. i. 380; IV. i. 32.]

LII. Princess of Flanders.

The raſhe enterprife of a Gentleman againſt a Princesſe of Flaunders, and of the shame that he receyued thereof.

[Source and Origin.—Q. Margaret, Heptameron, 4.
Painter.—I. i. 302; II. i. 219; III. i. 386; IV. ii. 38.]
ANALYTICAL TABLE OF CONTENTS.

LIII. AMADOUR AND FLORIZINDA.

The loue of Amadour and Florinda: wherein be conteined manie sleightes and diffimulations, together with the renowned chastitie of the said Florinda.

[Source and Origin.—Q. Margaret, Heptameron, 10. Painter.—I. i. 306; II. i. 223; III. i. 393; IV. ii. 45.]

LIV. DUKE OF FLORENCE.

The incontinencie of a duke and of his impudencie to attaine his purpofe, with the iuft punishment which he receiued for the fame.

[Source and Origin.—Q. Margaret, Heptameron, 12. Painter.—I. i. 326; II. i. 270; III. i. 423; IV. ii. 75.]

LV. FRANCIS I. AND COUNT GUILLAUME.

One of the Frenche kinge’s called Frauncis the firffe of that name, declared his gentle nature to Counte Guillaume, that would haue killed him.

[Source and Origin.—Q. Margaret, Heptameron, 17. Painter.—I. i. 330; II. i. 243; III. i. 429; IV. ii. 81.]

LVI. GENTLEWOMAN OF PAMPULUNE.

A pleasaunt discours of a great Lord to enioy a Gentlewoman of Pampulune.

[Source and Origin.—Q. Margaret, Heptameron, 26. Painter.—Not in I.; II. i. 245; III. i. 432; IV. ii. 84.]

LVII. A STRANGE PUNISHMENT OF ADULTERIE.

A punishment more rigorous than death, of a husband towards his wife that had committed adulterie.

[Source.—Q. Margaret, Heptameron, nov. 32. Origin.—? Bandello, Part ii., nov. 10. Parallels.—Med. : Gesta, Gower; Conf. Amant. i. Mod. : Bandello, iii., nov. 15; Belleforest, i. 297; Whetstone, Heptameron, 3rd day; Stollberg, Ballad. Painter.—I. i. 332; II. i. 252; III. i. 445; IV. ii. 97.]
Derivates.—Greene's *Planetomachio* and Davenant's *Alboroine* have similar incidents, but whether derived from Painter it is difficult to say.

LVIII. President of Grenoble.

A President of Grenoble advertised of the ill government of his wife, took such order, that his honestie was not diminished, and yet reuenged the facte.

*Source and Origin.*—Q. Margaret, *Hept.* nov. 36.
*Parallels.*—Bandello, Part i., nov. 35.
*Painter.*—I. i. 334; II. i. 254; III. i. 449; IV. ii. 101.
*Derivates.*—Shirley's *Love's Crueltie*.

LIX. Gentleman of Perche.

A gentleman of Perche suspeeting iniurie done vnto him by his friend, prouoked him to execute and put in proufe the caufe of his suspcion.

*Source and Origin.*—Q. Margaret, *Hept.* nov. 47.
*Painter.*—I. i. 336; II. i. 256; III. i. 452; IV. ii. 104.

LX. Gentleman that Died of Love.

The piteous death of an Amorous Gentleman, for the slacke comfort geuen him to late, by his beloved.

*Source and Origin.*—Q. Margaret, *Hept.* nov. 9.
*Painter.*—Not in I.; II. i. 258; III. i. 455; IV. ii. 107.

LXI. Lady of the French Court.

A Gentlewoman of the Courte, very pleasantauntly recompedenced the seruice of a kinde serraunte of her's, that pursued her with seruice of loue.

*Source and Origin.*—Q. Margaret, *Hept.* nov. 58.
*Painter.*—Not in I.; II. i. 26; III. i. 461; IV. ii. 113.

LXII. Rolandine the Chaste.

The honest and maruellous loue of a mayden of noble houfe, and of a gentleman that was base borne, and howe a Queene did impeche and let their mariage, with the wife aunfwere of the mayde to the Queene.
ANALYTICAL TABLE OF CONTENTS.

[LXIII. THE PRUDENT LADY.

The Wisedome of a woman to withdrawe the foolifhe loue of her husband, wherewith he was tormented.

[LXIV. THE LADY OF TOURS.

The notable charitie of a woman of Tours towards her husbande.

[LXV. MIRACLE AT LYONS.*

The simplicitie of an old woman, that offered a burning candle to S. Iohn of Lions.

[LXVI. DOCTOR OF LAWS.

A Doctor of the Lawes boughte a cup, who by the subtiltie of two false varlets, loft both his money and the cuppe.
ANALYTICAL TABLE OF CONTENTS

THE SECOND TOMÉ.

I. THE AMAZONS.

The hardineffe and conquests of divers stout, and aduenturous women, called Amazones, the beginninge, and continuance of their Reigne, and of the great iourney of one of their Queenes called Thaleftis to visit Alexander the great: with the cause of her travaile.

[Source and Origen.—Herod. iv. 110.
Parallels.—Acerra, ii. 58 ; Albertinus, 55 ; Kirchhof, Wendenmuth, iv. 182.
Painter.—I. ii. 1 ; II. ii. 1 ; III. ii. 1 ; IV. ii. 159.]
Derivates.—A Masque of the Amazons was played March 3, 1592 (Henslowe).]

II. ALEXANDER AND SISIGAMBIS.

The great pitie and continencie of Alexander the great and his louinge entertaynment of Sisigambis the wife of the great monarch Darivs after he was vanquifhed.

[Source and Origin.—Q. Curtius, x. 5.
Parallels.—Justin, xiii. 1.
Painter.—I. ii. 5 ; II. ii. 4 ; III. ii. 8 ; IV. ii. 166.]

III. TIMOCLIA OF THEBES.

Timoclia, a gentlewoman of Thebes, vnderstandinge the couetus defire of a Thracian knight, that had abused hir, and promifed her mariage, rather for her goods than loue, well acquited hir selfe from his falshood.

[Source and Origin.—Plutarch, Alexander (Amyot).
Parallels.—Zonar, Ann. i. f. 32 ; Wanley, Wonders, III. xxx. 6.
Painter.—I. ii. 9 ; II. ii. 7 ; III. ii. 14 ; IV. ii. 172.
Derivates.—A play entitled Timoclia, doubtless derived from Painter, is mentioned in the Revel's Account. It was played at Merchant Taylors' in 1574. Fleay, History, 381.]
IV. Ariobarzanes.

Ariobarzanes great steward to Artaxerxes king of Persia, goeth about to exceede his soueraigne lord and maister in curtezie: where in he conteyned many notable and pleasante chaunces, besides the great patience and loyaltie naturally planted in the sayd Ariobarzanes.

(Source and Origin.—Bandello, Pt. i., nov. 2.
Parallels.—Belleforest, iv. f. 9 seg.
Painter.—I. ii. 11 ; II. ii. 9 ; III. ii. 18 ; IV. ii. 176.)

V. Aristotemus the Tyrant.

Lucivs one of the garde to Aristotimvs the Tyrant of the cititie of Elis, fell in loute with a faire mayden called Micca, the daughter of one Philodemvs, and his cruelty done upon her. The stoutnesse also of a noble matron named Meglona in defence of hir husbande and the common wealth from the tyranny of the said Aristotimvs: and of other actes done by the subiects vppon that Tyrant.

(Source and Origin.—Bandello, Part iii. nov. 5.
Parallels.—Belleforest, t. iv. f. 234.
Painter.—I. ii. 32 ; II. ii. 26 ; III ii. 51 ; IV. ii. 209.)

VI. Tanaquil.

The maruaylous courage and ambition of a gentlewoman called Tanaquil, the Queene and wife of Tarqvinivs Priscvs the fift Roman king, with his persuasions and pollicy to hir husbande for his aduancement to the kingdom, her lyke encouragement of Servivs Tvllivs, wherein also is described the ambition of one of the ii. daughters of Servivs Tullivs the fift Roman king, and her cruelty towards her owne natural father: with other accidents chaunced in the new erected common welth of Rome, specially of the laft Romane king Tarqvinivs Sverpbvs, who with murder attained the kingdome, with murder mayntained it, and by the murder and insolent lyfe of his sonne was with al his progeny banished.

(Source and Origin.—Livy, i. 34-41.
Painter.—I. ii. 40 ; II. ii. 33 ; III. ii. 63 ; IV. ii. 227.)
VII. SOPHONISBA.

The vnhappy end and success of the love of King Maffiniffa, and Queene Sophonisba his wyfe.

[Source.—Bandello, Part i. nov. 41.
Origin.—Petrarch, Trionfi.
Parallels.—Belleforest, I. iii., f. 356; Trissino, Sophonisba (tragedy), 1524; Raleigh, Hist. V. iii. 8; Wanley, Wonders, III. iii. 2.
Painter.—I. ii. 49; II. ii. 39; III. ii. 78; IV. ii. 236.
Derivates.—Marston, Wonder of Women, or Sophonisba, her tragedy, printed 1606; N. Lee, Sophonisba, or Hannibal's Overthrow, 1676; J. Thomson, Sophonisba, acted 28 Feb. 1730.*]

VIII. THEOXENA AND PORIS.

The crueltie of a Kynge of Macedone who forced a gentlewoman called Theoxena, to perswade hir children to kill and poyfon themselves: after which fact, she and hir husband Poris ended their lyfe by drowninge.

[Source and Origin.—Livy, xl. 4.
Painter.—I. ii. 39; II. ii. 48; III. ii. 94; IV. ii. 252.]

IX. LADY OF HIDRUSA.

A strange and maruellous vfe, which in old time was observed in Hidrvfa, where it was lawfull, with the licence of a magistrate ordaind for that purpofe, for every man, and woman that lift, to kill them selues.

[Source and Origin.—Bandello, Part i., nov. 56.
Parallels.—Belleforest, t. iv., f. 214.
Painter.—I. ii. 61; II. ii. 50; III. ii. 98; IV. ii. 256.]

X. THE EMPRESS FAUSTINA.

The dishonest Loue of Favftina the Empresse, and with what remedy the same loue was remoued and taken away.

* The celebrated line, "O Sophonisba, Sophonisba O!" has kept its memory alive.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Source and Origin.</th>
<th>Bandello, Part 1, nov. 36.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Painter.</td>
<td>I. ii. 65; II. ii. 52; III. ii. 102; IV. ii. 260.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**XI. Two Maids of Carthage.**

Chera hid a treasure: Elifa going about to hang her selfe, and tying the halter about a beame found that treasure, and in place thereof left the halter. Philene the daughter of Chera going for that treasure, and busily searching for the same, found the halter, wherewithal for dispayre she would have hanged her selfe, but forbidden by Elifa, who by chance repied hir, she was restored to part of her losse, leading afterwards a happy and prosperous lyfe.

[Source and Origin.—Cinthio, Ecatomithi, giorn. ix., nov. 8. Parallels.—“Heir of Linne” in Percy; Guellette, *Contes tartares*. Painter.—I. ii. 67; II. ii. 54; III. ii. 106; IV. ii. 264.]

**XII. Letters of the Emperor Trajan.**

Letters of the Philosopher Plutarch to the noble and vertuous Emperor Traiane, and from the sayd Emperor to Plutarch: the lyke also from the saide Emperour to the Senate of Rome. In all which be conteyned godly rules for gouvemment of Princes, obedience of Subjects, and their duties to common wealth.

[Source and Origin.—Guevara. Painter.—I. ii. 76; II. ii. 62; III. ii. 121; IV. ii. 279.]

**XIII. Lamia, Flora and Lais.**

A notable History of three amorous Gentlewomen called Lamia, Flora, and Lais: conteyning the futes of noble Princes and other great Personages made vnto them, with their answeres to divers demaundes: and the manner of their death and funerals.

[Source and Origin.—“Pausanias and Manitius” (text). Parallels.—Painter I. nov. xv.; for Lais, Fenton, *Wonderful Secretes* 1569, ff. 65-7. Painter.—I. ii. 123 [89]; II. ii. 73; III. ii. 143; IV. ii. 301.]
XIV. ZENOBIA QUEEN OF PALMYRA.

The lyfe and giftes of the moft Famous Queene Zenobia with the Letters of the Emperour Avrelianus to the fayde Queene, and her ftoate aunfwere thereunto.

[Source and Origin.—Tacitus, Ann. xii. 51.
 *Painter.*—I. ii. 89 [95]; II. ii. 78; III. ii. 153; IV. 311.
 Derivates.—A Zenobia was played at the Rose Theatre in 1591.]

XV. EUPHIMIA AND ACHARISTO.

Euphimia the Kyng of Corinth's daughter fell in love with Acharisto, the fernaunt of her father, and besides others which required hir in mariage, the disdayned Philon the King of Peloponefvs, that loued hir very fenuently. Acharisto conspiring against the King, was difcouered, tormented, and put in prifon, and by meanes of Euphimia deliuered. The King promifed his daughter and kingdome to him that prefented the head of Acharisto. Euphimia fo wrought, as hee was prefented to the King. The King gave him his daughter to wyfe and when he died made him his heyre. Acharisto began to hate his wyfe, and condemned hir to death as an adulteresse. Philon deliuered hir: and upon the fute of hir subiefts, she is contented to mary him, and thereby he is made Kynge of Corinth.

[Source and Origin.—Cinthio, Ecaton, viii., nov. 10.
 *Painter.*—I. 101; II. ii. 82; III. ii. 162; IV. ii. 320.]

XVI. THE MARCHIONESS OF MONFERRATO.

The Marchionesse of Monferrato, with a banket of Hennes, and certaine pleafant wordes, reprefsed the fond loue of Philip the French Kynge.

[Source.—Boccaccio, Decamerone, giorn. i., nov. 5.
 *Origin.*—Seven Wise Masters.
 *Parallels.*—Anc. : II. Sam. c. xi. Med.: Sindibad, and pils.
 *Painter.*—I. ii. 112; II. ii. 91; III. ii. 180; IV. ii. 338.]

XVII. ANSALDO AND DIANORA.

Miftrefe Dianora demaunded of maifter Anfaldo a garden fo faire in January, as in the moneth of May. Mayfter Anfaldo (by meanes of an
obligation which he made to a Nicromancer) caufed the fame to bee done. The husband agreed with the gentlewoman that she should do the pleafure which maifter Anfaldo required, who hearinge the liberality of hir husband, acquitted hir of hir promife, and the Necromancer discharged maifter Anfaldo.

[Source.—Boccaccio, Decamerone, giorn. x., nov. 5.  
Parallels.—Med.: Chaucer, Cant. Tales. Mod.: Andre, Chymische Hochzeit; cf. Campbell, West Highland Tales, No. 19, and R. Kohler's variants in Orient und Occident, ii.  
Painter.—I. ii. 114; II. ii. 93; III. ii. 184; IV. ii. 342.  
Derivates.—Beaumont and Fletcher, Triumph of Honour (but perhaps from Chaucer); Two Merry Milkmaids.]

XVIII. Mithridanes and Nathan.

Mithridanes enuious of the liberality of Nathan, and goinge aboute to kill hym, fpake vnto him vnknowne, & being inforune by himfelf by what meanes he might do the fame he found him in a little wood accordingly as hee had tolde him, who knowinge him, was afhamed, and became his friende.

[Source.—Boccaccio, Decamerone, giorn. x., nov. 3.  
Origin.—? Sadi, Orchard, story of Chatemtai and King of Yemen.  
Painter.—I. ii. 118; II. ii. 96; III. ii. 190; IV. ii. 348.]

XIX. Catherine of Bologna.

Mayfter Gentil of Carifendi being come from Modena, tooke a woman out of hir graue that was buried for dead, who after she was come agayne, brought forth a fonne, which mayfter Gentil rendred afterwardes with the mother to mayfter Nicholas Chafennemie her husband.

[Source and Origin.—Boccaccio's Decamerone, giorn. x., nov. 4.  
Parallels.—Storia di Ginevra (printed, Pisa, 1863); Bandello, Part ii., nov. 41; Marie de France, Lai d’Eliduc; Uhland, Todten von Lustnau. See Liebrecht's discussion, Zur Volkskunde, pp. 60–5.  
Painter.—I. ii. 123; II. ii. 100; III. ii. 197; IV. ii. 355.]
XX. Thorello and Saladine.

Saladine in the habite of a Marchaunt, was honourably receyued into the house of mayfter Thorello, who went ouer the Sea, in company of the Christians, and affigned a terme of his wyfe when she should mary agayne. He was taken, and caried to the Sovldan to be his Faulconer, who knowing him, and sufferings himself to be knowne, did him great honour. Mayfter Thorello fell sicke, and by Magique Art, was caried in a night to Pavie, where he found his wyfe about to mary agayne, who knowinge him, returned home with him to his owne house.

[Source.—Boccaccio, Decamerone, giorn. x., nov. 9.
Origin.—Busone da Gubbio, L'avventuroso Siciliano.
Painter.—I. ii. 128; II. ii. 104; III. ii. 205; IV. ii. 363.]

XXI. Anne Queen of Hungary.

A Gentleman of meane callinge and reputation, doth fall in loue with Anne, the Queene of Hungarie, whom thee very royally requited.

[Source and Origin.—Bandello, Part i., nov. 45.
Painter.—I. i. 140; II. ii. 114; III. ii. 225; IV. ii. 383.]

XXII. Alexander de Medice and the Miller's Daughter.

The gentle and iust act of Alexander de Medices Duke of Florence, vpon a gentleman whom he fauoured, who hauing rauished the Daughter of a poore Myller, caufed him to mary hir, for the greater honour and celebration whereof, he appoynted hir a rich and honourable Dowry.

[Source and Origin.—Bandello, Part ii., nov. 15.
Painter.—I. ii. 155; II. ii. 127; III. ii. 248; IV. ii. 406.
Derivates.—Fletcher, Maid of the Mill.]

XXIII. The Duchess of MalFY.

The infortunate mariage of a Gentleman, called Antonio Bologna, wyth the Duchesse of Malfi, and the pitiful death of them both.

[Source and Origin.—Bandello, Part i., nov. 26.
Parallels.—Belleforest, edit. 1565, nov. 19.
Painter.—I. ii., 169; II. ii. 139; III. ii. 271; IV. iii. 3.
Derivates.—Webster, Duchess of MalFY.]
XXIV. The Countess of Celant.

The disordered Lyfe of the Countesse of Celant, and how shee (causing the County of Mafino to be murdered,) was beheaded at Millan.

[Source and Origin.—Bandello, Part i. nov. 4 (Belleforest, 1565, no. 20).
Parallels.—Fenton, Tragical Discourses; Whetstone, Castle of Delight, Heptameron.
Painter.—I. ii. 195; II. ii. 160; III. ii. 312; IV. iii. 44.
Derivates.—Marston, Insatiate Countess.]

XXV. Romeo and Juliet.

The goodly Hystory of the true, and constant Loue between Rhomeo and Iulieta, the one of whom died of Poyfon, and the other of sorrow, and heuineffe: wherein be compryfed many adventures of Loue, and other devises touchinge the same.

[Source.—Bandello, Part ii., nov. 9 (through Boaistuan, 1559, no. 3).
Origin.—Luigi da Porto, 1535 (fr. Masuccio, 1476, nov. xxxiii.).
Parallels.—Belleforest, t. i.; otto novelle rarissime; A Brooke, 1562; Lopez de Vega, Los Castelverses y Monteses; F. de Roscas, Los Vendos de Verona; L. Grotto, Hadriana, 1578.
Painter.—I. ii. 118; II. ii. 179; III. ii. 348; IV. iii. 80.
Derivates.—Shakespeare's Romeo and Juliet is partly founded on Painter, partly on Brooke's poem. The English comedians played it in Germany. Sloane MS., 1775, contains a Latin play on this subject.]

XXVI. Two Ladies of Venice.

Two gentlemen of Venice were honourably deceuied of their Wyues, whose notable practises, and secret conference for atchieuinge their de-fire, occasioned divers accidentes, and ingendred double benefit: wherein also is recited an eloquent oration, made by one of them, pronounced before the Duke and state of that Citye: with other chaunces and acts concerninge the same.

[Source and Origin.—Bandello, Part i., nov. 15.
Parallels.—Belleforest, t. iii. p. 58.]
ANALYTICAL TABLE OF CONTENTS.

**XXVII. The Lord of Virle.**

The Lorde of Virle, by the commaundement of a fayre younge Wydow called Zilia, for hys promife made, the better to attaine hir loue, was contented to remayne dumbe the space of three yeares, and by what means he was reuenged, and obtayned hys fuite.

-[Source and Origin.—Bandello, Part iii., nov. 17.]

Parallels.—Belleforest, t. i. f. 289; Fenton, Trag. Disc. hist. xi.

**XXVIII. Lady of Bohemia.**

Two Barons of Hungarie affuring themselves to obtayne their fute to a fayre Lady of Boeme, receyued of hir a ftraung and maruelous repulse, to their great shame and Infamy, cursinge the tyme that euer they aduentured an enterprife fo foolifh.

-[Source and Origin.—Bandello, Part i., nov. 21.]

Parallels.—Whetstone, Arbour of Vertue.

**XXIX. Diego and Ginevra.**

Dom Diego a Gentleman of Spayne fell in loue with fayre Gineura, and she with him: their loue by means of one that euuied Dom Diego his happy choyfe, was by default of light credit on his part interrupted. He conflant of mynde, fell into despayre, and abandoninge all his frends and liuing, repayred to the Pyrene Mountaynes, where he led a fauage lyfe for certayne moneths, and afterwarde knowne by one of hys freendes, was (by marueylous circumflaunce) reconciled to hys froward mittrefle, and maryed.

-[Source and Origin.—Bandello, Part i., nov. 27.]

Parallels.—Belleforest, t. i., f. 382; Fenton, Trag. Disc., hist. xiii.; Whetstone, Garden of Unthriftness.

**Painter.—I. ii. 247; II. ii. 203; III. ii. 393; IV. iii. 125.**

**Derivates.**—The underplot of Marston’s Insatiate Countess is derived from Painter, cf. supra.]
XXX. Salimbene and Angelica.

A Gentleman of Siena, called Anselmo Salimbene, courteously and gently delivereth his enemy from death. The condemned party seeing the kinde parte of Salimbene, rendreth into his hands his sister Angelica, with whom he was in loue, which gratitude and courtefy, Salimbene well markinge, moued in confidence, woulde not abufe hir, but for recom-pence tooke hir to his wyfe.

[Source.—Bandello, Part i., nov. 46.
Origin.—G. Sermini.
Parallels.—Fenton, Trag. Disc., hist. i.
Painter.—I. ii. 350; II. ii. 286; III. ii. 556; IV. iii. 288.]

XXXI. Helena of Florence.

A wydow called mistress Helena, wyth whom a scholler was in loue, (thee lousynge an other) made the same scholler to stande a whole Wynter's night in the snow to wayte for hir, who afterwaordes by a sleght and pollicie, caufed hir in July, to stand upon a tower starke naked amongs flies and gnats, and in the sunne.

[Source.—Boccaccio, giorn. viii., nov. 8.
Origin.—? Fabliau, Barbazan, i. 296.
Painter.—I. ii. 376; II. ii. 307; III. ii. 597; IV. iii. 329.]

XXXII. Camiola and Roland.

A gentlewoman and wydow called Camiola of hir own mind rau-nfomed Roland the kyng's fonne of Sicilia, of purpofe to haue hir to hir husband, who when he was redeemed vnkindly denied hir, agaynfl whom very eloquently she inueyed, and although the law proued him to be hir husband, yet for his vnkindnes, shee utterly refused him.

[Source and Origin.—Bandello, Part i., nov. xxxv.
Painter.—I. ii. 391; II. ii. 320; III. ii. 622; IV. iii. 354.]

XXXIII. Lords of Nocera.

Great cruelties chaunced to the Lords of Nocera, for adultry by one of them committed with the captayne's wyfe of the forte of that city, with an enterprife moued by the captaine to the cityzens of the same
for rebellion, and the good and dutyfull aunfwere of them: with other pittyfull euents ryling of that notable and outragious vyce of whoredom.

[Source and Origin.—Bandello, Part i., nov. 55.
Parallels.—Belleforest, t. ii. f. 162 (ed. 1565, no. 23).
Painter.—I. ii. 217; II. ii. 324; III. ii. 631; IV. iii. 363.]

XXXIV. SULTAN SOLYMAN.

The horrible and cruell murder of Sultan Selyman, late the emperor of the Turkes and father of Selym that now raigneth, done vpon his eldest sonne Mvflapha, by the procurement, and meanes of Roſa his mother in lawe, and by the speciall instigation of one of his noble men called Rvflanvs: where alfo is remembred the wilful death of one of his sons named Giangir, for the griefe he conceiued to fee Mvflapha fo miserably strangled.

[Source and Origin.—N. à Moffa.
Painter.—Not in I.; II. ii. 341; III. ii. 663; IV. iii. 395.
Derivates.—Latin Tragedy of same name Solyman et Mustapha was played in 1581 (Fleay, History, 421).]

XXXV. THE KING OF MOROCCO.

The great curtesie of the kyng of Marocco, (a citty in Barbarie) toward a poore fisherman, one of his subiechts, that had lodged the kyng, being strayed from his company in hunting.

[Source and Origin.—Bandello, Part i. nov. 57.
Parallels.—Belleforest, t. ii. f. 190 (ed. 1565, no. 24).
Painter.—I. ii. 410; II. ii. 348; III. ii. 684; IV. iii. 416.]
## INDEX OF NOVELS.

[Double titles are repeated under both headings, e.g., “Romeo and Juliet” will also be found under “Juliet and Romeo.” Roman numbers indicate the Tome of Painter.]

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Title</th>
<th>Tome</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ABDOLMINUS</td>
<td>i. 12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acharisto and Euphemia</td>
<td>ii. 15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adelasia and Aleran</td>
<td>i. 44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adultery, Punishment of</td>
<td>i. 57</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Æsop's Fable of Lark</td>
<td>i. 20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alberto of Bologna</td>
<td>i. 32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aleran and Adelasia</td>
<td>i. 44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alexander and Scythians</td>
<td>i. 13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alexander and Sisigambis</td>
<td>ii. 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alexander de Medici</td>
<td>ii. 22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Amadour and Florinda</td>
<td>i. 53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Amazons</td>
<td>ii. 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Androclus (Androcles)</td>
<td>i. 22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Andruccio</td>
<td>i. 36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Angelica and Salimbene</td>
<td>ii. 30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Angiers, Earl of</td>
<td>i. 37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anne of Hungary</td>
<td>ii. 21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ansaldo and Dionora</td>
<td>ii. 17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Antiochus and Hannibal</td>
<td>i. 21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Antiochus and Seleucus</td>
<td>i. 27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Appius and Virginia</td>
<td>i. 5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ariobarzanes</td>
<td>ii. 4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aristotimus</td>
<td>ii. 5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Artaxerxes and Sinetas</td>
<td>i. 9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Athens, Timon of</td>
<td>i. 28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BOHEMIA, Lady of</td>
<td>ii. 28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bologna, Alberto of</td>
<td>i. 32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bologna, Katharine of</td>
<td>ii. 19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Borsieri and Grimaldi</td>
<td>i. 31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CAMILLUS and Schoolmaster</td>
<td>i. 17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Camiola and Roland</td>
<td>ii. 32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Candaules and Gyges</td>
<td>i. 6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carthage, Maids of</td>
<td>ii. 11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carthomes and Rhacon</td>
<td>i. 8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chariton and Menalippus</td>
<td>i. 10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coriolanus</td>
<td>i. 4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Countess of Celant</td>
<td>ii. 24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Countess of Salisbury</td>
<td>i. 46</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cresus and Solon</td>
<td>i. 7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Curialli and Horatii</td>
<td>i. 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cyrus and Panthea</td>
<td>i. 11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DAUGHTER of King of England</td>
<td>i. 34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Demosthenes and Lais</td>
<td>i. 15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Didaco and Violenta</td>
<td>i. 42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diego and Ginebra</td>
<td>ii. 29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dionora and Ansaldo</td>
<td>ii. 17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Doctor of Laws</td>
<td>i. 66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Duchess of Malfy</td>
<td>ii. 23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Duchess of Savoy</td>
<td>i. 45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Duke of Florence</td>
<td>i. 54</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Duke of Venice and Ricciardo</td>
<td>i. 48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EARL of Angers</td>
<td>i. 37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Este, Rinaldo of</td>
<td>i. 33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Euphemia and Acharisto</td>
<td>ii. 15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FABRICIUS and Pyrrhus</td>
<td>i. 16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Faustina</td>
<td>ii. 10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Favorinus</td>
<td>i. 23</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
INDEX TO NOVELS.

Filenio Sisterno . . . . i. 49
Flanders, Princess of . . . . i. 52
Flora, Lamia, and Lais . . . . ii. 13
Florence, Duke of . . . . i. 54
Florence, Helena of . . . . ii. 31
Florinda and Amadour . . . . i. 53
Francis I, and Guillaume . . . . i. 55
Galgano and Minocca . . . . i. 47
Gentleman of Perche . . . . i. 59
Gentleman that died of love . . . . i. 60
Giletta of Narbonne . . . . i. 38
Ginevra and Diego . . . . ii. 29
Gismonda and Tancred . . . . i. 39
Grenoble, President of . . . . i. 58
Grimaldi and Borsieri . . . . i. 31
Gyges and Candaula . . . . i. 6
Hannibal and Antiochus . . . . i. 21
Helena of Florence . . . . ii. 31
Hidrusa, Lady of Perche . . . . ii. 9
Horatii and Curiatii . . . . i. 1
Hungary, Anne of . . . . ii. 21
Irene and Mahomet . . . . i. 40
Juliet and Romeo . . . . ii. 25
Katharine of Bologna . . . . ii. 19
King of England's Daughter . . . . i. 34
King of Naples . . . . i. 51
King of Morocco . . . . ii. 35
Ladies of Venice . . . . ii. 26
Lady falsely accused . . . . i. 41
Lady of Bohemia . . . . ii. 28
Lady of French Court . . . . i. 61
Lady of Hidrusa . . . . ii. 9
Lady of Pampluna . . . . i. 56
Lady of Tours . . . . i. 64
Lady of Turin . . . . i. 42
Lady, Prudent . . . . i. 63
Lais and Demosthenes . . . . i. 15
Lamia, Flora, and Lais . . . . ii. 13
Landolfo Ruffolo . . . . i. 35
Lark, Fable of . . . . i. 20
Laws, Doctor of . . . . i. 66
Letters of Trajan . . . . ii. 12
Lord of Virle . . . . ii. 27
Lords of Nocera . . . . ii. 33
Lucrece, Rape of . . . . i. 2
Lyons, Miracle at . . . . i. 65
Maids of Carthage . . . . ii. 11
Mahomet and Irene . . . . i. 40
Malfy, Duchess of . . . . ii. 23
Master and scholar . . . . i. 26
Medici, Alexander of . . . . ii. 22
Menalippos and Chariton . . . . i. 10
Metellus on Marriage . . . . i. 14
Minocca and Galgano . . . . i. 47
Miracle at Lyons . . . . i. 65
Mithridanes and Nathan . . . . ii. 18
Monteferrato, Marchioness of . . . . ii. 16
Morocco, King of . . . . ii. 35
Mucius Scævola . . . . i. 3
Muletter's Wife . . . . i. 50
Naples, King of . . . . i. 51
Narbonne, Giletta of . . . . i. 38
Nathan and Mithridanes . . . . ii. 18
Nocera, Lords of . . . . ii. 33
Pampluna, Lady of . . . . i. 56
Panthea and Cyrus . . . . i. 10
Papyrius Pætæxtatus . . . . i. 15
Perche, Gentleman of . . . . i. 59
Plutarch's Anger . . . . i. 19
Poris and Theoxena . . . . ii. 8
President of Grenoble . . . . i. 58
Princess of Flanders . . . . i. 52
Prudent Lady . . . . i. 63
Pyrrhus and Fabricius . . . . i. 16
Rape of Lucrece . . . . i. 2
Rhoan and Carthomes . . . . i. 8
Ricciardo and Duke of Venice . . . . i. 48
Rinaldo of Este . . . . i. 33
Rings, The Three . . . . i. 30
Roland and Camiola . . . . ii. 32
Rolandine . . . . i. 62
Romeo and Juliet . . . . ii. 25
Ruffolo, Landolfo . . . . i. 35
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Novel 1</th>
<th>Volume 1</th>
<th>Page 1</th>
<th>Novel 2</th>
<th>Volume 2</th>
<th>Page 2</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Saladin and Thorello</td>
<td>ii. 20</td>
<td></td>
<td>Theoxena and Poris</td>
<td>ii. 8</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Salimbene and Angelica</td>
<td>ii. 30</td>
<td></td>
<td>Thorello and Saladin</td>
<td>ii. 20</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Salisbury, Countess of</td>
<td>i. 46</td>
<td></td>
<td>Three Rings</td>
<td>i. 30</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Savoy, Duchess of</td>
<td>i. 45</td>
<td></td>
<td>Timocelea of Thebes</td>
<td>ii. 3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sævola, Mucius</td>
<td>i. 3</td>
<td></td>
<td>Timon of Athens</td>
<td>i. 28</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scholar and Master</td>
<td>i. 26</td>
<td></td>
<td>Tours, Lady of</td>
<td>i. 64</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Schoolmaster and Camillus</td>
<td>i. 17</td>
<td></td>
<td>Trajan, Letters of</td>
<td>ii. 12</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scythians and Alexander</td>
<td>i. 13</td>
<td></td>
<td>Turin, Lady of</td>
<td>i. 43</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seleucus and Antiochus</td>
<td>i. 27</td>
<td></td>
<td>Venetia, Duke of and Riccardo</td>
<td>i. 48</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sertorius</td>
<td>i. 24</td>
<td></td>
<td>Venice, Two Ladies of</td>
<td>ii. 26</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sibylline Leaves</td>
<td>i. 25</td>
<td></td>
<td>Violenta and Didaco</td>
<td>i. 42</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sinetas and Artaxerxes</td>
<td>i. 9</td>
<td></td>
<td>Virginia and Appius</td>
<td>i. 5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sisigambis and Alexander</td>
<td>ii. 2</td>
<td></td>
<td>Virle, Lord of</td>
<td>ii. 27</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sisterno, Filenio</td>
<td>i. 49</td>
<td></td>
<td>Venetia, Two Ladies of</td>
<td>ii. 26</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Solon and Creesus</td>
<td>i. 7</td>
<td></td>
<td>Violenta and Didaco</td>
<td>i. 42</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sophonisba</td>
<td>ii. 7</td>
<td></td>
<td>Virginia and Appius</td>
<td>i. 5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sultan Solyman</td>
<td>ii. 34</td>
<td></td>
<td>Virle, Lord of</td>
<td>ii. 27</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tanaquil</td>
<td>ii. 6</td>
<td></td>
<td>Venetia, Two Ladies of</td>
<td>ii. 26</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tancred and Gismonda</td>
<td>i. 39</td>
<td></td>
<td>Violenta and Didaco</td>
<td>i. 42</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Virginia and Appius</td>
<td>i. 5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Virle, Lord of</td>
<td>ii. 27</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Venetia, Two Ladies of</td>
<td>ii. 26</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Violenta and Didaco</td>
<td>i. 42</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Virginia and Appius</td>
<td>i. 5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Virle, Lord of</td>
<td>ii. 27</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Venetia, Two Ladies of</td>
<td>ii. 26</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Violenta and Didaco</td>
<td>i. 42</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Virginia and Appius</td>
<td>i. 5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Virle, Lord of</td>
<td>ii. 27</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Venetia, Two Ladies of</td>
<td>ii. 26</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Violenta and Didaco</td>
<td>i. 42</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Virginia and Appius</td>
<td>i. 5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Virle, Lord of</td>
<td>ii. 27</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Venetia, Two Ladies of</td>
<td>ii. 26</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Violenta and Didaco</td>
<td>i. 42</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Virginia and Appius</td>
<td>i. 5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Virle, Lord of</td>
<td>ii. 27</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Venetia, Two Ladies of</td>
<td>ii. 26</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Violenta and Didaco</td>
<td>i. 42</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Virginia and Appius</td>
<td>i. 5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Virle, Lord of</td>
<td>ii. 27</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Venetia, Two Ladies of</td>
<td>ii. 26</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Violenta and Didaco</td>
<td>i. 42</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Virginia and Appius</td>
<td>i. 5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Virle, Lord of</td>
<td>ii. 27</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Venetia, Two Ladies of</td>
<td>ii. 26</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Violenta and Didaco</td>
<td>i. 42</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Virginia and Appius</td>
<td>i. 5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Virle, Lord of</td>
<td>ii. 27</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Note:** The table above lists the titles of novels and their corresponding volumes and pages in the index of the document. The list includes various historical and fictional narratives spanning different characters and settings. The page numbers indicate the locations of these entries within the document.
The Palace of Pleasure
Beautified, adorned and
Well furnished, with Pley-
saunt Histories and excellent
Novelles, selected out of
diers good and commen-
dable Authors.

By William Painter Clarke of the
Ordinance and Armorie.

IMPRINTED AT
London, by Henry Denham,
for Richard Tottell and William Iones.

VOL. I.
To the Right Honourable, my very good Lord, Ambrose Earle of Warwike, Baron of Lisle, of the most noble order of the Garter Knight, Generall of the Queenes Maiesties Ordinaunce within her Highnes Realmes and Dominions.

PROUOKED, or rather vehemently incited and move, I have been (right honorable my very good Lorde) to imagin and devise all meanes possible to auoyde that vile vice of ingratitude (which as it is abhorred amonst creatures voyde of reason and divine knowledge, so of men indued and full possesed with both, specially to be detested.) And that I might not be touched with that vnkind vice, odible to God and man, I have many times, with myselfe debated how I might by any meanes shew my selfe thanckfull and benevolent to your honour, which hath not onely by frequent talke vnto my frendes priuately, but also vpon my selfe openly imploied benefits and commendation vnderuered. The one I haue receiued by frendly report of your dere and approued frendes, the other I do feele and taft to my great flay and comfort. For when it pleased your honour of curteous inclination, vpon the first vew, willingly to content and agree to the confirmation of that which I do enjoy: for that bounty then, euer sithens I haue studied by what meanes I might commend my good will and affection to the same. Wherefore incensed with the generositie, and naturall instinct of your noble minde, I purposed many times to imploy indueor by some small beginnings, to give your honor to vnderstande outwardly, what the inwarde desire is willinge to do, if abilitie thereunto were correspondent. And as opportunitie serued (respiring as it were from the waigthy affaires of that office wherein it hath pleased our most drad Soueraigne Ladye worthely to place you the chiefe and Generall) I perused such volumes of noble Authors as werewith my poore
Armarie is furnished: and amonges other chaunced vpon that excellent Historiographer Titus Liuius. In whom is contayned a large campe of noble facts and exploits atchieued by valiaunt perfonages of the Romaine state. By whom also is remembred the beginning and continuation of their famous common wealth. And viewing in him great plenty of straung Histories, I thought good to selecct suche as were the best and principal, wherin trauailing not far, I occurred vpon some which I deemed moft worthy the prouulgation in our native tongue, reducing them into such compendious forme, as I truſte shall not appeare vnpleafant. Which when I had finifhed, feing them but a handfull in reſpect of the multitude I fully determined to procede in the reſt. But when I considered mine owne weakenes, and the maiestie of the Authour, the cancred infirmitye of a cowardlye minde, stayed my conceyued purpofe, and yet not fo stayed as utterlye to fuppreffe mine attempt. Wherefore aduauncing againe the Enſigne of courage, I thought good (leauing where I left in that Authour, till I knew better how they would be liked) to aduenture into diuers other, out of whom I decepered and chofe (raptim) fondry proper and commendable Histories, which I may boldly fo terme, because the Authors be commendable and well approved. And thereunto haue ioyned many other, gathered oute of Boccatio, Bandello, Ser Giouanni Fiorentino, Straparole, and other Italian and French Authours. All which I haue recueled and bound together in this volume, vnder the title of the Palace of Pleasure, presuming to confecrate the fame and the reſt of my beneuolent minde to your honour. For to whom duly appertayneth mine industry and dilligence, but to him that is the patron and imbracer of my wel doinges? Whereunto alſo I may apply the words of that excellent Orator Tullie, in his firſte booke of Offices. De benevolentia autem, quam quifq'; habeat erganos, primum illud eſt in officia, ut ei plurimum tribuamus, à quo plurimum diligimur. Of beneuolence which ech man beareth towards vs, the chiefeſt duty is to giue moſt to him, of whom wee be moſt beloued. But how well the fame is done, or how prayſe worthy the translatiſon I referre to the ſkilſul, crauing no more prayſe, than they ſhall attribute and
giue. To nothing do I afpyre by this my presumption (righte honourable) but cherefull acceptation at your handes: defirous hereby to shew my felfe studious of a frend of so noble vocation. And where greater things cannot be done, these small I trufte shall not be contempned: which if I doe perceive, hereafter more ample indevor shal be imployed to atchieue greater. In these histories (which by another terme I call Nouelles) be described the liues, gestes, conqu'estes, and highe enterprifes of great Princes, wherein also be not forgotten the cruell actes and tiranny of some. In these be set forth the great valiancie of noble Gentlemen, the terrible combates of courageous personages, the vertuous mindes of noble Dames, the chaftie hartes of constant Ladyes, the wonderful patience of puiffaunt Princes, the mild sufferaunce of well disposed gentlewomen, and in diuers, the quiet bearing of aduers Fortune. In these Histories be depainted in liuelye colours, the vglye shapes of infolencye and pride, the deforme figures of incontinencie and rape, the cruell aspectes of spoyle, breach of order, treason, ill lucke and ouerthrow of States and other persons. Wherein also be intermixed, pleasaunte discourses, merie talke, sportinge practises, deceitfull devises, and nipping tauntes, to exhilarate your honor's minde. And although by the first face and view, some of these may feeme to intreat of vnlawfull Loe, and the foule practises of the fame, yet being throughly reade and well confidered, both old and yonge may learne how to auoyde the ruine, ouerthrow, inconuenience and displeaure, that lasciuous desire and wanton wil doth bring to their futers and puruers. All which maye render good examples, the best to be followed, and the worst to be auoyded: for which intent and purpose be all things good and bad recited in histories, Chronicles and monuments, by the first authors and elucubrators of the fame. To whom then may these histories (wherin be contayned many discourses of nobilitie) be offered with more due desert than to him that in nobilitie and parentage is not inferiour to the best? To whom may faictes and exploites of famous personages be configned, but to him whose proweffe and valiant actes be manifeft, and well knowne to Englishmen, but better to straungers, which
haue felt the puissance thereof? To whom may the combats, gefts, and course of the victorious be remembred, but to him whose frequent vse of mightye countrie and terrible shocke of Shielde and Launce: is familiuer in Court, and famous in towne and country? In whom may pacient bearing of aduerfitie, and conftante fuffrance of Fortune's threatens more duly to the world appeare, than in him that hath conftantly fusteyned and quietely pafted over the bruntes thereof? To whom may be giuen the Theatre of the world, and stage of humaine misery, more worthely than to him that hath in poffeffion a Lady and Counteffe of noble birthe (whose fire was the old Earle of Bedford, a graue and faithfull councelor to her Maiesties moft noble progenitors, and father is the fame, in deare efimation and regard with her highness, vnder whom he trutfully and honourably serueth) whose curteous and counteffe like behauiour glistereth in court amongs the troupe of moft honourable dames: and for her toward disposition, first preferred by her Maiesty into her secret Chamber, and after aduanced to be Counteffe of your noble Earldome. Befides all which rare gifts, by nature grated in your honor, and by her bountifully beftowed, the perfect piety and brotherly loue betweene you and the right noble and vertuous the Earle of Leycefter your honourable brother is had in greateft admiration. Whose noble courage in deedes of honour and pafting humanity to his inferiours, is very commendable to the worlde. But here I wyll staye, lefte whileft I goe about to extolle your fames, I doe (for want of perfet skil in due prayfe) feeme to diminifhe that whiche among all men by commune profe is sufficientlye renowned. And as your honor doth with great prudence gouerne that
office of the Ordinance (whereof I am a member) even so, the fame hath with greate care and diligence commended suche vnto her highnes, to ioyne and serue, right worthy their vocations, specially the worshipfull Edward Randolfe Esquire, Lieu- tenaunt of that office a man for his experience and good aduise rather softred in the bofome of Bellona, than noured in kentifh foile (although in the scholehouse of curtefie and humanitie he appeareth ful carefully to haue ben trained vp by his vertuous parents) which is famiarly knowne vnto me and other that domestically (as it were) do frequent his companie. But alas my Lorde, among the mid of my reioyce of those before remembred, I cannot pretermit the lamentable losse of the best approved Gonner that euer serued in our time his Prince and countrie, Robert Thomas, the Maifter Gonner, who for skill and seruice, a title of Prince of Gonners iustly did deferue: And see the lucke, when he thought best to signifie his good will, by honouring Hymeneus bed, at nuptial night, a clap of that he never feared did ende his life. Such is the dreadful furie of Gonners art, and hellifh rage of Vulcane's worke. And therefore that daungerous seruice by skilful men is specially to be recommended and cherished. Whereunto as your honour hitherto hath borne singuler affection, by preferring to her Maiestie suche as from their infancie haue bene trayned vp in that necessarie seruice and very painefulye haue imployed their time, euen so I humbly befeche your honour for continuance of the fame, specially in thofe, that be indewed with greatest experience, in whome only resteth the brunte of our defence. A seruice and science so rare and nedefull, as none more. But what neede I to provoke your willing mynde, whiche is more pretf to cherifhe such, than I am able by wyflying heart for to conceiuie? Finallie yet once againe, I humbly befeech your honour gratefully to accept this booke, and at your Leisure and convenient time to reade and perufe it. By revoluing whereof your honour I trust shall be delighted with the rare Histories and good examples therin contained, such as to my knowledge heretofore haue not bene published. And which with all my good wil and indevour I dutifully exhibite. Befeching
almightie God fauourably to defende and gourne your honour, prosperously to maintaine and keepe the fame, godlye to directe my right honourable Ladie in the steppes of perfect vertue, bountifully to make you both happye parentes of manie children: and after the expence of Nestor's yeares in this transtorie life mercifully to conducte you both to the vnspakeable ioyes of his kingdome.

Nere the Tower of London the first of Januarie, 1566.

By your L. most bounden

William Painter.
Authors out of whom these Nouelles be selected, or which be remembred in diuers places of the same.

GREEKE AND LATINE AUTHORS.


ITALIAN, FRENCH, AND ENGLISHE.


TO THE READER.

NOTHING in mine opinion can be more acceptable vnto thee (friendly Reader) then oft reading and perufing of varietie of Hystories, which as they be for diueritie of matter pleafaunt and plaufible, euен so for example and imitation good and commendable. The one doth reioyce the werie and tedious minde, many times involued with ordinarie cares, the other prescribeth a direcéte pathe to treade the tracte of this preuent life. Wherefore if in these newes or Nouelles here presented, there do appeare any thing worthy of regarde, giue thankes to the noble gentleman to whome this booke is dedicated, for whose fake onely, that paine (if any feme to bee) was wholly imploied. Inioy therefore with him this preuent booke, and curteoufly with frendly talke report the fame, for if otherwise thou do abuse it, the blame shal light on thee, and not on me, which only of good will did meane it first. But yet if blaming tongues and vnstayed heads, wil neded be busie, they shal sustaine the shame, for that they have not yet shewn forth any blamelesse dede to like effect, as this is ment of me, which when they do, no blame but prayse they can receiue. For prayse be they well worthy for to haue which in well doing do contende. No vertuous dede or zelous worke can want due prayse of the honett, though faulting fooles and youthly heads full ofte do chaunt the faultles checke, that Momus mouth did once finde out in Venus slipper. And yet from faultes I wyll not purge the fame, but whatfoeuer they feme to be, they be in number ne yet in subflaunce such, but that thy curteous dealing may fone amende them or forget them. Wherefore to giue the full advertisement of the whole collection of these nouels, vnderstande that fixe of them haue I seleeted out of Titus Livius, two out of Herodotus, certayn out of Aelianus, Xenophon, Aulus Gellius, Plutarche, and other like approued authors. Other Nouels haue I adioyned, choisen out of diuers Italian and Frenche wryters. Wherein I confesse my selfe not to be fo well trayned, peraduenture as the fine heads of suche traualiers would defire, and yet I truft suffi-
TO THE READER.

iciently to express the sense, of every of the same. Certaine
haue I culléd out of the Decamerone of Giouan Boccaccio,
wherin be conteined one hundred Nouelles, amonges whiche there
be some (in my judgement) that be worthy to be condemnd

to perpetual prifon, but of them such haue I redemed to the
libertie of our vulgar, as may be best liked, and better suffered.
Although the sixt part of the same hundredth may full well be
permitted. And as I my selfe haue already done many other of
thesame worke, yet for this present I haue thought good to publis
only tenne in number, the rest I haue referred to them that
be able with better stile to express the authour's eloquence, or
vntil I adioyne to this another tome, if none other in the meane
time do preuent me, which with all my heart I wishe and desire:
because the workes of Boccaccio for his stile, order of writing,
grauintie, and sententious discourse, is worthy of intire prouulga-
tion. Out of Bandello I haue selefted feuen, chosing rather to
follow Launay and Belleforct the French Translatours, than the
barren foile of his own vain, who being a Lombrard, doth frankly
confeffe himselfe to be no fine Florentine, or trimme Thoscane,
as eloquent and gentle Boccaccio was. Divers other also be
extracted out of other Italian and French authours. All which
(I truste) be both profitable and pleasaunt, and wil be liked of the
indifferent Reader. Profitable they be, in that they discloze what
glorie, honour, and preferment eche man attaineth by good deserv,
what felicitie, by honest attempts, what good succeffe, laudable
enterprifes do bring to the coragious, what happy joy and quiet
state godly loue doth affeete the imbracers of the same. Profitable
I say, in that they do reuеale the miseries of rapes and fleshly
actions, the ouerthrow of noble men and Princes by disordered
government, the tragical ends of them that unhappily do attempt
practisа vesious and horrible. Wilt thou learne how to behaue
thy selfe with modestie after thou hast attichued any victorious
conquest, and not to forget thy prosperous fortune amyd thy
glorious triumphe, by committing a facte vnworthy of thy valia-
tance: reade the first Nouel of the fortunate Romane Horatius?
Wilt thou vnderstande what dishoonour and infamous, desire of
libidinous lust doth bring, read the rape of Lucrece? Wilt thou
TO THE READER.

know what an vnkinde part it is vnnaturally to abuse the state of thine own countrie, reade Martius Coriolanus? Wilt thou learne what fruite is reaped of wicked luste, to difpoyle virgins and maydens of their greatest vertue see the hystorie of Appius Claudius and Sir Didaco the Spanish knight? Defirest thou to knowe howe closely thou oughst to keepe the secrets of honorable mariage, perufe the history of Candaules? Dost thou covet to be auertised what is true felicitie, reade of kyng Creftus and the wyse man Solon? Hath the Lady, Gentlewoman, or other of the feminine kinde a desire to beholde a mirrour of chafitie, let theim reade ouer the nouelles of the lady Panthea, of the Duchesse of Sauoy, of the Countesse of Salefburie, of Amadour and Florinda? Is the nobleman affected to vnderstand what happy end the vertue of loyaltie and fidelitie doth conduce, the Earle of Angiers may be to him a right good example? Will gentlemen learne howe to prosecute vertue, and to profligat from their minde, disordinate Loue, and affection, I referre theim to the Historie of Tancredi, and to Galgano of Siena? Is not the marchaunt contented with his goodes already gotten, but will needes go seeke some other trade, let him note and consider the daungers wherein the Aduenturer Landolpho was. Is he dispoed to sende his factor beyonde the seas, about his affaires, let him first bidde him to peruse Andreuccio, and then commaunde him to beware of Madame Floredelice? If the yeoman intendeth to be carefull of his bufinesse, meaning to reape that he hath sowen in due time, let him take hede howe he repose any truft in friendes and kin-men, leaft in haruest he be deceived, which Æfope's larke doth pretely note. If the artificer will not faithfully deale according to the trufe repofed in him, I would not wythe him to fuffer that whiche Bindo did, but aduifedly to reade the Historie, and truflelye to accomplifhe that he taketh in hande. If scornefull speache or flouting fport do flowe in ripe wittes and lauifhe tongues of woman-kinde let them beware they do not deale with the learned fort, leaft Maifter Alberto with phificke drougues, or Philenio with Sophift art do faigne their face, or otherwife offende them with the innocencie of their great Graundmother Eue when she was fomoned from Paradife ioye. If the poore mayden of bafe
birth be aduanced (by fortune's grace) to highe estate: let her
fixe in mynde the lady of Thurin. Finallye, for all states and
degrees, in these Nouelles be sette forth singuler documentes and
eamples, right commodious and profitable to them that will
vouchsafe to reade them.

Pleasaunt they be, for that they recreate, and refrehse weried
mindes, defatigated either with painefull trauaile, or with con-
tinuall care, occaoning them to fhunne and aaduit heauineffe of
minde, vaine fantafies, and idle cogitations. Pleafaunt fo well
abroade as at home, to auoyde the griefe of Winter's night and
length of Sommer's day, which the trauailers on foote may vfe for
a staye to eafe their weried bodye, and the iourneors on horfback
for a chariot or leffe painful meane of trauaile, inftead of a merie
companion to fhunne and aoit heauineffe of minde, vaine
fantafies, and idle cogitations.

Pleasaunt fo well abroade as at home, to auoyde the griefe of Winter's night and
length of Sommer's day, which the trauailers on foote may vfe for
a staye to eafe their weried bodye, and the iourneors on horfback
for a chariot or leffe painful meane of trauaile, inftead of a merie
companion to fhunne and aoit heauineffe of minde, vaine
fantafies, and idle cogitations.

Delectable they be (no doubt) for al forties of men, for the sad, the angry,
the cholericke, the pleafaunt, the whole and ficke, and for al other
with whatfoeuer passion rifting either by nature or vfe they be
affected.

The sad shal be discharged of heauineffe, the angrie and
cholericke purged, the pleafaunt maintaine in mirthe, the whole
furniflied with difporte, and the ficke appayfed of griefe. These
Nouelles then, being profitable and pleafaunt Histories, apt and
meet for all degrees, I truufe the indifferent Reader, of what
complexion, nature and dispoftion so euer he bee, will accepte
in good parte, although he perchaunce not fo fet foorth or deked
with eloquent file, as this age more braue in tongue then man-
ners dothe require, and do pray thee to receive them into thy
curteous hands, with no leffe good wil (though not with like re-
gard) then Alphonfus king of Arogon did Q. Curtius, out of
whome be some of thefe selectted, Who vpon a time beinge ficke
at Capua, receiuing at the handes of diuers Phifitians manye
medicines, in his greatef fit called for the historie of Q. Curtius,
in whom having great delight for his eloquent description of
geftes and factes of king Alexander, when he was restored to
health, sayd: Farewell Auicen, Adieu Hipocrates and other
Phifitians, welcome Curtius the restitutor and recoverie of my
health. Whereby he declared what pleafure he had in the exercife
and reading of Histories, not contempning for all that, the honorable science of Phisieke, which in extremities be holfomely vfed. What commoditie and pleasure histories doe yele to the diligent searchers and trauailers in the fame, Tullie in his fift booke De finibus honorum et malorum ad Brutam, doth declare who affirmeth that he is not ignorant, what pleasure and profit the reading of Histories doth import. And after hee hath described what difference of commoditie, is betweene fained fables, and liuely discourses of true histories, concludeth reading of histories to be a certain prouacation and allurement to move men to learne experience. If Tullie then, the Prince of Orators, doth affirme the profite and pleasure to be in perufing of histories, then fitlye haue I intituled this volume the Palace of Pleasure. For like as the outwarde shew of Princeffe Palaces be pleafaunt at the viewe and fight of eche man's eye, bedecked and garnished with fumptuous hanginges and costlye arras of splendent shewe, wherein be wrought and bet with golde and fylke of sondrye hewes, the dedes of noble states: Euen so in this our Palace here, there bee at large recorded the princely partes and glorious geftes of renowned wights reprefented with more liuely grace and gorgeous fight then Tapeftrie or Arras woorke, for that the one with deadlye shape doth shewe, the other with speaking voyce declare what in their time they were. Vpon whom do wayte (as meete it is) inferior perifones, eche one vouchfasing to tell what hee was, in the tranftorie trade of prefent life.

Wherefore accepte the fame in gratefull wife, and thinke vpon the mynde of him that did the fame, which fraughted is with no leffe plentie of good will, then the coafers of kyng Craefus were, with store of worldlye pelfe. Farewell.
The Palace of Pleasure.

THE FIRST NOUELL.

The Romaines and the Alhanes being at warres, for injuries mutually inferred, Metius Suffetius the Albane captaine devised a waye by a combate, to joynge bothe the cities in one. Victorie falling to the Romaines, the Romaine victor killed his fiSTER and was condemned to die. Afterwardes upon his fathers fiute he was delivered.

As the name of Palace doth carie a port of Maiestie as propre for princes and greatest estates, and as a Palace and Court by glorious viewe of loftie Towers, does set forth an outwarde showe of greate magnificence; and as that glittering sight without importeth a brauer pompe and state within, whose worthiefi furniture (besides the golden and curious ornamentes) resteth in the Princely train of courtly personages, most communely indowed with natures comliest benefites and rarest gifts incident to earthly Goddes, as well for the mindes qualities, as for the bodies acts. So, here at our first entrie, I thought to staye as it were at the gate of this palace, to discouer the incountrie of fiue renowned Gentleman, brethren of equal numbre, that, by content of either state, fought and vfed dedes of armes, not for sportes of Ladies, or for precious prizes, but for Countrie quarell and libertie of Natiue foyle. For the upper hand and vniting two most mighty Italian cities, that before bare eche other moaste mortall spite and deadlye foode, whiche in ende after the bloudie skirmishe of thofe choien brethren (for fasting of a bloudier battell) were conioyned in
A COMBATE BETWENE

vuited Monarchie. An historie though dreadfull to hearing as fitter for the Campe then Courte, yet, for the worthinesse of the quarrell, not to bee shunned from tenderest eares, for that it spreadeth forth a victorious paterne of valiant Chiualrie. And so do the rest succeeding, which speake of glorious chasitie, of invincible mindes, of bold Aduentures for Countries saufetie, of naturall pietie in parentes and children, and the othe of other honorable causes, fitte to be displayed to eche degree, and practised by such, whose functions, principally do, or ought to aspire semblable valiaunce, for defence of that whiche their Elders by bloudie swette haue honorably gotten, and most carefully kept. But not by tedious proeme to holde the desirous minde from what is promised, thus it beginneth.

Numa Pompilius the second king of the Romaines being dead, Tullus Hostilius succeded, which was a lustie and couragious younge Gentleman: And as Numa was giuen to peace, so was he to warres and valiance. It chaunced in his time that certaine peafauntes of the Romaine dition, and the like of the Albanes, were foraging and driving of booties the one from the other. At that time raigned in Alba one C. Cluilius, from whence and from Rome, Ambassadors were sent to redemaunde the thinges stollen. Tullus commaunded his people that they should deliuer nothing till commaundement were giuen in that behalfe: for than he knewe right well that the Alban king would not restore at all, and therefore might vpon iust cause, proclaime warres. Hee receiued the Alban Ambassadors in verie courtesous manner, and they as courteously celebrated his honourable and fumptuous intertaignement. Amitie proceeded on either parties, till the Romanes began to demaunde the first restitution which the Albanes denied, and summoned warres to bee inferred vpon them within thirtie daies after. Whereupon the Ambassadors craued licence of Tullus to speake, which being graunted, they first purged themselues by ignorance, that they knewe no harme or injurie done to the Romaines, adding further, that if any thing were done that should not please Tullus, it was against their willes, hoping he would remember that they
were but Ambassadours, subieèt to the commandement of their Prince. Their coming was to demand the restitution, without whiche, they were straightlye charged to proclayme defiance. Whereunto Tullus aunswered: "Tell your maister, that the king of the Romaines doth call the Gods to witness, whether of them first maketh the quarle, to thintent all men may expect the revenge of those warres." Which answer the Alban Ambassadours returned to their maister. Great provision for the warres was made on both partes, much like to a ciuile contention, almost betwene the father and the fonne, for the citie of Lauinium was builded by the Troians, and Alba by the Lauvinians, of whose focke the Romaines take their beginning. The Albanes seeing that they were defied of the Romaines, began first to enter in armes, and with a maine power perced the land of the Romaines, and encamped within five miles of the citie, enviorning their campe with a trench, which afterwardes was called Fossa Cluilia, of their capitaine, wherein Cluilius the king died. Then the Albanes appointed one Metius Suffetius, to be their Dictator. Tullus understanding the death of their Prince, with great expedition marched into the countrie about Alba, pfiang by the Albanes campe in the night which by the watche and scoutes was fkiere. Then he retired to lodge as nere the enemie as hee could, sending an Ambassadour before, to require Tullus that he would come to parle before they fought, and then he had a thing to faye, no leffe profitable to the Romaines, then to the Albanes. Tullus not contempning that condition, agreed. Whereupon both did put them selves in readines, and before they ioyned, both the captains with certain of their chiefe officers, came forth to talke, where Metius sayde these wordes: "The mutuall injuries that hath been done, and the withholding and keping of thinges caried away, contrary to the truce, and that our king Cluilius, is the authour and beginner of these warres, I do heare and assuredly understand for a trothe. And I do not doubt, Tullus, but thou also doest conceive the fame, to be the only occasion of this hostilitie. Notwithstanding, if I may speake rather the truthe, then utter any gloosing wordes by waye of flatterie, the ambicius desire of both the Empires, doth moiste of all stimulate and provoketh both the

VOL. I.
cities, being of one affinitie, and neighbours, to vie this force of Armes. But whether this my conjecture bee righte or wrong, they oughte to consider, whiche firste began the warres. The Albanes haue created me their Captaine of this enterpryse. I come to geue aduertisement to thee, O Tullus, of this one thing. Which is, that the Thufcans being a great nation, and of power right famous, doth innirone vs both rounde about, and the nerer they bee vnto you, the more knowledge you haue of them. They be mightie vpon lande, and of great power vpon Sea. Call to thy remembraunce and consider, that when thou geueft the figne and watch worde of the battell, our twoo armyes shall bee but a ridiculous fpeftacle to them. So sone as they doe perceiue vs twoo to bee spent, and weried with fighting, they will bothe aflayle the vanquished, and him alfo that doeth ouercome. Wherefore if the Goddes do fauour eyther of vs, let vs not shewe our selues to bee wearie of our libertie and franchife that is certaine, and hazard the dice to incurre perpetuall seruitude and bondage. Therfore let vs deuife some other waye, wherby the one of vs may gouerne the other without effufion of eithers bloud.

This condition nothing displeased Tullus, although in courage, and hope of victorie, he was more fierce and bolder then the other. And being in consultation about the purpose, fortune miniftred an apt occasion to them both: for in either campe there were thre brethren, of age and valiance semblable. The brethren that were in the Romaine campe were called Horatij, the other Curiatij. Whereupon a combate was thought meete betwene these sixe perfones. After the Romaines had vsed their solemne maners of confecrating the truces, and other rites concerning the fame, either partes repaired to the combate. Both the armyes flode in readines before their campes, rather voyde of prefent perill then of care: for the state of either of their Empires, confisted in the valiance and fortune of a fewe. Wherfore theire mindes were wonderfullye bent and incensd vpon that vnpleafant fight. The figne of the combate was giuen. The thre yonge men of either fide do ioigne with furious and cruel onfet, representeing the courages of two battelles of puiffaunt armyes. For the losse confifted in neither thofe three, but the publique gouernement or
common thraldome of both the cities, and that was the future fortune, whiche they did trie and prove. So fone as the clashing armoure did sound at their first in countrie, and their glittering swordes did shine, an incredible horror and feare perced the beholders, and hope inclining to either partes, their voyce and myndes were whist and silent. But after they were closed together, not onely the mowing of their bodies, and doubtfull welding and handling of their weapons, but bloudye woundes appeared, two of the Romaines falling downe stark dead one vpon an other: But before the three Albanes were fore hurt. Whereat the Albane hofte shouted for ioye. The Romaine Legions were voyde of hope, amazed to see but one remayne against three: It chaunced that hee that liued whyche as hee was but one alone (an vnmeete matche for the rest) fo he was fierce, and thought himselfe good enough for them all. Therefore to separate their fight, he flede backe, meaning thereby to geue euer of them their welcome as they followed. When he was retired a good space from the place wher they fought, lokynge backe, he sawe them followe some distance one from an other, and as one of them approched, he let driue at him with great violence. And whiles the Albane hofte cried out vpon the Curiatij, to helpe their brother, Horatius had killed his enemie, and demaunded for the seconde battaile. Then the Romaines incouraged their champion with acclamations and shoutes, as fearefull men be wont to do vpon the sodaine, and Horatius fpedeth himselfe to the fight. And before the other could ouertake him, which was not farre off, hee had killed an other of the Curiatij. Nowe were they equally matched one to one, but in hope and strengthe vnlike. For the one was free of wounde or hurte: cruell and fierce by reafon of double victorie, the other faint for losse of bloud, and ware of running, and who with panting breath, discomfited for his brethrens slaughter, flaine before him, is now obieceted to fight with his victorious enemy. A match altogether vnequall. Horatius rejoyfing sayd, two of thy brethren I haue dispatched, the thirde, the caufe of this battaile, I will take in hand: that the Romanes maye bee lorde of the Albanes. Curiatius not able to sustaine his blowe, fell downe, and lying vpon his backe, he thrust him into the throte with his sworde,
whiche done he dispoyled him of his armure. Then the Romaines in great triumpe and rejoyse intertaigned Horatius, and their ioye was the greater, for that the feare of their overthowe was the nearer. This combate being ended, the Albanes became subiecte to the Romaines, and before Metius departed, he asked Tullus if hee would commaunde him any further service. Who willed him to kepe the younge fouldiours still in intertaigned Horatius, and their ioye was the greater, for that the feare of their ouerthrowe was the nearer. This coinbate being ended, the Albanes became subiedle to the Romaines, and before Metius departed, he asked Tullus if hee would commaunde him any further service. Who willed him to kepe the younge fouldiours still in intertaigned, for that hee woulde require their aide against the Veientes. The armie dis-solued, Horatius like a Conquerour marched home to Rome, the three spoyles of his enemies being borne before hym.

The said Horatius had a sister, which was espoused to one of the Curiatij that were slaine, who meeting her brother in the triumpe, at one of the gates called Capena, and knowing the coate armure of her paramour, borne vpon her brothers shoulers, which she had wrought and made with her owne handes: She tore and rent the heare of her heade, and most piteouflye bewayled the death of her beloved. Her brother being in the pride of his victorie taking the lamentation of his sister, in disdainful part, drew oute his sword, and thrufte her through speaking these reprochfull wordes: "Auaunt with thy vnreafonable loue, gette thee to thy spouse. Haft thou forgotten the deathe of thy two brethren that be slaine, the prosperous succeffe of thy victorious brother, and chieflye the happye deliueraunce of thy countrie: Let that Romaine woman whatsoeuer she be, take like rewarde, that shall bewaile the death of the enemie." Which horrible facte seemed most cruell to the fathers and people. For which offence he was brought before the kinqe, whom he deliuered to be judged according to the lawe. The law condemned him, then he appealed to the people. In which appeale P. Horatius his father spake these wordes: "My daughter is slaine, not without iuift defert, which if it were not so, I would haue sued for condigne punishmente, to be executed vpon my sonne, according to the naturall pietie of a father: Wherfore I befeech you do not suffer me, whom you haue seene in time past, beautified with a noble race and progenie of children, nowe to be ytterlye destitute and voyde of all together."

Then hee embrafed his sonne amonges them all, and shewed the
spoiles of the Curatiens, sayinge: "Can you abide to see this noble Champion (O ye Romaines) whom lately ye behelde to go in order of triumpe in victorious maner, to lye nowe bounde under the gibet, expecting for tormentes of death: Which cruell and deformed fight, the Albanes eyes can not well be able to beholde, goe to then thou hangman, and binde the handes of him, who hath atchieued to the Romaine people a glorious Empyre: Go, I faye, and couer the face of him that hath deliuered this citie out of thraldome and bondage. Hang him vpon some vnhappie tree, and scourge him in some place within the Citie, either amongst these our triumphes, where the spoiles of our enemies do remaine, or els without the walles, amongst the graues of the vanquished. Whether can yee deuife to carrie him, but that his honourable and worthy acts, shal reueng the villanie of his cruel death." The people hearing the lamentable talke of his father, and feinge in him an uvmoueable minde, able to sustaine al aduerfity, acquited him rather through the admiration of his vertue and valianc, then by iustice and equity of his caufe. Such was the straite order of iustice amongst the Romanes, who although this yonge gentleman had vindicated his countrie from seruitude and bondage (a noble memorye of perfeâe manhode) yet by reason of the murder done vppon his owne sister, were very straite and slacke to pardon: because they would not incouraenge the pottertie to like inconuenience, nor provoke wel doers in their glorye and triumpe, to perpetrate thinges vnlawfull.
THE SECOND NOUELL.

Sextus Tarquinius ransacked Lucrece. And she bewayling the losse of her chastitie, killed her selfe.

Great preparation was made by the Romaines, against a people called Rutuli, who had a city named Ardea, excelling in wealth and riches which was the cause that the Romaine king, being exhausted and quite void of money, by reason of his sumptuous buildinges, made warres upon that country. In the time of the siege of that city the young Romaine gentlemen banqueted one another, amongst whom there was one called Collatinus Tarquinius, the son of Egerius. And by chance they entred into communication of their wives, every one praying his several spouse. At length the talk began to grow hot, whereupon Collatinus said, that words were vain. For within few hours it might be tried, how much his wife Lucretia did exceed the rest, wherefore (quoth he) if there be any liveliness in you, let us take our horse, to prove which of our wives doth surmount. Wherupon they rode to Rome in post. At their coming they found the king's daughters, sporting themselves with fondrye pastimes: From thence they went to the house of Collatinus, where they found Lucrece, not as the other before named, spending time in idleness, but late in the night occupied and busy amongst her maydes in the middle of her house spinning of wool. The victory and prayse wherof was given to Lucretia, who when she saw her husband, gentle and lovingly entertained him, and courteously bade the Tarquinians welcome. Immediately Sextus Tarquinius the son of Tarquinius Superbus, (that time the Romaine king) was incensed with a libidinous desire, to corrupt and deflower Lucrece. When the young gentlemen had bestowed that night pleasantly with their wives, they returned to the Campe. Not long after Sextus Tarquinius with one man returned to Collatia unknown to Collatinus, and ignorant to Lucrece and the rest of her household, for what purpose he came. Who being well entertayned, after supper was conueighed to his chamber. Tarquinius burn-
THE RAPE OF LUCRECE.

inge with the loue of Lucrece, after he perceiued the housholde
to be at reste, and all thinges in quiet, with his naked s worde in
his hande, wente to Lucrece being a sleepe, and keeping her downe
with his lefte hande, saide: "Holde thy peace Lucrece, I am
Sextus Tarquinius, my s worde is in my hand, if thou cri, I will
kill thee." / The gentlewoman sore afayed, being newly awaked
oute of her sleepe, and seing imminent death, could not tell what to
do. Then Tarquinius confessed his loue, and began to intreate
her, and therewithall vfed sundry minacing wordes, by all meanes
attempting to make her quiet: when he saw her obstinate, and
that she would not yelde to his request, notwithstanding his cruell
thretes, he added shameful and villanous speach, saying: That he
would kill her, and when she was slaine, he would also kill his
flaue, and place him by her, that it might be reported how she
was slaine, being taken in adulterie. She vanquished with his ter-
rible and infamous thretes, his fleshlye and licentious enterprice,
ouercame the puriti of her chast and honest hart, which done
he departed. Then Lucrece sent a post to Rome to her father,
and an other to Ardea to her hufbande, requiringe them that they
would make speede to come vnto her, with certaine of their truflie
frendes, for that a cruell facte was chaunced. Then Sp. Lucretius
with P. Valerius the sonne of Volefius, and Collatinus with L.
Iunius Brutus, made haft to Lucrece: where they founde her
fitting, very penfife and sadde, in her chamber. So fone as she
faue them she began pitionfully to wepe. Then her hufband
asked her, whether all thinges were well, vnto whom she sayde
these wordes.

"No dere hufbande, for what can be well or fafe vnto a woman,
when she hath loust her chafite? Alas Collatine, the steppes of
an other man, be now fixed in thy bed. But it is my bodye
onlye that is violated, my minde God knoweth is giltes, whereof
my death shalbe witnesse. But if you be men give me your
handes and trouth, that the adulterer may not escape vreueenged.
It is Sextus Tarquinius whoe being an enemie, in steede of a
frende, the other night came vnto me, armed with his s worde
in his hand, and by violence caried away from me (the Goddes
know) a wofull ioy." Then every one of them gave her their
faith, and comforted the penfife and languishing lady, imputing
the offence to the author and doer of the fame, affirming that
her bodye was polluted, and not her minde, and where consent
was not, there the crime was absente. Whereunto shee added:
"I praye you consider with your felues, what punishmente is due
for the malefaictour. As for my part, though I cleare my selfe of
the offence, my body I shall feele the punishment: for no vnchaft
or ill woman, (shall hereafter impute no distinction to Lucrece.)"
Then shee drew out a knife, which she had hidden secretely, vnder
her kirtle, and stabbed her selfe to the harte. Which done, she
fell downe grovelinge vppon her wound and died. Whereupon
her father and husband made great lamentation, and as they were
bewayling the death of Lucrece, Brutus plucked the knife oute of
the wound, which gushed out with abundance of bloude, and
holding it vp said: "I sweare by the chaft bloud of this body here
dead, and I take you the immortall Gods to witnes, that I will
drive and extirpate oute of this Citie, both L. Tarquinius Superbus,
and his wicked wife, with all the race of his children and progenie,
so that none of them, ne yet any others shall raigne anye longer
in Rome." Then hee delivered the knife to Collatinus. Lucretius
and Valerius, who marueyled at the strangenesse of his words:
and from whence he shoule conceive that determination. They
all sware that othe. And followed Brutus, as their captaime, in
his conceiued purpose. The body of Lucrece was brought into
the market place, where the people wondred at the vilenesse of
that facte, every man complaying vpon the mischiefe of that
facinorous rape, committed by Tarquinius. Whervpon Brutus
perfwaded the Romanaynes, that they shoule cease from teares and
other childishe lamentacions, and to take weapons in their handes,
to shew themselves like men.

Then the lustieft and moft desperate persons within the citie,
made themselves prest and readie, to attempete any enterpris: and
after a garrifon was placed and bestowed at Collatia, diligent
watche and ward was kept at the gates of the Citie, to the intent
the kinge shoule haue no aduertifement of that flurre. The rest
of the souldiours followed Brutus to Rome.

When he was come thither, the armed multitude did beate a
marvelous fear throughout the whole City: but yet because they saw the chiefest personages goe before, they thought that the same enterprize was taken in vaine. Wherefore the people out of all places of the citie, ranne into the market place. Where Brutus complained of the abominable Rape of Lucrece, committed by Sextus Tarquinius. And thereunto he added the pride and insolent behauiour of the king, the miserie and drudgerie of the people, and howe they, which in time past were victours and Conquerours, were made of men of warre, Artificers, and Labourers. He remembred alfo the infamous murder of Servius Tullius their late king. These and such like he called to the peoples remembrance, whereby they abrogated and deposed Tarquinius, banishing him, his wife, and children. Then he leuied an armie of chofen and piked men, and marched to the Campe at Ardea, committing the gouvernemente of the Citie to Lucretius, who before was by the king appointed Lieutenant. Tullia in the time of this hurie burlie, fledde from her house, all the people cursing and crying vengeance upon her. Newes brought into the campe of these euentes, the king with great feare returned to Rome, to represse those tumultes, and Brutus hearinge of his approche, marched another waye, because hee woulde not meete him. When Tarquinius was come to Rome, the gates were shutte against him, and he himselfe commanded to auoide into exile. The campe receiued Brutus with great joye and triumphe, for that he had deliuered the citie of such a tyraunte. Then Tarquinius with his children fledde to Cære, a Citie of the Hetrurians. And as Sextus Tarquinius was going, he was slaine by those that premeditated reuengemente, of olde murder and injuries by him done to their predeceſsours. This

L. Tarquinius Superbus raigned xxv yeares. The raigne of the kinges from the first foundation of the citie continued CCxliii. yeares. After which gouvernemente two Consuls were appointed, for the order and admi- nification of the Citie. And for that yeare L. Iu- nius Brutus, and L. Tarquinius, Col- latinus.
THE THIRD NOUELL.

The siege of Rome by Porfenna, and the valiant deliverie thereof by Mutius Scæwola, with his stout aunswere unto the kinge.

When P. Valerius and T. Lucretius were created Consuls, Porfenna kinge of Hetruria, vpon the instigation of the banished Tarquinius, came before the citie with a huge armie. The brute wherof did wonderfully appall the Senate: for the like occasion of terror, never before that time chaunced to the Romaines, who did not onely feare their enemies, but also their owne subiects, suspecting left they should be forced to retaine the kinges againe. All which afterwards, were through the wisedome and discretion of the fathers quietely appeafted, and the citie reduced to such vnitie and courage, as all sorts of people despised the name of king. When the enemies were approched, the rurall people abandoning their colonies, fled for rescue into the citie. The citie was diuided into garrisons: some kept the walles, and some the waye ouer Tiber, which was thought very safe and able to be defended. Although the wodden bridge made ouer the Riuere, had almost been an open way for the enemies entrie, whereof Horacius Cocles, as fortune ferued that day, had the charge. Who so manfully behaued himselfe, as after he had broken vp and burned the bridge, and done other notable exploits, he defended that passage with such valiance, that the defence therof seemed miraculous, to the great astonishment of the enemies. In fine Porfenna seing that he coulde little preuaile in the assault, returned to the Campe, determining nererthelesse to continue his siege. At which time one Caius Mutius, a yonge gentleman of Rome, purposed to adventure some notable enterprife: sayng to the Senators these words: "I determine to passe the Riuere, and enter if I can, into the campe of the enemies, not to fetch spoile, or to revenge mutuall iniuries, but to hazard greater matters, if the Gods be affistant vnto me." The senate understanding the effect of his indeuour, allowed his deuise. And then hauinge a sword vnder his garment, went forth. When
he was come into the throng, he conueighed himselfe as nere the kinges pavilion as he could. It chaunce that he was paying wages that day to his souldiours, by whom his Secretarie did fit in fuch apparell, almost as the king himselfe did weare. Mutius being afaide to demaunde which of them was the king, left he shoud bewray himselfe, sodainly killed the Secretarie in steede of the king, and as he was making waye with his bloudie fworde to escape, he was apprehended and brouhte before the king, and with maruailous ftrouthe and audacitie, spake these wordes: "I am a citizen of Rome, and my name is Mutius, and being an enemy, I woulde faine haue killed mine enemie. For which attempt I esteeme no more to die, then I cared to commit the murder. It is naturally giuen to the Romaines, both valiantly to do and stoutly to suffer. And not I alone haue confirp'd thy death, but a greate number of vs, haue promis'd the like, and hope to profecute fsemblable prayse and glorie: wherfore if this beginninge do not please thee, make thy selfe ready ev'rye houre to expeft like perill, and to fight for thy selfe. And make accompt, that every day eu'n at the dore of thine owne lodging, thy enemie armed doth waite for thee: we alone yong gentlemens of the Citie do stand at defiance, and pronounce vpon thee this kinde of bataille. Feare no armes or other hostilitie, for with thee alone, and with ev'rye one of vs these warres shalbe tryed." The king afontied with that bold and desperate enterprife, fell into a great rage and furie, commaundinge Mutius prentlye to be confumed with fyre, vnleffe he would out of hand tell him the order of the purpofed and deuifed treafon. "Behold O king (quoth hee) how little they care for theyr bodies, that do aspire and feake for fame and glorie." And then he thrust his right hand into the fire, and rofted the fame in the flame, like one that had been out of his wits. The king amazed wyth the straungnes of the facft, stepped downe from the feate, and caufed him to be taken from the fire, faying: "Away, frend (quoth the king) thou haft killed thy selfe, and aduentured hostilitie vppon thy selfe rather then againft mee. Surely I would thincke mine estate happie, if like valiaunce were to be found wythin the boundes of my countrye. Wherfore by law of Armes I fet the at libertie to go whither thou
lift." Whereunto Mutius for acquiting that desert, answered: "For as much as thou hast thus honourably dealt with me, I will for recompence of this benefit, saye thus muche vnto thee, whych by threates thou shouldest never have gotten at my handes. Three hundred of vs that be yonge noble men of Rome, haue conferred thy death, euyn by the like attempt. It was my lot to come first, the reste when fortune shall giue opportunitie, euerye one in his tourne will giue the aduenture." Whereupon he was dismissed, and afterwards was called Scaeuola, for the losse of his right hande. Then peace was offered to the Romaynes, who vpon conditions that the enemies garrisons should be withdrawn from Ianiculum, and that the country wonne of the Veientines, should be restored againe, gave hostages. Amonges whom there was a gentlewoman called Cloelia deliuered into the handes of the Hetrurians, who deceyuinge her keepers, conueighed herselue and the other pledges from their enemies, and swimming ouer the riuer of Tiber, arrived at Rome in safetye, which being redemounded by Porfenna, were sent backe againe. The king driuen into a wonderfull admiration for the desperate and manly enterprises, done by the Romaine Nation, re-tourned the maiden home againe to Rome. In whose honour the Romaines erected an Image on horse backe, placed at the vpper ende of the streete called Sacra via. And so peace was concluded betweene Porfenna and the Ro-mayne.
MARTIUS CORIOLANUS.

THE FOURTH NOUELL.

Martius Coriolanus goinge aboute to represse the common people of Rome with dearth of Corne was banished. For reuengement whereof he persuaded Accius Tullius king of the Volscians, to make warres upon the Romaynes, and he himselfe in their ayde, came in his owne person. The Citie brought to greate miserye, the fathers deuised meanes to deliuer the fame, and sent unto the Volscian campe, the mother, the wife and children of Coriolanus. Upon whose complaints Coriolanus with drewe the Volscians, and the citie was reduced to quietnes.

In the yeare that Titus Geganius and Publius Minutius were Confuls, when all thinges were quiet abrode, and diffention at home appeaed, an other great mischiefe invaded the citie. Firste a dearth of victuals, for that the land was vntilled, by the peoples departure, then a famine, such as chaunceth to the besieged: which had brought a great destruction of people, had not the Confuls forseen the same, by prouision in forren places. They sent pursuers into Scicilia: but the malice of the cities adioyning, stayed the prouision that was made a farre of. The Corne provided at Cumas was stayed for the goodes of Tarquinius by Aristodemus the tyrant, that was his heire. The next yere followinge, a great maffe of Corne was transported oute of Sicile, in the time of the Confuls, M. Minutius and A. Sempronius. Then the Senate consulted, vpon the distribution of the same vnto the people. Divers thought that the time was then come, to bridle and suppress the people, that thereby they mighte the rather recover those priuileges, which were extorted from the fathers. Amonges whom Martius Coriolanus a yonge gentleman was the chiefest, who being an enemie to the Tribune authoritie, saide these woords. "If the people will haue victuals and corne at that price, wheret it was affised and rated in time past, then it is meete and necessarie, that they render to the fathers, their auncient authortie and priulige: for to what purpose be the plebeian Magiftrates
ordained? For what consideration shall I suffer my selfe to be
subjugate vnder the authoritie of Sicinius, as though I were con-
uerfaunte amongst theeues? Shal I abide these injuries any longer
to continue, then is necessarie? I that could not suffer Tarqui-
nius the king, shal I be pacient with Sicinius? Let Sicinius
depart if he will, let him draw the people after him: the way
yet is open to the sacred hill, and to the other mountaines.
Let them rob vs of our corne which they toke away from our
owne land, as they did three yeares past, let them enjoy the
viectuals which in their furie they did gather. I dare be bold
to saye thus much, that being warned and tamed, by this pre-
sent penurie, they had rather plow and til the land, then they
would suffer the same to be vncultured, by withdrawing them-
selues to armure. It is not so easie to be spoken, as I thinke
it may with facilitie be brought to passe, that vpon conditions
the prices of viectuals should be abated, the fathers might remove
the aueritie of the Tribunes and diuangel all those lawes, which
against their wills were ratified and confirmed. This sentence
seemed cruel to the fathers, and almost had fet the people toge-
ther by the eares, whoe would haue torne him in peeces, had not
the Tribunes appointed a day for his appearance. Wherupon
their furie for that time was appeased, Coriolanus feinge the
peoples rage to encreafe, and consideringe that they shoule be his
Judge, when the day of his apparance was come, he abfented him-
selue, and therfore was condemmed. Then he fled to the Volscians,
of whom he was gently interteigned: and lodged in the house of
Accius Tullius, the chiefe of that citie, and a deadly enemie to the
Romaynes. Vpon daily conference and consultation had betwene
them, they consulted by what sleight or pollicie, they might com-
ence a quarrell against the Romaines. And because they doubted,
that the Volscians would not easely be perfwaded thereunto, be-
ing so oft vanquished and ill intreated, they excogitated some
other newe occasion. In the mean time T. Latinius one of the
plebeian forte, perceyuing that the Romaynes went about to infti-
tute great pastimes, conceiued a dreame, wherein hee sawe Jup-
piter to speake vnto him, and said that he liked not the towards
of those games, and in case the same were not celebrated, with
great royaltie and magnificens, they would ingender perill to the citie, which dreame he declared to the Confuls. Then the Senate gaue order, that the same shoule be addressed with great pompe and triumphe: whereunto through th'instigacion of Accius, a great number of the Volfcians resorted. But before the plaiies begunne, Tullius according to the compact agreed vpon, betwene him and Coriolanus, secretely repaired to the Confuls, and taking them a fyde, declared that he had to say vnto them a matter touching the publique wealth of their citie, in these words. "I am forced against my will to signifie vnto you a matter, that toucheth the condition of mine owne subiects and countrie men. I come not to accuse them, as thoughe they had already admitted any thinge, but I come to give you a premonition, lest they should perpetrate some occaion, contrary to the order of your Citie. The disposition of my countrie men, is more inconstant then I would wish: which we haue felt, to our great losse and decaie. The cause of our security at this precent, is rather suffered by your pacience, then by our desert. Here be at this instant a great multitude of Volfcians: Here be games prepared, and the citie throughlye bent to behold them. I do remember what was done vpon like occaion in this citie by the Romain youth: I tremble to thincke, what may be rashly attempted, wherfore I thought good both for your owne sakes and for auoyding of mutual displeasure, to foretel you of these things. And for mine owne part I purpose immediatlye to returne home, because I wil auoide the daunger and peril, that maye chance by my preence." When he had spoken those words, he departed. The Confuls immediatly recompted the request of Accius to the Senate: who more esteming the personage, from whence the same did procede, then the matter that was spoken, determined to prouide a remedie for the same, and immediatlye caused the Volfcians to auoide the citie, sending officers about, to command them to depart that night: vpon which sodain edict, at the first they began to marueile. And afterwards they conceiued great griefe and offence, for that their vnneighbourlye entertainment. and as they were pasing out of the citie in a long traine, Tullius being vpon the top of the hill called Ferrentine, to waite for the people, as they passed by, called vnto him the chiefe and
principal parfonages, to prouoke them to take that aduauntage, and then assembled the multitude in the vallee, hard by the high way, to whom he pronounced these words, "Forgetting all injuries and displeasures past, done by the Romaine people against the Volscians, how can you abide the shame you suffer this daye, wherein to oure great reproch, they begin to owen these words forth their plaies. Do not you beleue, that even to day, they triumph ouer you? Is not your departure (thyncke ye) ridiculous to all the Romaines, to strangers, and other cities adioyning? Be not your wifes and children (trow ye) now paffing homewards, laughed to foorne? What thyncke ye your felues to be, which were warned to depart, at the found of the trumpet? What (suppofe ye) wil all they thinke, which do meeete this multitude retiring homewards, to their great reproch and shame? Truly excepte there be some fecret occasion, whereby we shoule be suspected to violate the plaies or commit fome other crime, and fo forced to relinquifh the company and fellowship of the honeft, I know not what shoule be the caufe of this repulfe? Were we lyuing, when we made fuch feftination to depart? If it may be called a departure, and not a running away, or shamefull retire. I perceiue ye did not accompte this to be a citie of our enemies, wher I thinke if ye had taried but one day longer, ye had all beene flaine. They haue denounced warres vpon you, which if you be men of courage, shall redounde to the vtter destrucution of them, which firit gaue the defaunce." The Volscians perceyuing themselues greatly derided, for confiderations before remembred, determined by common accord, to inferre warres vpon the Romaines, vnder the conduccion of Aætius Tullius, and Coriolanus. After they had recovered diuers of the Romaine cities, they proceded further, and in fondrie places spoiled and destroyed the fame, encamping themselues five miles from Rome, besides the trenches called Fosfias Cluillias. In the meane time contention rofe betwene the people and the fathers, howbeit the feare of forren partes, linked their mindes together, in the bands of concord. The Confuls and fathers repofed their whole confidence in battel, which the common people in no wife could abide. Wherfore they were constrained to assemble the Senate, in which confult was determined, that Am-
bassadours should be sent to Coriolanus to demaund peace: who returned them againe with a froward anfwere, to this effect: that firft they should restore to the Volfcians their countrie, which they had conquered, and that done, he willed them to feke for peace. Yet they sent againe Ambassadours, but in no wife they were suffered to come into their campe. Then the priestes cladde in their ornamentes, and other diuine furniture, were fent humblye to make peticion for peace: And yet they coulde not perfwade them. Then the Romaine Dames repayred to Veturia the mother of Coriolanus, and to his wyfe Volumnia. But whether the fame was done by common confent, or by the aduise of the feminine kind, it is vncertaine. It was appointed that Veturia, being an auncient gentlewoman, and mother of Coriolanus and Volumnia his wife, with her two yonge children, should repaire to the campe, to the intent that they by their pitiful lamentacion, might defende the citie, which otherwise by force, was not able to be kept. At their arriuall, Veturia was knowen by one of her fonnes familier frends, standing betwene her daughter in law, and her two neuries, who caried word immediatlye to Coriolanus, how his mother, his wife and children, were come into the Campe to speake with him. Coriolanus hearing him say fo, declend from his feate, like one not wel in his wits, and went forth to embrace his mother. The old gentlewoman from supplications, fell into a great rage, speakinge these woordes. "Abide a while before I do receiue thy embracementes, let me knowe whether I am comen to mine enemie, or to my fonne, or whether I am a prifoner in thy Campe, or thy mother. Alacke how long haue I prolonged these auncient yeares, and hoare heares most vn happie, that nowe firft I do behold thee an exile, and then view thee mine enemie. Canft thou finde in thy harte, to depopulate and deftroy this thy countrie, wherein thou waft begotten and brought vp? Could not thy rage and furie be appeased, when thou diddest firft put foote into the limites of this thy countrie? Did not natural zeale pearce thy cruel hart, when thou diddest firft caft thine eyes upon this citie? Is not the house of thy mother, and her domestical Goddes, conteynd within the walles of yonder Citie? Do not thy sorowful mother, thy deare wife and children, inhabite within the compaff of yonder citie?"
(O I, cursed creature!) if I had neuer had childe, Rome had not been now affailed. If I had neuer brought forth a fonne, I shoulde haue laied mine old bones and ended my life in a free countrie. But I coulde neuer haue susteined, or suffred more miserie, then is nowe fallen vnto mee, nor neuer more dishonour, then to beholde thee in pitifull plight, a traytour to thy native foile. And as I am the moft wretched wight of all mothers, so I truft I shal not long continue in that state. If thou procede in this enterprife, either sodaine death, or perpetuall shame bee thy reward." When his mother had ended these woordes, the whole traine of gentlewo- men, brake into pitifull teares: bitterly bewayling the state of their Countrie, whiche at lengthe did mitigate the flomacke of Corriolanus. And when he had imbraced his wife and children, hee dismifed them. Then hee withdrew the Volscian campe from the citie, and out of the Romaine Prouince. Upon the displeasure of whiche fafte, he died. It is sayd that when he was an old man, hee vfed many times to speake and utter this sentence. "That verie miserable it is, for an olde man to live in banishment." The Romans dis-daigned not to attribute to women, their due prayse: for in memorie of this de-lieverie of their Countrie, they erected a Temple, Fortune to Womens Muliebri, to Womens Fortune.
Appius Claudius, one of the Decemuiiri of Rome, goeth about to ravish Virginia a yonge mayden, which indevour of Appius, when her father Virginius underflode being then in the warres, hee repaired home to rescue his daughter. One that was betrouthed unto her, clamed her, whereupon rose great contention. In the ende her owne father, to save the shame of his flocke, killed her with a Bocher's knife, and went into the Forum, crying vengeance upon Appius. Then after much contention and rebellion, the Decemuiiri were deposed.

Spurius Posthumius Albus, Aulus Manlius, and P. Sulpitius Camerinus, were sent Ambassadors to Athenes, and commandaed to wryte out the noble Lawes of Solon, and to learne the Institutions, orders, and Lawes of other Greece cities. Upon whose retourne, the Tribunes were verie instant that at length lawes might be enacted and confirmed. And for that purpose certayne officers were appointed, called Decemuiiri: with foueraigne authoritie and power to reduce the same into wryting, whiche were thought meete and profitable for the common wealth. The principall and chief of which number was Appius Claudius, who committed no leffe filthy faete, then was done by Tarquinius, for the rape of Lucrece. The sayde Appius conceived a libidinous desire, to ravish a yong virgine, the daughter of one Lucius Virginius, then a captain in the warres at Algidum, a man of honest and sober life, whose wife was also of right good behaviour, and their children accordingly brought vp, and instructed. They had betrouthd their daughter, to one L. Icilius of the order of the Tribunes, a man of great stoutneffe and tried valiance in the cause of the people. This yong maide being of excellent beautie, Appius at the first began to woe by giftes and faire promises: but when he sawe that she was impregnable, he deniéd by wicked and cruell pollicie, to obtenie her, committing the charge of that enterpris to one of his frendes, called Marcus Claudius, who went about to
proue and maintaine, that the maide was his bondwoman, and in no wise would give libertie to her friendes to haue time to answere the proceffe made in that behalfe, thinking by that meanes, in the absence of her father, hee might at his pleasure enioye her. As the virgine was going to schole in the Forum, the said Claudius, the minister of mifchief, layd handes vpon her, claimed her to be his bondwoman, for that she was borne of a seruile woman, and commandd her to folow him. The mayde being afraine was amazed, and the Nursé that wayted vpon her, cried out. Whereupon the people ran out of their doores, to knowe the cause of the flurre. Claudius seing the maide like to be rescued by the multitude that was assembled, saide, that there was no neede of that hurrie burlie, for that he attempted nothing by force, but that he was able to proue by lawe. Whereupon he cited the mayde to appere, her frendes promisd that she shoulde according to the Lawe, make her apperance. Being come before the consistorie, where Appius set in judgement, Claudius began to tell a tale and proceffe of the cause, whereof Appius being the deuifer, vnderflode the effect. The tenor of the tale was, that the maide was borne in his house, and was the daughter of his owne bondwoman, who afterwaerds being stolen awaye, was caried to the house of Virginius, and supposed to be his childe, which thing he saide, he was well able to proue and would referre the judgement of his cause to Virginius him selfe; vnto whom the greater part of his iunirie did apertaine. In the meane time, he saide, that it was meeke the maide shoulde folowe her maister: wherunto the Advoctes of the mayde replied, and saide, that Virginius was absent about the affaires of the commonwealthe, but if he were aduertised of the matter, they knewe wel he would bee at home within twoo dayes after: wherefore, they sayd, that it were against equitie and iustice, that proceffe and suité shoulde bee made for clayme of children in the absence of the parentes, requiring them to deferre the matter tyll the retourne of the father. Appius not regarding the iustice of the cafe, to the intent he myght satissfie his owne luste and pleasure, ordeyned in the meane tyme, that Claudius the Aflertor and playntife, shoulde haue the keping and placing of the mayde, till the father were returned. Against whiche wrong, many did grudge, although
none durft withstand it. But as fortune chaunced immediately after that decree and order was so pronounced: Publius Numitornius, the mayde's uncle by her mother's side, and Icilius her beloued, were comen home: vpon whose retourne, incontinentlye Icilius approched nere to Appius, and being put backe by the Sergeant, hee cried out a loude in these wordes: "Thou oughteest to put me back from hence (O Appius) with a sworde that thou mighteest without let, enioye the thing thou wouldeest haue kepte clofe and secrete. It is I that purpose to mary this maide, who I doubte not, is very honest and chaste: wherefore cal together thy Sergeantes, and cause the roddes and axes, to be made pres and ready. For I assure thee, the spouf of Icilius shall not remayne out of her father's house. No! although thou haft taken away from the Romaine people their Tribunes aide and appeales, whiche be twoo strong fortes and holdes of their common libertie. Is autheritie geuen thee, libidinously to abuse our wyues and children? Exercife thy crueltie behinde our backes, and vpon our lives if thou lifte, so that thou doe not contaminate and defile the vertue of chaftitie. Whereunto if thou inferre any damage or iniurie, I will for mine owne parte, and for the loue of my beloued, crye out for the ayde of the Romaines that be present, and Virginius shal do the like of the souldiours, in the quarell of his owne daughter. And all wee together, will implore for the succour of Goddes and men. And trufe to it, that thou shalt not enioye thy purpose before some of vs haue lost our liues. Wherefore Appius I aduise thee, take hede in time, for when Virginius doth come, hee will seke remedie to defende his daughter, and will knowe in what condition and forte shee is ordred, if shee be referred to the seruittude of this man. And for my part, my life shall foner fayle in defending her libertie, then my faihte to her betrouched." Appius perceiving the confciencie of Icilius, and that the people was in a great mutine and fiturre, differred the caufe of Virginia til the next daye: whose frends hoped by that time, that her father would be at home: wherefore with all expedition they addresed messengers vnto him in the campe, bicaufe the faufgarde of his daughter conffisted in his preffence. In the meane time the Affertor required the mayde, offering to put in baile; the like offer made Ici-
APPIUS CLAUDIUS

lius, of purpose to contrive and spende the time, till the ariuall of Virginius. The multitude of their owne accordes, helde vp their hands promising to become sureties for Icilius, vnto whom hee gaue thankes, weeping for ioye, to se their kinde behauiour, and said: “I thanke you moste hartely my beloued frendes, to morowe I wil vse your frendely offer, but at this present I haue sureties sufficient.” Whereupon Virginia was bailed. Then Appius repaired home, and wrote to his frendes in the campe, that in no wyse they should give Virginius leaue to come to Rome, whiche vngracious deuife came to late, and toke none effecte. Whereupon Virginius retorned home, and in poore and vile apparell, repaired to the Forum, after whom followed a great number of matrones and advocates. Then he began to require them all of succour and ayde, alledging that he was a Souldiour, and one that aduentured him selfe, for the saufegarde and defence of them all: with such like perswasions to the multitude. Semblable wordes were vteded by Icilius. All which doinges being viewed and marked by Appius, in a greate furie he ascended the constitorie. Then M. Claudius the plaintife began to renewe his sute: and before the father of the mayden could make answer to that plea, Appius gaue sentence that the mayde was bonde: which sentence femed fo cruell, as it appalled the whole multitude. And as Claudius was laying handes vppon the virgine, Virginius stepped to Appius, and said: “I haue betrouthed my daughter to Icilius, and not to thee Appius. My care in the bringing of her vp, was to marrie her, and not to suffer her to be violated and deflored. It is your maner, like fauage and cruell beastes, indifferentlye thus to vse your fleshly affections: I can not tell whether the multitude here present will supporte this enormitie, but I am sure the armed Souldiours, and men of warre, will not suffer it.” Marcus Claudius being repulsed by the women, and Aducates that were present, silence was proclaimed by the Trumpet. Then Appius began to declare how he vnderstoode, that all the night before, certaine companies were assembled within the citie, to excite and move sedicion, for whiche cause hee came with armed men, not to hurte any that was quiet, but according to the authoritie of his office to bridle and represse thoes, that were troublers of the publique state.
"Wherefore goe Sargeant (quod he) make roume emonges the multitude, that the maister may enjoye his servante." Which wordes he thundered out with great furie, and therewithall the multitude gaue place, leauing the poore Pufelle to be a praye to the enemy. Her father seeing that hee was voyde of succoure and helpe, to defende the innocencie of his daughter, spake to Appius in this forme: "I firste doe beseche thee Appius, if I haue vsed any unreasonable woordes against thee, to pardone mee, and to impute the fame to the Father's griefe and forowe. Suffer me I praye thee, to examine the Nourffe, in the presence of the wenche, of the whole circumstance of this matter, to the intent that if I be but a suppos'd father, I maye departe hence with quiet conscience satysfied and contented." Virginius hauing licence to talke with his daughter and Nourffe, departed a side into a place called Cloacina, where the shoppes be, nowe called Tabernæ Nōūæ, and plucking a sharpe knife from a Bocher that flode by, he thrust the fame to the harte of his daughter, sayinge: "By this onely meanes (daughter) I can make thee free:" And looking againe to the judgement seate, he said: "This bloud Appius I confecrate and bestowe vpon thee." Whiche done, with his sword he made waye, to passe through the thronge to conueighe him selfe out of the citie. Then Icilius and Numitorius tooke vp the dead bodie, and shewed it to the people, who cryed vp on the wickednesse of Appius, bewayling the vnhappy beautie of that fayre maiden, and deplored the necelitie of the father. The women exclaimed in lamentable wyfe, saying: "Is this the condicion and fate of them that bring forth children? Be these the rewardes of chastitie?" With suche like pitifull cries, as women are wonte to make vp suche beaute and dolorous euentes. Virginius being arruied in the campe, whiche then was at the mount Vicelius, with a traine of fower hundred perfones, that fled out of the Citie, shewed to the Souliours the bloudie knife, that killed his daughter, whiche fighte aftenied the whole Campe: in so muche as every man demanded, what was the cause of that fadain chaunce. Virginius could not speake for teares, but at length he discloed vnto them, the effecte of the whole matter, and holding vp his handes towards the heauens, sayd: "I beseche you (deare companions) do not
impute the wickednesse of Appius Claudius vpon mee, ne yet that I am a paricide and murderer of mine own children: the life of my dear daughter had bene more acceptable to me then mine owne life, if so be shie might haue continued a free woman, and an honest virgin. But when I sawe she was ledde to the rape like a bondwoman, I considered, that better it wer her life to be loste, then suffered to liue in shame: wherefore my naturall pitie was conuerted to a kynde of crueltie. And for myne owne parte, I doe not passe to lyue long after her, if I thought I should not haue your helpe and succour to reuenge her death. Consider that your selues haue daughters, sisters, and wyues, thinke not therefore, that the fleshlye desire of Appius is satissied with the death of my daughter. And the longer that he doth continue in this securitie, the more vnbrideled is his appetite. Let the calamitie of an other be a sufficient document for you, to beware like injuries. My wife is dead, by naturall fate and constellacion, and bicause my daughter could continewe no longer in honeste and chastie life, death is befallen unto her: whiche although it be miserable, yet the fame is honourable. There is nowe no place in my house for Appius to satissie his filthie luste: and I will fayle of my purpose, if I do not reuenge the death of my daughter with so good will vpon his flese, as I did discharge the difhonour and servitude of her from his violent and cruel handes." This suelamation and pitifull complainte, so firiwed the multitude, that they promied all to helpe and relieue his forowe. Whereupon, the whole Campe were in a mutine and marched in order of battayle to the mounte Auentine, where Virginius perfwaded the Soulidiours, to chofe ten principall Captaines, to bee head and chiefe of that enterprize: whiche with honourable titles of the field, shoulde be called Tribuni. And Virginius him selfe being elected the chiefe Tribune, sayde these wordes to the Soulidiours: "I praye you refute this estimation, whiche you conceiue of me, vntill some better tyme and after occasion, as well for your commoditie, as for my selfe. The death of my daughter, will suffer no honour to bee pleafaunt or welcome to me, duringe my life. Moreover in this troubled state of the common wealth, it is not meete for them to be your gouernours, that be subiect and occurrant to enuie and re-
proch, if my seruice shal bee profitable vnto you when you haue thus created me a Tribune, it shal be no les commodious if I doe still remayne a private man." When he had spoken those wordes, they chose tenne Tribunes. And like as the campe at the mounte Auentine, was prouoked and stirred to this sedition, euyn so by meanes of Icilius and Numitorius before remembred, the Armie then being against the Sabines began to revolte and made the like number of Tribunes, which in array of battaile, marched through the citie, at the gate Colina, with banner displeased, to ioyne with the campe vpon the mount Auentine. And when both the campes were assembled, they chose out two amonges the twenty Tribunes, to be their generalles, called M. Opius and Sextus Manilius. The Senate, careful and pensifie for these euenteres, eftions assembles, but no certaine determinations was agreed vpon. At length they concluded, that Valerius and Horatius, shold bee sent to the mount Auentine to perfwade the people, but they ytterlye refused the meffage, vnlesse the Decemuiris were first depoied. The Decemuiris made aunswere, that they would not geue ouer their authoritie, til such time as those lawes were ratified, which were treated vpon, before they were electted to that office. Of all these contentions the people was aduertised by M. Duillius their Tribune. And when both their armies were ioyned at the mount Auentine, aforespaid, al the multitude of the citie, men, women, and children, repaired thither in forte, that Rome was like a forlorn and abandoned place. The fathers seing the citie thus relinquished, Horatius and Valerius, with diuers of the fathers, exclamed in this wise. "What do ye expect and looke for, ye fathers conscript? Will ye suffer al thinges to runne to extreme ruine and decay? Shall the Decemuiris still persifie in their stuburne and froward determinacions? What maner of gouernement is this (O ye Decemuiris) that ye thus lay holde vpon and enjoye? Will ye pronounce and make lawes within your owne houses, and the limites of the same? Is it not a shame to se in the Forum a greater number of your catchpolles and Sergeantes, then of other sober and wife Citizens? But what will ye doe, if the enemie vpon the sodaine, dothe approche the walles? What will ye do if the people vnderstanding that we care not for their departure, do in
armes affaile vs? Will ye finifh your gouernement, with the overthrowe of the citie: But either wee must expell and abandon the people, or els wee must admitte the Tribunes. We shall benere our Fathers and Senatours, then they their plebeian officers. They bereuned and toke awaye from vs the fathers a newe kinde of authoritie, which was neuer sene before, who now feeling the sweetnesse thereof, will neuer geue it ouer. For we can not so well temper our authoritie and gouernement, as they be able to seeke helpe and succour.” The Decemuiri perceiving that they were hated, so well of the Senate, as of the people, submitted themselves. And therupon Valerius and Horatius were sent to the campe, to reuoke the people vpon suche conditions as they thought most meete. Then the Decemuiri were commaunded, to take heede of the peoples furie. So sone as the Commisioners were come to the campe, they were received with great ioye and gladnesse of the people, because they were the beginners of that furre, and supposing that they would make an ende of the commocion, for whiche cause they rendred to them their humble thankes. Then Icilius was appointed to speake for the people, who required to haue the authoritie of the Tribunes reflored, and their appeale renewed, with restitution of those lawes, which before the erection of the Decemuiri, were ratified and confirmed. They demanded also an impunitie and free pardon to those that firfte encouraged and incited the Souldiers to that enterprisfe, and the restoring of their libertie. They required to haue their enemies the Decemuiri, to be delivered into their handes. Whom they threatened to put to death by fire. Whereunto the Commisioners aunswered in this wise: “Your requetites bee so reasonable, that they ought willingly to be graunted. All which ye desire to obtaine, as a defence and comfort for your libertie, and not to persecute and infelie others. Your furie and anger ought rather to be pardoned, then permitted or graunted. Yee beare a face and feeme to deteft and hate feruitie, and ye your seleues incurre, and runne headlong into all kinde of crueltie: and before ye be made free your selues, ye desire to bee Lordes ouer your aduersaries. Shall our citie neuer bee voide of tortures and oppreffions: sometime of the fathers towards the people, sometime of the people towards the fathers: you had more
That man is of a base state and courage we suppose, that liueth in a citie and beareth him self so vpright, as neither he inferreth injury to others, ne yet suffereth wrong him selfe. If ye shew your selues so terrible, then it is to be supposed, that after ye haue recovered your lawes and magistrates, and be placed again in your former authoritie and preeminence: ye will also ordeine and appointe lawes ouer vs, that shall concerne our liues and goodes, and every other light matter. But for this present I would wishe you, to be contented with your former freedome.” After the commissioners had willed them to consulte vpon some determinate aunswere, they returned to Rome, to make reporte to the Senate, of the peoples requestes. The Decemuiiri perceiuing, that contrarie to their expectation, no likelihode was of any persecution, to be done vpon them, condescended to these demandes. Appius being a man of nature cruell and malicious, measuring the malice of others, by his owne maligne disposition, spake these woordes: “I am not ignoraunte what fortune is nowe imminente: for I do plainlye see that whiles weapons be delivered to our aduersaries, the combate is deferred against vs: with bloude, enuie muste be rewarded. I will not any longer delaie the time, but deprive my selfe of the decemuirate.” When the Senate was advertized by the Commisioners, Valerius and Horatius, of the peoples aunswere, they decreed that the Decemuirii should be depofed, and that Q. Furius the chief bishop, should create that plebeian Tribunes. Wherin also was enacted, that the departure of the people, and mutine of the fouldiours should be pardoned.

When these lawes were renewed, the Decemuirii went foorth, and openly in the assemblie depoed them selues, to the great ioye and confort of them all. All whiche being reported to the people: both the fouldiours, and the rest of the multitude, were somoned to appeare before the commisioners, unto whom they spake these woordes. “We now beseech you al, to retoune into your countrie, to your domestical goddes, your wiués, and children, which we truist shal be right good, happie and profitable vnto you, and to the common wealth. But your modeste and sober behaviouer, for that no mans gronde is violated and destroyed, con-
fidering many thinges, could not suffice the hugeneffe of this multitude, that part of modeifie, I faye, cary with you into the citie, to your immortall fame and glorie. Get ye therefore to the mounte Auentine, from whence ye departed, where, as in a place mode happie ye renewed the foundacions of your auncient libertie, and there yee shall create your Tribunes: the chiefe bishop shal be present, to kepe the comitiales.” Then the Romaine people made Aulus Virginius, Lucius Icilius, and P. Numitorius the Tribunes, who with their assistantes, first advanced and confirmed the libertie of the people. Afterward Virginius was appointed to be the accufer, and Appius chosen to be the defendant. At the day appointed, Appius reforted to the Forum, with a great company of yong gentlemen, of the patricial order, where Virginius began to renewe the cruel and abominable facte, which Appius committed in the time of his authoritie, and said: “Oration was first deuised and found out, for ambiguous and doubtfull caues: therefore I will neither consume time, in accusing him before you, from whose crueltie, ye haue by force defended your felues, nor yet I wyll suffer hym to coyne to his former wickednesse, any impudente aunfwere for his defence. Wherefore Appius, all those thynges whiche wyckedlye and cruelllye one vpon an other, thou hafte done these twoo yeares past, I doe freely forgeue thee: but if thou canft not purge thyselfe of this one thing, that against the order and forme of lawe (thou thy selfe being judge) wouldeft not suffer the freman, to enioye the benefite of his freedome, during the proceffe made of feruitude, I will presently commaunde the to pryson.” Appius Claudius being nowe a Pryoner, and perceiving that the iuft complaintes of Virginius did vehemently incite the people to rage and furie, and that the peticions and prayers of his frendes in no wife could mollifie their hартes, he began to conceiue a desperacion, and within a whyle after flewe him selfe. Spurius Oppius, also an other of the Decemuiiri, was immediatly sent to prifon, who before the daye of his judgement died. The reste also of that order fled into exile, whose goods were confiscate. M. Claudius also the affieror was condempned: howbeit Virginius was contented he shold be banished the citie, and then he fled to Tybur. Thus vpon the filthie affection of
one noble man, issued paricide, murder, rebellion, hatred, depri-
ing of magistrates, and great mischiefes succeeding one in an
others necke; whereupon the noble and victorious citie, was lyke
to be a praye to forren nations. A goodlie document to men of like
calling, to moderate them felues, and their magisterie with
good and honest life, thereby to giue in-
couragement of vertue, to their vaf-
falles and inferiours: who for the
most parte doe imitate and fol-
lowe the lives and conuerfa-
tion of their fu-
periours.
CANDAULUS AND GYGES.

THE SIXTH NOUELL.

Candaules king of Lidia, shewing the secretes of his wyues beautie to Gyges, one of his guarde: was by counsaile of his wife, slaine by the said Gyges, and deprieued of his kingdome.

Of all follies wherewith vayne men be affected, the follie of immoderate loue is mofte to bee detefted. For that husband, which is beautified with a comely and honest wife, whose rare excellencie doth surpaffe other, as wel in lineaments, proporcion, and feature of bodie, as with inwarde qualities of minde: if he can not retaine in the secrecie and filence of his breaste, that excelling gifte and benefite, is worthy to be inaugured with a Laurel crown of follie. Beautie eche man knoweth, is one of natures ornamentes, by her wisedomeordeined, not to enter in triumpe, as victours vfe vpon gaine of victorie, with brauerie to oftentate their glorie, by found of Shalme and Dromme, but thankfully for the fame, to proclaime the due praise to the authour of nature. For there is nothing more fraile and fading, then the luring lookes of dame beauties eies, altogether like the flaring Marigold floure, which in the mofte fervent heate of the Sommers day, doth appeare moft glorious, and upon retire of the nights shadowe, appeareth as though it had neuer bene the fame. And therfore he that conceiueth, reioyce in her vncertayne state, is like to him that in his flambring dreame, doth imagine he hath founde a pereleffe iewell, of price inestimable, beft with the gliftring Diamonde: and perfectly awaked, knoweth he hath none fuch. If God hath indued a man with a wife that is beautifull and honest, hee is furnifhed with double pleazure: fuch, as rather thankes to him, then vain oftentation is to be remembred: otherwise, he doateth, either in Jelofie or openeth proude vauntes therof, to suche as he thinketh to be his moft affiured frendes. What ioye the sequele therof doth bring, let the historie infuing reporte.

Candaules king of Lydia, had a marueilous beautifull gentlewoman to his Queene and wife, whome hee loued very dearlye,
and for that great loue whiche he bare her, thought her the fayreft creature of the worlde. Being in this louing concept, hee extolled the prayfe of his wife, to one of his guarde called Gyges, the sonne of Dafcylus (whom he loued aboue all the reste of his houfholde, and vsed his counfayle, in all his weightie caufes) within a whyle after he fayde vnto Gyges thefe woordes. “It femeth vnto mee Gyges, that thou doeft not greatly beleue the woordes whiche I fpeake vnto thee, of the beautie of my wyfe, but becaufe eyes bee better witnesses of thinges then eares, thou shalt fee her naked.” With thefe woordes Gyges being amazed cryed out, faying: “What woordes be thefe (fir king) me thynke you are not well aduifed, to require mee to viewe and beholde the Lady my maiiftres in that forte? For a woman feene naked, doth with her clothes, put of alfo her chaftitie. In olde tyme honest things were deuised for mannes instruction, emonges which was vsed this one thing. That every man ought to beholde, the thinges that were his owne. But fir, I do beleue assuredly that she is the faireft woman in the world, wherfore desire me not to thynge that bee vnlawefull.” In this forte Gyges replied, and yet feared left some daunger might happen vnto hym. Whome Candaules encouraged, faying: “Bee of good chere, and be not afrayde, that either I or my wyfe, goe about to deceuie thee, or that thou shalt incurre anye daunger. For I wyll take vpon me to vfe the matter, as she by no meanes shall knowe that thou haft feene her. I wyll place thee behynde the portall of our chamber. When I goe to bedde, my wyfe commonly doth followe. And she being in the Chamber, a chayre is fette readye, vpon whiche shee layeth her clothes, as she putteth them of. Whiche done shee sheweth her felfe a good tyme naked: and when she ryfeth from her chayre to goe to bedde, her backe beyng towarde thee, thou mayest easilye conueyghe thy felfe out again, but in any wyfe take heede, shee doe not fee thee, as thou goest out. Whereunto I pryde thee, to haue a speciall regarde.” Gyges feying that by no meanes, hee could auoyde the vayne requeste of the king, was readie at the tyme appoynted. Candaules about the howre of bedde tyme, went into the Chamber, and conueighed Gyges into the fame, and after the kyng the queene followeth, whome
Gyges behelde at her going in, and at the putting of her clothes when her back was towards him, (as he was going out) she perceived him. The queene vnderstanding by her husbande, the circumstance of the faete, neyther for shame did crie out, ne yet made countenaunce as though she had seen Gyges; but in her minde purposèd, to reuenge her husbandes follic. For emonges the Lydians (as for the most part, with all other nations) it is coumpted a great shame, to see a naked man. The gentlewoman counterfaièd her grief, and kepte silence. In the morning when she was redie, by fuch of her servaunts, whom she beft trusted, she fent for Gyges, who thought that she had knowen nothing of that whiche chaunceèd. Being come before her presence; she fayde vnto hym, "Gyges I offer vnto thee nowe twoo conditions, take whether thou wylte. For eyther thou muft kill Candaules, and take mee to thy wyfe, and the kyngdome alfo, or els thou muft dye thy felfe, that thou maieft vnderftande, how in all thynges not meete to be knowen, it is not necessarie to obeye Candaules. For eyther hee mußt needes dye, whiche gaue thee that counfayle, or thy felfe, which diddest see me naked, and thereby committed a thing vnlawfull." Whiche words for a while, did wonderfullly amaue Gyges, then he befought the Queene that she woulde pardon him from that vnlawfull choife. When he faw that he could not perfwade her; he required her to shewe him by what meanes he might attempt that enterprife. "Marie (quoth she) euhen in that place where thou fawefl me naked, when he is a sleepe thou shalt commit that faete." After they had deuised the treason, night approched. And Gyges withoute courage, bent himselfe thereunto, for he faw no remeyde, but that he mußt kill, or els be killed. Wherefore with a Dagger which the Queene deliuèred him, he killed Candaules, when he was a sleepe; and so gotte from him both his wyfe and kyndome. A goodly example to declare, that the secrets of Marriage, ought not to be disclosed: but with reuerence to be couered, left God do plague such offences with death or other shame, to manifeft to the world, howe dearly hee esteemeth that honourable staue.
OF KING CÆSUS AND THE WYSE MAN SOLON. 49

THE SEUENTH NOUELL.

*King Cæsus of Lydia reasoneth with the wyfeman Solon, of the happie life of man.* Who little esteeming his good aduise, underfloode before his death, that no man (but by vertue) can in this life atteaine felicitie.

A Noble Gentleman of Athens called Solon, by th' appointement of the Athenians, made lawes for that citie, and because none of the fame lawes shoulde be abrogated, for the space of tenne yeares, hee bounde the Citizens by othe. And that the fame mighte the better be obserued; he himselfe trauelyed into farre countries, as into Egipt to visite king Hamas, and so to Sardis to kinge Cæsus, where he was liberallie intertayned. This Cæsus was king of Lydia, fonne of Haliattes, that brought to subiection great countries in Asia and Graecia, and gathered together an innumerable maffe of moneye and riches. Who three or foure dayes after the arriuall of Solon (which was led aboute by his feruauntes, to viewe his notable wealth and subftaunce) faid vnto Solon thefe wordes. "My frende of Athens, because thy famous wyfedome is well knowen to the worlde, and I haue heard tell of the excel-lencie therof, and of the greatnes of thy trauaile, where thou haft attaigned to the singuler knowledge of Philofophie; I desiere to learne of thee (now hauing scene my great treaures) who is the happiest man and moft blefled, that thou knowest in this world." Thinking he would haue judged him to be the fame. But Solon made aunfwere, that, "Tellus was the happiest; who was an Athenien, and had vertuous and honest fonnes, and they likewise had honest children, all which were that time liuing. And when by the space of many yeares he had ledde a vertuous and godly life, he died an honourable death in the warres which the Athenians had with theyr neighbours, at the battaille of Eleusina. Wher he was indued with sumptuous funerals, to his great honour andprayfe." Then Cæsus asked him: "Who was happie next Tellus?" thinking hee would haue attributed to him the second
place. "Forsoth (quoth he) that is Cleobis and Bito, which were Argiues, and liued a contented life. And in all pastimes to proue force and maisterie, they bare away the prifé and victorie. And of them these things be remembred; when the feastfull day of Iuppiter was celebrated amongeth the Argiues; their mother shoule be caried to the Temple in a Chariot, drawen with a yoke of Oxen, which were not come out of the countrie at the appointed time. The yonge men seinge that the hower was come, entred into the yoke themselues, and drewe the charriote the space of xlv. stades to the Temple. After this acte feene of all the people there, th'ende of their life was such, as certainly God gaue to vnderstand by them, that better it is to die, then liue. For the Argiues that were assembled about Bito and Cleobis, with shoutes and acclamations, praifed the good willes of those children, and the women themselues faid, 'That happie was the mother, which brought forth such lineage.' Their mother then joyfull for that fact, and of the reputation of her sonnes, kneeled downe before the Image of Iuno, humbly befeechinge her to giue her sonnes the thinges that were best for a man to atteigne vnto. Her prayer ended, she made her sacrifice, which done, the two yonge men presently died in the temple. In token of whose noble liues, the Argiues erected two Images at Delphos." And to them Solon appointed the second place of bliffulnes. Cræsus mowed with these words, faid vnto Solon. "Thou straunger of Athens, is our felicitie in such little reputation with thee that thou doest preferre before vs these priuate men?" Solon aunswered: "Sir thal I affirme you of humaine things, knowing that God enuith the flate of men, and troubleth them fo often: in length of time many thinges be seen, which men would not see, and many thinges be suffred, that men would not suffer. Let vs affigne to mans life the terme of lxx. yeres: in which yeres are the number of xxv.m.cc. dayes, in which computation the leape moneth, which is February, is not comprehended. But if you wil that other yeres be longer, by reason of that moneth, to th'end the howers may be adioyned to them, that want then the leape monethes, maketh the time to amount (aboue lxx. yeares) to xxv. monethes, and the dayes of those monethes amount to m.v.c. But admit that lxx. yeares with their leape monethes, be
the total summe of man's life, then is produced the summe of xxv. M. cc. dayes. Truly one day is not like an other in effect, euen so Craefus I conclude, that man is ful of miserie. But although he your grace, seeming both in wealth, and also in multitude of men, to be a riche and mightie king, yet I cannot aunswere fullye your demaunde, before I see howe well you doe ende your life: for the rich man is not more happie, because he hath long life, except to his riches fortune graunt that he lead a good and honest life. Many men be very rich, and yet for all that be not blessed and happie: and manye that have but meane wealth, be fortunate. He that is rich and wealthie, and therewithal not happie, excelleth him that is fortunate and happy onely in two things, but th'other surmounteth the riche man in many things. The two things wherein the rich excelleth th'other be these. Th'one in satisfying his luft and affection, th'other in power and abilitie, to susteine harde fortune and aduerfitie; and as the meane man is inferiour to the rich in these two points, which by fortune be denied him, yet he doth excell him, because he never hath experience of them; he liueth in good and prosperous health, he never feeleth aduerfitie, he doth nothing that is wicked, he is a father of good children, he is indued with formosity and beautie, who if (besides all those things) he die well, it is he to aunswere your demaunde that worthely may be called happie; for before he die he cannot be so called: and yet fortunate he may be termed. For to obtaine all (whiles you be a living man) it is impossible: for as one countrie is not able to serue it selfe with all commodities, but having one it lacketh an other: yet the same countrie that hath most commodities is the best: and as a man's bodie having one perfection is not perfect, because in having one he lacketh another: euen so he that hath most vertue, and is indued with greatest number of the aforefaid commodities, and so quietly departeth his life, he in mine opinion is worthy to be intituled with the name of a king. A man must expect th'ende of every thinge whereunto it tendeth: for God plucketh vppe by the rootes many men, to whom hee hath giuen abundance of wealth and treasure.” Craefus miliking the woordes of Solon suffred him to depart saying: “He was a foole that measured present pleasures with no better regard.” After
whose departure, the gods began to bende their indignation and displeasure vpon him, because he thoughte himselfe the happiest man alio. Long time after, Cræfus receyuing courage and comfort from Apollo at Delphos, attempted warres against Cyrus kinge of Persia, who in those warres was ouerthrown, and taken prifoner after he had raigned xiii. yeares, and was broughte by the Persians to Cyrus. Then Cyrus caufed a stacke of woode to be piled vp, and Cræfus fettred with giues, was fet vpon the fame: who then remembred the saying of Solon, that no liuing man was bleffed, or in all pointes happie, cried out in lamentable wyfe, “O Solon! Solon! Solon!” which Cyrus hearing, caufed his interpreters to demand of him, what the fame Solon was. Cræfus with much difficultie toulde what he was, and declared all the talke betwene him and Solon. Wherof when Cyrus heard the report, he acknowledged himselfe to be also a man, and fore repented that he went about to burne him, which was equal vnto him in honour and riches, confessing nothing to be stable and certaine in the life of man. Whereupon he commanded the fire to be taken awaye, which then began to flame. And so with much a doe, he was deliuered. Then Cyrus asked him, who gaue him counfaile to invade his countrie, to make his frende his foe. “Euen my selfe (faide Cræfus) through vn happie fate, by the perfwashion of the Greekifh God which gaue me counfaile, to make warres vpon thee: for there is no man fo madde, that had rather defire warre then peace.

For in peace sones burie their fathers, but in warres, fathers burie their children. But that these thinges be come to passe, I maye thancke the deuil’s good grace.” Afterward Cyrus entertained him very honourable, and vfed his counfell, which he found very holome and good.
THE EIGHTH NOUELL.

Of a father that made suite, to have his owne sonne put to death.

There was a man borne in Mardus (which is a Countrie adiioyning vnto Persia) called Rhacon, that had seuen children. The yongest of them (named Cartomes,) afflicted divers honest men with greate harmes and mischieues. For which cause the father began to reforme him with words, to proue if he would amend. But he little waying the good discipline of his father, it chaunced vpon a time that the Iustices of the countrie, repaired to the Sessions in that towne, where the father of the childe did dwell, Who taking his sonne, and binding his handes behinde him, brought him before the Iudges. To whom hee remembred by waye of accusat{i}on, all the mischieues, which his sonne from time to time had committed, and desired the Judges, that he might be condempned to die. The Judges amazed with that requi{se}, would not themselves giue sentence against him, but brought both the father and the sonne, before Artaxerxes the king of Persia: in whose presence the father fill{ed} persifled in the accusation of his sonne.

"Why (quoth the king) canst thou finde in thy harte, that thine owne sonne shoulde be put to death before thy face?" "Yea truly (quoth the father,) for at home in my garden, when the yong Lactuse begin to growe, I cutte of the bitter and lower stalkes from them: for pitie it were the mother Lactuse should sustaine sorrow, for those bastard and degenerate shrubbes: which being taken awaye, the prospereth and encreaseth to great sweeteneffe and bignes. Euen so (O kinge) if he be hanged that hurteth my whole familie, and offendeth the honest converfation of his brethren, both my selfe shalbe increased, and the reste of my flocke and linage shal in like fort prosper and continue." The king hearing those words, did greatly prase the wisdom of Rhacon, and chose him to be one of his Judges, pronouncing these wordes before the multitude. "Hee that dare thus fueerely and lustly pronounce sentence vpon his owne child, doubtles he wil shew himselfe to be an incorrupt and sincere Judge vpon the offences of other." Then the kinge deliuered the yongman, from that presente faulte, threatening him with most cruell death, if after that time, he were apprehended with like offence.
There was a certaine Persian called Sinetas, that farre from his owne house mette king Artaxerxes, and had not wherwith to present him. For it was an order amonges the Persians, instituted by law, that every man which met the king, should giue him a present. Wherfore the poore man because he would not negleete his dutie, ranne to a Riuere called Cyrus, and taking both his hands full of water, spake to the king in this wise. “I befeech God that your maieftie may euermore raigne amonges vs. As ocasion of the place, and mine ability at this instant serueth, I am come to honour your maiefty, to the intent you may not passe without some present, for which caufe I giue vnto you this water. But if your grace had ones encamped your selfe, I would go home to my house, for the best and dearest thinges I haue to honour your maieftie withall. And peraduenture the same shal not be much inferiour to the giftes, which other now do giue you.” Artaxerxes delighted with this fa<ref>l</ref>, sayde vnto him. “Goode fellowe I thancke thee for this presente, I affure thee, the same is so acceptable vnto me, as the most precious gift of the worlde. First, because water is the best of all thinges, then because the Riuere, out of the which thou diddest take it, doth beare the name Cyrus. Wherefore I commaunde thee to come before me when I am at my campe.” In speakinge thofe wordes, he required his Eunuches to take the present, and to put it into a cuppe of gold. The king when he was lodged in his pavillion, sent to the man a Persian robe, a Cuppe of Golde, and a thousande Darices, (which was a coigne amonges the Persians, wherupon was the Image of Darius) willinge the messenger to saye vnto him, these wordes. “It hath pleased the king, that thou shouldest delighte thy selfe, and make mery with this gold, because thou diddest exhilarate his minde, in not suffering him to passe, without the honour of a present: but as necessitie
did serve thee, diddest humbly salute him with water. His pleasure is also, that thou shalt drink of that water in this Cuppe of gold, of which thou madest him partaker."

Artaxerxes hereby expressed the true Image of a princely minde, that would not disdain cherefully to behold the homelie gifte (in our estimation rude, and nothing worth) at the handes of his poore subject: and liberally to reward that dutifull zeale, with things of greate price and valour. To the same Artaxerxes, riding in progresse through Persia, was presented by one called Mifes, a very great Pomegranate in a Siue. The king maruelling at the bignes therof, demaunded of him out of what garden he had gathered the same: he aunswered, out of his owne. Wherat the king greatly reioysinge, recompenced him with princely rewards, saying:

"By the Sunne (for that was the common oth of the Persian kings) this man is able with such travaile and diligence in my judgement to make of a little citie, one that shal be large and great." Which wordes seeme to declare, that all thinges by care, sufficiene paine and continual labour, may against nature, be made more excellent and better.
Nowe will I rehearfe a fact of the tyrant Phalaris farre discrepante from his conditions, because it fauoureth of great kindnes and humanity, and seemeth not to be done by him. Chariton was an Agrigentine borne, which is a towne in Sicilia, and a great louer of beauty, who with ardent affection loued one Menalippus, which was also borne in that Citie, of honest conditions and of excellent forme and comelines. This tyraunt Phalaris hindred Menalippus in a certaine sute: for he contending in judgement with one of Phalaris frendes, the tyraunt commaunded him to giue ouer his sute: whervnto, because he was not obedient, he threatened to put him to death, except he would yelde. Notwithstanding, Menalippus ouer came him in law, and the noble men which were the frends of Phalaris, would giue no sentence, but brought the matter to a Nonefuite; which the yong man taking in ill part, faid he had receiued wrong, and confesseffed to his frend Chariton the wrong he had sustained, requiring his ayde to be reuenged upon the tyrant. He made other yonge men priuie to his conspiracie, such as he knewe woulde be ready and apte for that enterprife. Chariton perceyuinge the rage and furie of his frende, knowinge that no man would take his parte for feare of the tyraunt, began to diffwade him, fayinge, that he himfelfe went aboute the like attempte, a little before, to deliuer his country into libertie from present servitude, but he was not able to fort the same to any effect, without great danger: wherefore he praid hym to commit the consideration thereof vnto him, and to suffer him to espie a time apt and conuenient. Menalippus was content: Chariton reueluing with himfelfe that deuife, woulde not make his deare frend a partaker of the fact leaft it shoulde be perceiued, but he alone took vppon him to do the deede, that onely himfelfe might sustaine the smart; wherefore taking a sword in his hande, as he was seeking way to giue the assault vpon the tyraunt, his enterprife was discelofed, and Chariton apprehended by the Guarde, which for the tyrauntes defence, diligently attended about him.
MENALIPPUS AND CHARITON.

From thence he was sent to the Jaole, and examined upon interrogatories to bewraye the rest of the conspirators; for which hee suffered the racke, and the violence of other tormentes. Afterwardes, Menalippus remembring the constancie of his frende, and the crueltye by him stoutly suffered, went to Phalaris and confessed vnto him that not onely he was priuy to that treason, but also was the authour thereof. Phalaris demaundinge for what cause he did it, tolde him the consideration before rehearsed, which was the reuokinge of sentence, and other injuries done vnto him. The tyraunte maruaylinge at the constant frendshipe of those twaine, acquited them both, but vppon condition that both shoulde depart oute of the citie and countrie of Sicilia. Neuertheless, he gave them leaue to receiue the fruites and commodities of their revenues. In record and remembrance of whose amitie, Apollo fang these Verces.

The rayfers vp of heauenly loue,
amonges the humaine kinde:
Were good Chariton and Menalippe,
whose like vnneths we finde.

This Phalaris was a most cruell tyraunte of the citie of Agrigentine in Sicilia, who besides other instrumentes of new deuised tormentes, had a Bull made of Brasfe, by the art and inuention of one Perillus: into which Bull, all such as were condemned to death were put, and by reason of extreame heate of fire made under the fame, those that were executed, yelled foorth terrible soundes and noyfes, like to the lowing of a Bull. For which ingine and deuise, Perillus thinking to obtaine great reward, was for his labour, by commaunderment of the tyraunt, thrown into the Bull, being the first that shewed the proofe of his deuise. Within a while after, also Phalaris himselfe, for his great crueltie, was by a general assault, made upon him by the people, haled into the fame Bull and burned: and although this tyraunte farre excelled in beastlye crueltie, yet there appeared some sparke of humanitie in him, by his mercye extended vpon Chariton and Menalippus, the two true louers before remembred. The same Phalaris wrote many proper and short Epistles, full of vertuous instructions, and hollome admonitions.
KING CYRUS

THE ELEUENTH NOUELL.

Kinge Cyrus persuaded by Araspas, to dispose himselfe to loue a ladie called Panthea, entret in a pretie disputation and talke of loue and beautie. Afterwards Araspas himselfe salleth in loue with the saide ladie, but she indued with greate chastitie, auoydeth his earnest fute. And when shee heard tell that her husbande was slaine in the service of Cyrus, she killed her selfe.

Before the beginning of this Historie, I thought good by way of Proeme, to introduce the wordes of an excellente writer called Lodouicus Cælius Rhodoginus, who faith that S. Hierome the moft holy and eloquent father, affirmeth that vertues are not to be pondered by the sexe or kinde, by whom they be done, but by the chaste and honest minde; wherewith if euer any woman was affected, truly it was the fayre Ladie Panthea: for which I would no man should blame me of vnGodlines, or indiferention, in that I do remember a woman mentioned in profane authours, becaufe at this present I am not minded to make vewe of Chrifte his deuine Scriptures, wherein be contayned the Ghoftly liues of sacred dames, wherein also abundantly doth shine and glitter, the celestiall mercie of our heauenly Father. But let the Reader remember that we be now conuerfant in the auncient monuments of other profane authours, and out of them do feele most pleasant places to recreat ech weary minde. This Panthea therefore as Xenophon writeth, and partly as S. Hierome reporteth, was the wyfe of Abradatas a noble perfonage, and in warlike factes very skilfull, dearly beloued of Cyrus king of Perfia, with whom this Lady Panthea was captiue, at the overthrow of the Assyrians. King Cyrus then after his enemies were vanquished, hearinge tell of this gentlewoman, called vnto him one of his dearest frends named Araspas which was a Median borne, the very minion, playe fellow, and companion of Cyrus from his youth: to whom for the great loue that he bare him, he gaue the Median robe of from his owne backe at his departure from Asliages into
Perśia. To this gentleman, king Cyrus committed the custodie of the ladie, and of her tente. Abradatas her husbande (when she was taken prisoner) was before sente in ambassage to the king of Bactria by the Affrian king, to intreate of peace, because he was his familiar frend. When Arafpas had received the keeping of the ladie: he askd Cyrus whether he had seen her, "No truly" said Cyrus. "Then haue I (faide Arafpas): and haue chozen her specially for your owne person. And when we came into her pavilion, none of us could tell which was she, for she set vpon the grounde, with all her women about her, and her apparell was like vnto her maides. But we desirous to know which was the maistres, beheld them all, and by and by shee seemed to excell them all, although shee fatted with her face couered, loking downe vpon the grounde: and when we bad her to rife vp, all the rest rose vp alfo. She did farre furmounte her maides, as well in making and lineaments of body, as in good behauour and comelineffe, although she was clad in simple apparell: the teares manifeftly ranne downe her eyes vpon her garments, distilling downe even to her feete; to whom he that was most auncient amonges vs faid: 'Be of good chere lady: we heare tell that you haue a very valiaunte man to your husbande, such one whose practize and experience is well knowne and tryed amongs greatest princes, notwithstanding we haue chozen for you a gentleman, that is not inferiour to him, either in beautie, force, wisedome or valiaunce. And we do verely beleue, that if there be any man in this world, worthie of admiration, it is Cyrus our Prince and Lorde, whose paragon wee haue chozen you to bee.' When the Lady hearde them faie so, she tare the attirement from her head and body, she cried out, and all her maides skriched with her. At which times the greatest part of her face appeared, and so did her necke and handes: And assure your selfe (Cyrus) to vs that viewed her well, it seemed impossible, that such a creature coulde be borne of mortall parentes in Asia. Therefore sir, looke vpon her in any wife." To whom Cyrus faid, "The more praise ye giue her, the lesse minde I haue to see her, if shee be such one as you haue saide." "And whye so?" (quoth Arafpas). "Because (faide Cyrus) if I shoulde go to see her, hearing you make this reporte of her beautie (leasure not seruinge me
thereunto) I am afraid, lest she would some allure me to go many times to behold her. Whereby I might perchaunce, grow negligent in my matters of greatest importance.” The young gentleman smiling, said, “Thinke you Cyrus, that the beauty of a woman, can force a man vnwilling, to attempt a thing that should not be meete for him. If nature haue that force in her, she would compel all men alike. Do you not see, that fire burneth all men after one sort, because it is his nature? Beautiful things be not had in equall estimation, some be of great price, some not so, some do regard this, some that. For love is a voluntarie thing, and every man loueth what he lift. The brother is not in loue with the sister, but of another she is loued. The father is not in loue with the daughter, and yet she is beloved of another. For fear and law are able enough to refraine loue. But if there were a law made to command men, that they which did not eate, should not be hungry, and they that did not drinke, should not be a thirsty, and that no man should be cold in Winter, and hotte in Sommer, that lawe could not compell men to obeye: for men by nature be subject to those infirmities. But to loue, is a thing free and voluntarie. Every man loueth things that be his owne, as his apparell and other his necessaries.” Whereunto Cyrus replied: “If loue be voluntary: how can it be that a man may abandon the fame, when he lift? But I have seene men weepe for sorrow of loue: I have known them that haue beene slaves to loue, who before they haue loued, haue thoughte thraldome, the greatest euill: going awaye manye things, which had beeene better for them to haue kept: and haue prayed to God to be exonerated of loue, above all other diseases, and yet coulde not be deliuered, being bound with stronger imprisonment then if they had beeene tied with chains, yelding themselves to their louers, seruing them with all obedience. And when they be hampered with such mischieues, they seeke not to auoide them.” “They do so in deede as you saye (answerwer the yong man:) And therefore such louers be miserable, wishing still to die and yet still continue in their woe and calamitie: And where there be a thousande ways to bereue them of life, yet they do not die. Some of them fall to stealing and robbing of other men. But when they haue robbed
and stolen anye thing thou with the first thinkinge theft unnece-
sary, doest coudeme them as theeeus, whom thou doest not pardon,
but punish. In like maner the beautifull doe not councell men to
loue them, or couet that is not lawful: But miserable men shewing
themselfes inferior to all lustes and desires, doe in the ende
accuse Loue to be the authour of their miferie. Good and honest
men, although they desire golde, beautifull horses and faire
women, yet they can well ynoughe abstaine from them all, as not
subjicet to them more then is meete: For I my selfe haue beholden
this woman, which seemeth to be a surpaung faire wight: and
yet I am now with you, I ryde and do other thinges accordinge
to my dutie.” "Peraduenture (fayd Cyrus) you went foner
awaye, then loue could haue time to fassen vpon you: For fire
touchinge a man, doth not ftraite burne him: And woode is not
by and by in flame, yet would I not willingly touch fire, nor behold
beautiful persons: and I would give you counsaile Arafpas, to
beware how you suffer your eyes to rolle, and wander vpon faire
women: for the fire burneth them, that touch it: and beautifull
folke, do kindle them, that behold them a farre of, in such wife as
they burne for loue.” "I warrant you Cyrus (fayd Arafpas:) for if
I do continually loke vpon them, I wil not so be drowned in loue,
as the same shall prouoke me to do any thing that doth not
become mee.” "You faye well, fayd Cyrus, Therfore keepe this
woman as I bid you, and loke wel vnto her: For peraduenture she
is taken in good time.” And so they departed: The yong gentle-
man marking the singuler beautie of the Lady, and perceiving her
great honesty, he hauing custodie of her, thoughte he woulde do
her pleasure, and by gesture fawe that she was not ingrate and vn-
thankfull, but very diligent: She caused her seruantes to pre-
pare all thinges in readines at his comming in: and if he were by
chaunce fickle, shee toke order that he shoulde lacke nothinge:
vpon which occasions, he fell in loue with her: and no maruaile,
for she was (as before is faide) a woman very fayre and amiable.
Afterwards king Cyrus defirous to send a spie into the country of
Lydia, to learne what the Assyrians did: Arafpas which had the
keepinge of the fayre Lady, seemed moost mete for that purpose.
But Arafpas chaunced to fall in loue with the Ladie, in suche wise
as he was forced to breake his minde vnto her, for the satifying of his pleaure: which request, like a faithfull and louing woman to her absent husband, she denied. Howbeit she would not accuse Arafpas to Cyrus, being a fraide to set variaunce betweene frendes. Arafpas thinkinge it a great shame and reproche vnto him, not to obtaine his desyre: threatened the Lady, that if she would not yeld to his request, he would haue it perforce. Then the woman fearing violence, kepte the thing no longer secrete, but fente one of her Eunuches to Cyrus, to discouer the whole matter: which when he heard, he laughed hardely at Arafpas, that sayde and made his vaunte that he was superiour to loue, sending Artabafus with the Eunuch, to commaund him not to force the woman: but if he could by fayre meanes allure her, he would not be against him. When Artabafus came to Arafpas, he rebuked him, both for his infidility in the thynge committed vnto his charge, and alfo for his wickednesse, injurie, and incontinencie. Wherewithall Arafpas wepte for forowe, beinge oppresed wyth Shame, and confounded with feare, for the displeasure of Cyrus: whiche thing Cyrus vnderstanding, called him, and priuely sayde thus vnto him. "I see Arafpas that you be afraied of me, and much ashamed: but be contente, for I knowe that the goddes haue bene vanquished with loue, and haue learned what thinges the wifeft men haue suffered for loue: and I haue accused my felfe, bicaufe I could not conteine, being in companie with faire personages: and of this mishappe happened to you, I my felfe am the occasion, for I compelled you to that invincible matter." Arafpas making aunfwere sayd: "You be in this thing, O Cyrus, euen like vnto your felfe, as you be in all other: you be mercifull, and full of clemencie: but the brute that shall rife hereof is, that whiche maketh me moste penfife, for so fone as the rumour of my calamitie is difperfed, mine enemies will reioyce, and my frendes will counfaill me to flee, left youre maiestie do hainously take reuenge of mine offence." "Well Arafpas, said Cyrus, by that opinion and brute, you shall do me greatest seruice, and profite very muche my confederates." "How can that be (said Arafpas)? where in for that repect shall I be able to doe you any seruice?" "If prefently (quoth Cyrus) you do make as though
you fledde from me, and by going to myne enemies, you maye wynne of them great credite." "Verely (sayd Arafpas) I supposse that I and my frendes, might raise a rumour indeede, that I am fled from you for feare." "So may you (sayd Cyrus) returne vs againe, when you knowe our enemies secretes; for I thinke they will make you priuie to all their counsell and deuifes: and you being in credit, shall be made priuie to all their appointementes whiche wee desire to knowe." "I will even nowe depart (sayd Arafpas) for it is very likely, that this my departure, may seeme to be an argument of trouth, bicaufe I seeme to flie for feare of punishement." "Can you in that maner forsake faire Panthea" (quoth Cyrus). "Truely (aid he) it evidently nowe appeareth, that I am endewed with two mindes: with the one I haue plaied the philosopher, with loue that vntrue Sophistre: for ther is no one minde which is good and badde, and at one time is rapt with the loue of good and euill things, ne yet at one instanta can wil and will not together. Wherefore it is manifest, that ther be two mindes; when the good minde ruleth, it doth things that be honest, when the euill is superiour, it worketh ill: and now the good minde, by making you his frende and confederate, doth puissantly goure." "Well (sayde Cyrus) if you goe, you musst beware, that your credite may increafe amonges them: tell them hardly the somme of our indeuours, but in suche wise as our doinges may bee lettes to their practises. And this shall hinder their deuifes muche, if you faie that we determine to inuade their countrie: for hearing this, they will not assemble their whole power, euery man fearing his priuate part: and see that you tary with them a good space, and looke which partes they meane foneft to approche, the same be mooste conuenient for vs to knowe: and bid them to be ready, whensoever they thinke time: for when you shall depart from them, although they know you to be priuie to their order, yet they musst needes kepe the same, and be afraid to alter it, lest they confounde them selues through their sodaine chaunce." Thus Arafpas departing, telling his mooste truittie seruauntes what hee would have done in this matter, went his waye: but Panthea hearing that Arafpas was gone, sent to Cyrus this meffage conteining these woordes.
“Bee not forie Cyrus, for the departure of Araspas to your enemies, for if you will suffer mee to fende for my husbande, I doe promyfe you, that he shalbe a farre more assured frende then Araspas was. And I knowe he will come with so great power (for your ayde) as hee is able to make, for the father of the Affirian kyng, whiche nowe raigneth, was his frende. But this kyng vpon a tyme, went about to make a diuorcement, betwene my husbande and mee: therefore, knowyng that this kyng, doth disdayne my husbandes good fortune, by hauing mee to wife, I am fure hee woulde fone be perfwaded to ferue fo noble a Prince as you be.” Cyrus hearing her faye fo, commaunded her to fende for her husbande, which she did. Abradatas knowyng his wiuws tokens, and understanding the effecte of her mes-sage, spedely came to Cyrus with two thousand horsemen. They that were the Persiand spies, sent to Cyrus, declaring what he was. Cyrus commaunded that forthwith he shoule be brought vnto his wife. When the wife and husbande fawed ech other, they embraced like twoo that mette after suche troublesome adventures. Then Panthea tolde her husbande the goodnes, temperance, and clemencie of Cyrus towarde her. Who hearing of her interteignement, faide: “What shal I doe Panthea, to render thankes to Cyrus, for you and mee?” “What other thing (faide Panthea) but to indevoour your selfe, to bee suche a trullie frende to him, as he hath bene to you.” Then Abradatas went to Cyrus, and when he faue hym, he tooke him by the right hande and faide: “For the pleasures that you haue done mee, O Cyrus, I haue no more to faye, but that I assure my selfe vnto you, as your frende, your seruaunt and confederaie: and what foeuer I see you defyre, I shal imploye my selfe, to the vertermofte of my power, to ayde and helpe you in the fame.” To whome Cyrus faide, “I accepthe you, and for this tyme difmiffe you, to goe and suppe with your wife: then you shal agayne be placed in my Tente about me amonges your frendes and myne.” And when Abradatas faue the preparation of Cyrus, that hee made against his enemies, he addressed to make prouision of armure, and thinges meete for the fielde for hym selfe. His wyfe Panthea, had made of her treasure, a curate and helmet of golde, and likewyse his vambraces, and had furnished the horses of the chariote with brafen barbes.
When Cyrus had spoken divers oracions, for the incoraging of his armie, and had taken order, howe all thinges might prosperously succede, diuided his captaines into seuerall battailes, appointing every of them their charge: Abradatas shewed him selfe verie braue, and marciall in his Chariot: who being about to put on a linnen breaste plate, according to his countrie maner, his wife Panthea brought him an armure of golde, and a purple gowne down to his feete, after robe fashion, and a crimsen fkarfe. These thinges had she priuely wrought for her husbande, knowing the measure of his harnesse, whiche when her husbande sawe, he maruelyed, and said to Panthea. “Wife, haue you not defaced your jewels, to make this armure?” “Truelye (said Panthea) I haue a more precious jewel then this; for if you prove a valiant gentle-man to other, as you haue done a louing and trustie husband to me, you are my dearest jewell.” In saying thus, she armed him, and would that no man should haue fene her: for the teares trickled downe her chokes. Abradatas being in the fronte of the armie, armed after this maner, appered a gallant and braue captayne, whose nature and complexion agreed to his comelineffe. And taking the raines of the chariot in his hands, he prepared him selfe to mounte vp. Then Panthea, all other being commandeed to stande backe, saide: “Truely Abradatas, if there be women, that esteeme their husbandes better then their owne liues, I thinke you knowe that I am one of them. Therefore what neede I to expresse every particular thing: my factes, as I thinke, do perswade you more then woordes. And thus indeuouring my selfe towrdes you, our mutuell loue is such, as I had rather be buried quicke with you, being a noble man, then to liue in shame. I regarde you with the beffe, and my selfe not as the worffe. Great thanks we owe to Cyrus, for his Princely interteignement of me, being a captiue and chosen for him selfe, not like a pryfoner with shame, but free, without spot or blemishe to mine honor: and vfed me, as though I had bene his brothers wyfe. And after Arafpas departed from him, whiche had the cuffodie of me, I promised him, that if hee would giue mee leue to fende for you, that you shoud become more loiall and assiure to him, then euer Arafpas was.” Abradatas delited with her chaffe communication, and tenderly laying his
hand upon her head: looking vp to heauen, made this praiier. "O moft mightie Iuppiter, graunte that I may thewe my selue an houfbande mee for Panthea, and a frende worthy of Cyrus, who hath so curteously dealt with vs." Thus speaking at the entrie of the chariot seate, he went vp, and being set downe, the gouernour of the chariot made fast the seate. Panthea hauing nowe nothing to embrace, kisst the chariot seate, and so he went forth. But Panthea followed him pruelie, till he tourned and spied her, to whome he sayde: "Be of good conforte Panthea, Adieu and farewell." Then her Eunuches and women, conueighed her to her own chariot, couering the same with curteines.

Cyrus after the bataille and victorie, had against Cræfus, called diuerse of his men vnto him, and demaunded if they sawe Abradatas. "For I marueille (sayde hee) that he commeth not vnto me: for before the battell many times he appered in my preffence." Whereunto one of his men anfwered: "The caufe is (fir) that he is not alue, for hee was slayne in the battaille, as he inuaded the Ægiptians. The rest of his companie, except his owne fouldiours, fled from him, when they sawe him encountre with the Ægyptian bataille. And then his wife Panthea tooke him vp, and laid him in her owne wagon; conueighing him to a certayne place, by the ryuer Paftolus. And (they say) that her Eunuches doe digge a graue to burie him. His wife sitteth vp on the ground, apparellled with those furnitures that he did weare, leaning her head vpon her knees." With whiche wordes, Cyrus was driuen into greater sorowe, clapping him selue vppon the thighe, and by and by mounted on his horfe, and taking with him m. horfemen, he went to mourne for his frende Abradatas. Moreouer he commaunded Gadatas and Gobryas, to carrie the fairest apparell they could get, to his good and honest frende that was dead, and to assemblie his oxen and horfe, and all his beastes and cattell, wherfoeuer they were, that they might be sacrificd to Abradatas. But when he sawe Panthea sitting vpon the ground and the dead corps lying by her, he wept for sorowe, and sayd: "Alake good woman, thou truflie and faithfull wife, doe thou thus depart and leave vs alone." And with thofe words he tooke her by the right hand, and therewithall was presented the dead hand of Abradatas, which the Ægiptians
in the battaile had cut of: whiche when Cyrus fawe, hee then lamented more then he did before: and Panthea cried out. Who comforted by Cyrus, kiffed the dead hand, bestowing the fame againe in place, so well as she could, and sayde: "Thus it is chaunced Cyrus, but why do you beholde the dead body? This death I knowe (quoth she) hee hath suffred for my sake, being none of the left aduentures whiche he hath hazarded for me. And perchaunce Cyrus he would have done no leffe for you. For I exhorted him (like a foole as I was) to attempte this aduenture, to thintent he might haue shewed him selfe a frende of worthy remembrance; whiche request he accepted, to pleaure you and me: he hath valiantly bestowed his life and is dead, and I vnhappy caitife that gaue him first counfayle, do fitte here alive." Cyrus for a certayn space holding his peace, powred forth abundance of teares, and then said: "This gentleman (lady Panthea) hath a commendable ende, for he died in victorie; but take thefe furnitures, and adorne him there withall:" for Gobryas and Gadatas were come with riche and costly apparel. Then hee sayde: "Bee sure he shalbe honoured with greater thinges then thefe. A monument also, according to his worthinesse, shalbe erected vpon his graue. Sacrifice shalbe offered, meete for a man fo valiant and puiffaunt. Thou likewyfe shalt not be left comfortles; for in consideration of thy great chaflitie and vertue, I will honour thee and appointe a garrifon to convoy thee into what place thou arte disposed to goe." To whom Panthea sayd: "Be of good chere Cyrus, I wyll not hide from you the place, wherein I am determined to beftowe my selfe." Cyrus hearing her saye, went away pittyng the woman that was bereued of suche a hufbande, and lamenting the man that had lefte suche a wife behinde him, and was like no more to see her againe. But Panthea command-ed her Eunuches to go out of the place, till she had satisfied her selfe with teares, and lamentations for her hufbande: for she prepared to kil her selfe, requiring her nurffe to tarie by her, and commanded her, that when she was dead, she should shroude her and her hufbande in one garment. The nurffe perfuaded the Ladie, with humble wordes and supplications, from her determined death, but she could not preuaile: and when she fawe that her
maistres tooke her woordes in ill parte, she fatte downe and wepte. But Panthea with a fworde, whiche she had prepared long time for that purpose, killed her selfe, and laying her head vpon her husbandes brestte, she yelded from her chast bodie, her innocent ghost. The Nurefe seing that, cried out, and couered them both, as she was commaunded. Cyrus vnderstanding the woman's facte, was amazed, and spedely went to see if she might be holpen. The Eunuches (being three in nomber) seing their maistres dead, they likewyse drewe out their sworde, and killed theimselfes in the place, where they were commaunded to stande. In memorie of which facte, Cyrus errected a noble monument to the perpetuall prayse of chastitie and honest loue. Which (as Xenophon reporteth) remained to his daies, with their names ingrauen in Syrian letters.
THE TWELFTH NOUELL.

Abdolominus is from poore estate, advanced by Alexander the Great, through his honest life, to be kyng of Sydone.

Alexander the mightie and noble Emperour, after he had subdued Darius the Persian kyng: at length came to Sydone, a famous citie, by reason of the auncient fame of the first founders. The fame citie was vnder the gouvernement of Strato, and maintained by the puiffaunce of Darius, who yelding more by force of the people, then by free wil, was thought vnworthy to raigne and rule there. Alexander at the request of his frende Epheftion, willed him to appointe one to be king, whom the citizens should thinke moe worthy of that state. After profers of Epheftion to divers of the yonge gentlemen of that citie, and refufall made of their partes, they alledged that none ought to enjoy the dignitie of their king, but such as were defcended of the royall bloud. Thinking none to be more meete for that state then one Abdolominus, who being of the royall race, for pouertie was inforced to inhabite a little cotage without the citie. His good life was the caufe of his pouertie, as it is to many other: and labouring in his daily trauell, vnderfloode not the brute of the warre that troubled all Afia. Epheftion and the yonge gentlemen repaired vnto him with garmente to garnifhe him like a king, and founde him making cleane his garden, whome they faluted, and faide: "You muft exchange your homelie clothes with these riche robes, wherewith wee here presente you. Wafthe your bodie that nowe is foule and vnclene, take vpon you the courage of a kyng, and in this state (wherof you be worthy) expresse the fame sobrietie and continencie you doe presently vfe. And when you fitte in your regall feate, vfing the authoritie of life and death ouer your subiectes, do in no wise forget the fortune, wherein you were before you were made kyng, ne yet for what purpose you did receiue it. The matter femed to Abdolominus like a dreame, and demaund-ed of them, if their wittes were founde, that did deride him in
that forte. But when he sawe them bynde by othe their doynges to bee of trouthe, he washed him self, and taking the garment, which was purple and golde, went with them into the place. The fame was diuerfly bruted of this facte: some fauoured the caufe, and some did froune against it. But suche as were riche, did re-proue his pouertie and base estate, to thofe that were neare aboute Alexander, which made the kynge to fende for him. And when he had long beholden his manner and order sayd: "Your personage doth not degenerate from the fame of your progenitors, but I would fayne knowe, howe pacient you were in the tyme of your pouertie." "I would to God (quoth Abdolominus) I could beare my prosperitie in lyke cafe now I am kyng. These handes did get that I defired. And hauing nothing, I lacked nothing."

Whiche woordes made Alexander conceiue a good opinion of hym, to whome he restored the riches of the kyng before, and diuers other thinges, taken awaye by the Persians.
THE SCYTHIANS ORATION TO KING ALEXANDER.

THE THIRTEENTH NOUELL.

The oration of the Scythian Ambassadors to Alexander the great, reproving his ambition, and desire of Empire.

TVLLIE in the firfte booke of his Offices, saith, that very miserable, is ambition and desire of honour: and that most men, which be giuen to cupiditie of gouernement, honor and glorie, bee forgetfull of Justice. The truthe of whiche graue wordes, uttreth by a Prince of eloquence, the rude and barbarous Ambassadors of Scythia, in plaine and homelie talke, boldly did pronounce to king Alexander (furnamed Magnus) when he was about to invade their countrie. For when he had within three dayes finished twelue thousand boates, to transporte his armie over the famous ryuer of Tanais, (whiche deuideth Asia from Europa) against the poore Scythians, twenty Ambassadors of the Scythians came to Alexanders campe to speake with hym, to prove if they coulde by woordes withdrawe his entended purpose: Before whome when they were placed, the eldeft of them spake these wordes.

"If the Goddes had giuen thee a bodie according to the immoderate defyre of thy mynde, the whole worlde coulde not be able to holde thee. With one of thy handes thou wouldest touche the Oriente, and with thy other hande the Occidente. And when thou haft gotten that, thou wylt defyre to knowe, where the brightness of the Diuine Maiestie is placed. Thus thou couetest after the thing, thou art not able to receyue. Out of Europa thou marchest into Asia, and out of Asia thou passest into Europa. Afterwarde, if thou dost vanquishe all mankynde, thou must make warre with woodes and Snowes, with Ryuers and wylde beatles. What? dost thou not knowe, that great trees growe long, and yet be rootted out of the grounde in a moment? He is a foole that looketh after the fruite, and doeth not measure the height of the tree wheron it groweth. Take hede left whyle thou dost contente to clymme to the topp, thou fallst downe with the bowes whiche thou dost imbrace. The lion also sometyme is made the foode of the smalste byrdes: and rufet consumeth iron. There is
nothing so firme, that is not in peril of the weake. What have
we to doe with thee? We never touched thy lande. What thou
arte, and from whence thou commest, is it not lawfull for vs to be
ignorauntes, that lie in the waste wooddes? Wee can not be sub-
jecte to any man, and wee defyre not to rule. Wee have certaine
giftes peculiar vnto vs, bicaufe thou shalt not be ignoraunte of the
state of our nation: the yoke of Oxen, the Plough, the Darte, and
the Bowl: those things we vs, both with our frends and against
our enemies. Vnto our frends wee glie the fruictes, gotten with
the labour of our Oxen. And with them in our Bowle, we sacri-
fice wine to the Goddes. Our enemies we strike with the Darte
a farre of, and with the Speare nere at hande. After that sorte in
tyme paste, wee overcame the kyng of Scythia, and afterwirds the
kyng of Media and Persia, and the waye was open vnto vs into
Ægypt. But thou whiche doeft boaste, that thou art come to
persecute theues, art the common thefe of all nations, whereunto
thou makeft thy repayre. The countrie of Lidia thou hafte taken.
Thou haft enjoyed Syria. Thou doeft possesse Persia, and the
Bactrianes bee vnder thy power. Thou doeft goe into India,
and nowe thou extendest thy vnstable and gredie handes vppon
our cattell. What neede haft thou of thofe ryches, whiche doe
make thee so hungrie? Thou art the first of all men whiche with
facietie haft gotten famine, that the more thou haft, the more gred-
dely thou couetest after thinges thou haft not. Doeft thou not
remember how long thou haft stucked about Bactria? And whilsts
thou goest about to bring them in subjection, the Sogdians begin
to revolte. Thus warre doth grow vnto thee of thy victorie. For
be thou never so great, and puissant ouer other, yet there be none
that can indure to be governed by straungers. Passe nowe Tanais,
thou shalt perceive what breadth it beareth, and yet thou shalt
never ouertake the Scythians, whose pouertie is swifter then the
armie, which carieth the foyle of so many nations. For when
thou shalt thinke vs to be farre of, thou shalt see vs within thy
campe, with like swiftnesse we folowe and flee awaye. I heare
that our defertes and voide places, be mocked by the Greecee pro-
uerbes, we couet rather thofe defertes and places vnhabited, then
cities and plentifull foyles. Therefore holde faft thy fortune, for
the is tickle and can not be holden against her will. Folow thou the counfaile that is good, specially whyles the time doth ferue. Bridle thy felicicie, and thou shalt rule it the better. Our countriem-en say, that Fortune is without feete, and that she hath onely handes and wynges, but when she strecheth forth her hand, thee will not suffer her winges to be touched. Finally, if thou be a God thou oughte to gene benefites to mortall men, and not to take away the commodities they haue already: but if thou bee a man, consider that thou art alway the fame that thou arte. It is a foolifhe part to remember those things, and to forget thy felfe. Those people that fele not thy warres, thou maieft ufe as thy frendes. For frendhip is most firme and fiable emonges equall, and those seeme to be equall that haue not vfed force and violence emonges them felues. Beware thou take them not for thy frendes whome thou doest subdue, and bring in obedience. There is no frendhip betwene the maitfer and the seruaunt, and in peace the lawe of Armes is obferued. Beleue not that the Scythians doe bynde frendship with any othe: for they make their othe by obferuation of faith. The maner of the Greekes is to iustifie their factes, by inuocation of their Goddes to witnesse: but wee know, that Religion coniflieth in faith her self. They which do not reuerence to men, do begile the Goddes. Thou haft no neede of him to be thy frende of whose frendship thou flandeft in doubt. Thou haft vs as kepers of Asia and Europa: for we shoulde touche the countrie of Baëtria, were it not for Tanais, whiche deuideth vs. And beyonde Tanais all is ours fo farre as Thracia, and the fame is that Thracia bordreth vpon Macedonia: wee being neighbours, to bothe thy dominions, chose nowe whether thou wylte haue vs frendes or foes."

These were the woordes of the Scythians. Howe be it thefe homelie and plaine aduertifementes, could not diuerte kyng Alexander from his intended enterpryfe, and according to his defired successe, he ouercame them.
THE FOURTEENTH NOUELL.

The wordes of Metellus of mariage, and wiuing with the prayse and dispraise of the same.

In the presence of many learned men of Rome, Metellus surnamed Numidicus, for his victories and triumphe over Iugurtha king of Numidia, a countrie in Africa, in the tyme of his office of Censor, made an Oration before the Romain people, of mariage of wyues, upon Occasion that hee hymselfe, by divers of his frendes, was perfwaded to that state. Against whiche hee used manye vehemente inuectuus and termes, whiche Aulus Gellius omitteth, for that hee was loth to offend (when report thereof should be bruted) the nice eares, and louing mindes of the matrones, and dames of that citie: knowing well that both they, and their succeffours, would not forget reprochefullie to combate with his spirite and fshadowe, when they were not able (being preuented by earthly vermine) by anye meanes to impeche his corps, in tombe fast closed and buried. But when I do remember, howe the same was saide, and also noyfed emongs a bande of heathen foules, whose mindes for want of godly skill, could not digest such hainous blasts, as founded in a time prophane, wherein no sacred voyce of christiian lore was breathed vnto resemb flocke: I call to mynde that now I may in time of grace, right frankly write, without offence to humble state of matrone kinde, in these our daies, inspired with spirit of humble hart, whose eares no taunting talke can gruue: wherefore with blushles face, and vn flaied penne, I meane the wordes, of that well learned wighte, in open audience to pronounce, and by this booke, to fuche elected fort for to declame: but loth for to offende, as one well bet in mariage schole, I muft, a pæna & culpa, forgiuences craue: left some shreude heathen dame (for other doubt I not) doe from her graue Al' Arme crie out: and then to fight with buried ghostes:
METELLUS NUMIDICUS.

my manbode will not ferue, but by and by with posting legges, and flying fast I will retire. But doubtes here be brought foorth, where doubting caufe is none. Gellius threfore in perfone of the vnmaried knight, in wordes right fewe, this sentence of the maried vflate, doth vtter and proclayme.

"O ye Romaines, if we could be without wiues, then all we should wante that griefe. But bicaufe nature hath so prouided, that neithe with them we can liue and passe our time conueniently, nor yet by any meanes be without them satisfied, we ought rather to make preparation, for perpetuall health, then for short pleafure." With which wordes, diuers of the Romaines were diſpleafed, and founde fault with Metellus who (for that he went about, to exhorte the people to mariage) ought not by any meanes, to confesse any griefes and incommodities to be in the fame. But in these wordes he seemed rather to diſlwade and terrifie, then to perfwade and incourage; but contrarely he ought, rather to haue affirmed no forowes and perplexities, to be in wedlocke, and if perchaunce any chaunced to be, they were but light, and eaie to be borne and suffered, which for greater commodities and pleasures, might full well be forgotten, and those that were, happed not through natures vice, but by the default and ill behauior of some maried folke. Howbeit, Titus Caſtritius fuppofed that Metellus fpake well and worthy. "For (said he) a Cenfor ought to fpake like a Cenfor, a Rhetorician like one that profeffed Rhetorike: it is giuen to Rhetoricians, to vfe false fentences, bolde, subtile and captious: if fo be, they be likely, and may by any action moue the hartes of men." Moreover he fayde, "that it was a shame for a Rhetorician, in an euil matter, to leave out any thing vntouched." "But truely Metellus (quoth he) is a holy man inducted with grauitie and fidelitie, and that it was not decent for fo honorable a perfonage, as he was, to fpake any thing to the Romaine people, but that hee thought to be true, and likely to feme true to all men: specially if the he intreated of such a matter, as by daily knowledge, common experience, and frequented vfe of life, might well be comprehended and known. Therfore in gening to vnderftande, a griefe notorious to al men,
he hath deserved by that oration, a fame of a diligent and faithfull man, because (to be short) he easely and redely perfwaded, that a citie can not prosper and continue, without the vfe of Matrimonie, which of all things is most assured and true." This Titus Castritius was a teacher of Rhetorike in Rome, and in the fame citie for declamation and teaching, was in greatest reputation: a man of right great grauitie and autho-ritie: and of the Emperour Adrian, for his vertue and learning well esteemed.
THE FIFTEENTH NOUELL.

Of Lais and Demosthenes.

Phocion a peripatetique Philosopher, in a booke which he made, intituled Cornucopia, writeth this historie of Demosthenes and Lais the harlot of Corinthe, saying: that Lais by reason of her excellent beautie, and pleasaunt favoure, demaunded for the vice of her body, a great summe of money: vnto whom was resorte of all the ryche men of Graecia: but shee would not admitt them to that facte, except they would first giue vnto her, her demaunde. The quantitie of whiche summe was exceding great, whereof rose the proverbe. Non cuiuis homini contingit, adire Corinthum.

Not every man can well attaine
To goe to Corinthe towne.

He that trauelled to Corinthe to Lais, not able to giue and bestowe, that summe vpon her went in vaine. To this woman that noble Philosopher Demosthenes secretly repayred, praying her to giue him leaue: but shee demaunding of him tenne thousand Denarios (amounting very nere to three hundred pounde of our money) aftonied at the wantonneffe of the woman, and discouraged with the great-neffe of the summe, returned backe again, saying: I come not to buye repentaunce fo dere.
C. Fabritius and Æmilius Consuls of Rome, being promised that king Pyrrhus for a somme of money should be slaine (which was a notable enemie to the Romaine state) aduertised Pyrrhus thereof by letters, and of other notable thinges done by the same Fabritius.

When Pyrrhus king of Epirus inferred warres vpon the Romans and was come into Italie, and there had prosperously fought, and atchieued the victory of two or three battailes, wherby the Romanes were brought to great diffresse and most part of Italie had revolted: one Timochares Ambracienfs, a frend of king Pyrrhus, secretely repaired to C. Fabritius then Consul, and told him, if he would giue him a reward, he would poyfon the kinge, which he faid, he mighte easely bringe to passe because his fones, at table waited vpon king Pyrrhus cuppe. Hereof Fabritius wrote to the Senate requiring their aduife. The Senate depeached Ambaffadours to the king commaunding them to faye nothing of Timochares, but to giue the kinge warning circumpeftly to loke wel about him, to preuent such treafon, as by thofe that were nereft him might be attempted. Thus much is written in the historie of Valerius Antiates. But Quadrigarius in the third booke, writeth that it was one Nicias and not Timochares, that went to Fabritius, and that thofe Ambaffadours were not fente by the Senate, but by the Confuls, and that the kinge rendred praiſe and thanckes to the Romanes, restoring to them, all the prifoners, which he had taken. The Confuls that time were C. Fabritius and Æmilius. The tenour of which letters then fent to king Pyrrhus, the faid Cl. Quadrigarius affirmeth to be this. "The Romaine Confuls fend falutations to king Pyrrhus. We for thine injuries, displeaures and wronges iuftlie offended, for the valiaunte stomackes remayninge in vs, do fudie and indeuour like enemies, to continue warres vpon thee: but it feemeth good vnto vs for the loue we beare to our faith, and for common example, to wishe thee well to do, whom by armes we be not able to vanquifie. There came vnto vs one Nicias, thy familiar frende, to
demaunde rewarde of vs, if secretlye he did kill thee: whiche we vtterlye denied, and required him for that fact, to loke for no reward at our hands. Whereupon wee thought good to giue thee advertifement hereof, left if any such thing did chaunce, the cities shoule not thincke that we were priuie to the fact: for wee delite not to fight with gifts, rewards and treafon.—Thou in the meane time, except thou take heede, art like to die: Farewel.” This was the aunciente order amonges the Romaines, that neuer were plea\u2026
THE SEUENTEENTH NOUELL.

A Scholemaister traiterously rendring the noble mens fonnes of Faleria to the hands of Camillus, was wel acquited and rewarded for his paines and labour.

Warres were addressed by the Romaines against the Falifques (a people of Italye, the ruines of the chiefe citie wherof do yet appeare fixe miles from Viterba) and an armye conscribed and sent thither, vnder the conduct of Furius Camillus. The Falifques vpon the approch of the Romaines, were confrayned to retire within their citie, thinking the same to be their most assured refuge. And they to continue their siege, incamped a mile from the citie, and determined throughly to besiege it, which in deede had like to haue beene of verye long continuance except fortune had giuen to the Romaine Captaine, for his tried and well approued valiaunce, victorie in time, which chaunced after this maner. It was a custome amongst the Falifques (obserued also in these oure dayes) to haue their children instructed by one Scholemaister, and him also to vse for their guide and companion in all games and pastimes. Amonges theym there was a Scholemaister, which taughte noble mennes sonnes, who in the time of peace, teachinge those children, and vninge for their exercis to leade them abroade in the fieldes, kepte still that order, for all the warres before the gates, sometime wyth shorte walkes, sometime wyth longer for their disportes: and continuinge varietie of talke wyth his schollers longer then he was wont to do, at length he brought them to the Romaine campe, euen to the tent of Camillus, hoping thereby (by like) to haue beene well welcomed, and liberally rewarded: sayng to Camillus, as detestable woords as the facte was traitorous and wicked: which was in effect—"That he was come with that present vnto him, to yeilde those children into his hands whose parents were the principall of that Citie: and therby knew for certainty that the citie would surrender." Camillus seeing that
fact, and hearing those words, said vnto him. "Thou arte not come (villane) to a people and Captaine, with this thy trayerous offer, semblable to thy selfe. We haue no aliaunce with the Falifques confirmed by compahte or humaine promife, but amitie wherunto nature doth bind vs, is and shall be for euermore betweene vs. Warre so well as peace, hath his law and right: which we haue learned to obferue with no leffe Justice, then constancie. We make no warre against boies, whom wee spare, whensoeuer we invade or take any cities: but against armed men we fight, yea, and against such, as without offence, or prouocation of our partes, affailed the Romaines campe at the siege of the Veiens. Thou haft vanquished them so much as lyeth in thee, with a new kinde of victorie atchieued by treafon: but I will subdue them by pollicie of the Romaines, by vertue, indeuour and armes, even as I did the Veiens." When he had spoken those wordes, he caufed this trayerous cholemaifter to be ftriped fkarke naked, and binding his handes behinde him, deliuered him to the children, with roddes in their handes, to whippe him home to the citie. When hee was in this order retourned, the people of the citie flock'd together to see this fight. Then the magiftrates assembeled in counfaile, vpon this straunge occaftion, and where before they were incenfed with maruailleous wrath and furie, rather defirous of vtter ouerthrow, then peace. Now their minde were quite altered, and peace vnuerfally demaunted. The fidelitie of the Romaines, and iustice of Camillus, both in Forum and Court was celebrated, and by general conformitie, Ambaffadours were fente into the campe to Camillus, and from thence by Camillus fufferance, to the Senate of Rome, of purpose to yelde themfelves to their gouernment, who being brought before the Senate fpake these woordes, "Wee (fathers conscripte) vanquished by you and your Captaine, (where at neither God nor man oughte to be offended) haue yelded our felues to you, thinking that wee shall liue more happie, and better contented vnder your gouernmente, then by our owne lawes and libertyes: a thing that maketh the victor more glorious and praffe worthie, then anye other. By the succeffe of thefe warres, two holfome examples bee manifefted to mankinde. Ye doe preferre fayth in warres before certayne victorie, and we, induced

vol. I.
by that faith, haue of our owne accord, presented victorie unto you. We be at your commandement: sende hither commissi- 
os, to receive our weapons, our pledges and our citie, which standeth with the gates wide open. We hope well, that neither ye 
shall haue occasion to be miscontented with oure fidelitie, nor wee 
offended with your goyernment and Empyre." For which faite 
greate thankes were attributed to Camillus, both by the Falifques 
and Romaynes.

Here appeared the face and true Image of that greate vertue, 
Juftice, wherewith this noble man was truly affected. His noble 
nature was not able to abide any trayterous fact, done by vnna- 
turall Citizens, toward their owne countrie. No vngratitude of his 
owne countrie men, could withdrawe his nature from the zeale 
and loue he bare to his countrie. His condempnation by vnikinde 
Apuleius Saturninus the Tribune, for which he fledde to Ardea, 
could not let or impeach his magnanimitie from giuinge the 
Galles an ouerthrowe when they had sacked Rome, and sharply 
befieged the Capitole: who in his abfence (created Dictator,) by 
gathering together such Romaines as were fledde, vnwares fet 
upon the couetous Galles, as they were in controuerfie for pa- 
mente of a golden summe of money, and thereby restored his 
countrie to libertie. Wherefore worthely might he be 
intitled, with the honourable name of a second Ro-

mulus. For as Romulus was the first builder and 
peopler of that citie, fo was Camillus the 
vindicator and deliuerer of 
the fame.
OF PAPYRIUS.

83

THE EIGHTEENTH NOUELL.

The Historie of Papyrius Prætextatus.

The same historie is written by Cato, in an oration which he made to his souldiours against Galba, contayninge in effecke as foloweth. The Senatours of Rome vfed before this time, to enter into the Senate house with their fones, Prætextatis, that is, in long robes garded about the firktes with purple filke. When the Senate debated of graue and waightie matters, they euer deferred the same till the next day, forbiddinge that thofe causës should not be publifhed, before they were throughly decreed. The mother of this yong gentleman Papyrius, which had been with his father in the Senate house, asked of him, what the fathers had done in the Senate house that day? Papyrius aunswered, that in any wife, he ought not to tell the secretes of the same. The mother more defirous to know then she was before, went about by faire meanes, foule wordes and correftion, to vnderstand the secretes of the Senate, and the caufe why the same were kept fo filente. Wherefore she more earnestlye endeuoured to learne the same of her fonne. The yong man by compulion of his mother, toke occaſiion to inuent a pleaufant and mery lye, in this wife. "Mother (quoth he) the Senate doth deliberate and confult, whether it be more commodious and profitable for the common wealth, that one man should haue two wiues, or whether one wiue shoulde haue two hufbandes." When the old Ladie heard this she was abafhed, and in fearefull wiſe goeth to the other Ladies and matrones of Rome, tellinge them, where about their hufbands did confult. The next day the women flocked together in great trains, and in lamentable wiſe repaired to the Senate, befeching them that one woman might rather be maried to two hufbands, then two wiues to one man. The Senatours entring into the Court, marueyled what toyes were in the womens heads, to make that demaunde. The yong gentleman Papyrius stepped foorth, declaring how im-
portunate his mother was, to know whereupon they consulted the day before, and therefore he devised that fained tale, to pacifie her desire. The Senatours hearing and perceiving his good and honest disposition, greatly commended and extolled his fidelity and witte. Howbeit, they made a lawe that from that time forth, none of their sonnes should come into the house with their father, but onely Papyrius. Who afterwaerdes received the surname of Praetextatus, to honour and beautifie his name, for his notable wisedome in keeping secretes, and holding his peace, in the time of that youthly age.
PLUTARCH AND HIS MAN.

THE NINETEENTH NOUELL.

How Plutarche did beate his man, and of pretie talke touching signes of anger.

Avlus Gellius demaunding of the Philosopher Taurus, whether a wife man could be angrie? Taurus after he had disputed much of that affection, turned to Gellius and saide: "This is mine opinion of the angrie man: but what the Philosopher Plutarche iudgeth thereof, I thincke it not a miffe to tell thee. Plutarche had a bondman which was an vnthrift and wicked verlet, but geuen to learning and to disputation of Philosophie, whom vpon a time he did beate, making him to put of his coate, and to be whipped, for what offence I know not: he began to beate him: the fellow cryed out, that he had deserued no caufe, why he ought to be so beaten. At length in continuance of his beating, he gane ouer his crying complaints, and began to utter earnest and serios woordes, sayeing. 'It was not Plutarche the Philosopher, that beate him: (he said) it was a shame for Plutarche to be angrie, and how he had heard him many times dispute of that vice of anger, and yet he had written a goodly booke thereof:' with manye such woords. 'Why, (quoth Plutarche, with gentle and quiet debating of the matter:) thou lubbor, do I seeme to be angry with thee? Doest thou either by my countenaunce, by my talke, by my colour, or woords, perceyue that I am angrie? Nether mine eyes be fierce, nor my mouth troubled: I cry not out a loude: I chaufe not in rage or fume: I speake no vnfeemely woordes, whereof I take repentaunce: I tremble not. All which be signes and tokens of anger: which pretie notes of that vnfeemely passion, ought to minister to all men, occasion to anoysde that vice.'"
Æsop of Phrygia is not vnworthely demed a wife man. For so much as he admonisareth and persuadeth those things that be profitable, not feuerely or imperiously as Philosophers doe, but by pretie and pleasant fables he indueth the minde of men with holome and prouident instructions. As by this fable of the birdes nest, he pretily and aptly doth premonish that hope and confidence of thinges attempted by man, ought to be fixed and trusted in none other but in him selfe. A little birde (faith he) called the Larke, builded her nest in a Wheate field, and when the Wheate was ready to be ripped, her yonge began to fledge. Therefore flyinge abroade to seeke meate for them, shee warned them that if there fortuned anye newes to be done or spoken in her absence, they should giue diligent heede thereunto, and to tell her when she retourned. Within a while after, the Owner of the corne called a yong man, his sonne, vnto him, (laying) “Doeft thou fee this Wheate now ripe and ready to be cut, lacking nothing but helpe to reape the same? Gette thee therefore to morowe in the morninge (so soone as the daye doth breake) vnto my frendes and neighbours, and praye them to come and helpe me in with this Corne:” and so departed. When the damme retourned, the yonge Larkes in trembling and fearfull wife, peping and chirping about their mother, prayed her to make haft to seeke some other place: for the owner of the Wheat had sent for his frends, to be there the next day by times to haue it in. Their damme bad them to be of good cheere: “If the owner (quoth she) do referre it to his frendes, I am sere the Wheate shal not be cutte downe to morowe, and therefore wee shall not neede to feare.” The next day the damme flew abrode again for foode, and the owner waited at the houre appointed for his frendes. The Sunne was vp, whose beames shone hot, and nothing was done: his frendes came not. Then he said againe to his sonne: “Me thincke
fonne (quoth he) our neighbours be flepers and tarrie long. Goe, call I pray thee, our kinffolke and cosins, that they maye helpe vs to morowe betimes.” Which saying the yong Larkes ones againe afraid, tolde their damme when she returned: the damme still per-swaded them to be of good cheere and not to feare: “For kinffolke in these dayes, be so flacke to do good deedes (quoth she) and to helpe their owne flocke and kinred, that they bee loothe to take paines, specially at so short and fodaine warning: neuerthelesse, faire byrdes, (quoth shee) barksen what shalbe saide againe and tell mee.” The next morning the old Larke went forth againe for food and forage, and the kinffolke and cosins came not, according to the owners request. At length the owner faide to his fonne: “Adieu my frendes and kinfemen: to morow in the morning, bring bither two Sickles, the one for mee, and the other for thy selfe, and wee with our owne hands, wil cut downe this Wheate,” The mother Larke, hearing her yong ones tel this tale at her retourn: “Ye marie my babes (quoth shee) now it is time to be gone: for the thing whereof the owner hath spoken so long, shal now be done in deede, fith he purposeth to do the same himselfe, and trusteth to none other.” Whereupon the Larke toke vp her yong ones, and went to inhabitte in some other place. And the corne accordinglye, was cutte downe by the owner. This fable Æsop reporteth, premonifhing men to beware of lighte hope, and vaine trufe, to be repose in frends and kinffolke. And the same Q. Ennius in his Satyres, very elegantlye in trim verses hath de-scribed the two lafte, whereof worthie to be had in harte and memorie, I haue thought good to remember.

Always fixe faith in breth,
in prompt and ready wise:
This proverbe olde and true,
a sentence of the wise:
The thing do not expect,
by frends for to achieve:
Which thou thyselfe canst doe,
thy selfe for to relieue.
THE TWENTY-FIRST NOUELL.

A merie geffe, uttered by Hanniball to king Antiochus.

Antiochus making great preparation and furniture, to inferre warres vpon the Romaines, decked his armie with Siluer and Golden Ensignes and Pendentes, wherein he had plentie of wagons, chariots and Elephantes with towers, his bande of horsemen glit- tered glorioufalie, with golden bridles, trappers, barbes, and such like. The king beholdinge, in glorious and reioyfing wife, his gaye and beautifull armie: lokked towards Hannibal, and faid: "How faieft thou Hannibal? thinkeft thou that these things be not ynough and sufficient to match with the Romaynes?" Hannibal mocking and deluding the cowardnes and weakenes of his foul- diours, clad in those precious and costlie furnitures, faide. "All these things be ynough and ynough againe for the Romaines, although they were the moft couetous men of the world."

The king vnderfloode Hannibal, that he had meant of the number of his foul'diours, and of their brauerie. But hee meant of the pray and fpoile, which the Romaines should winne and gette.
THE TWENTY-SECOND NOUELL.

The maruelous knowledge of a Lion, being acquainted with a man, called Androdus.

There chaunced to be certaine playes and games at Rome, wher were many monſtruous and cruel beaftes: but amonges all thofe beaftes, the hugeneffe and cruell aspecTes of the Lions were had in greatest wonder, eſpecially of one: which Lion was of an huge and greate bigneſſe, hauinge a terrible voyce, his clawes stretched forth, his brifles and heare vprighte, beholdinge with his fierce and deadly eyes, all the multitude {landing by. There was brought in to fight with the lion amonges al the refl, one Androdus a Dacian borne, the bondman of a great perſonage, of the Confular order, whom the Lion beholding a farre of, fodenly stoode still: and afterwards by little and little, in gentle fort he came vnto the man, as though he had knowen him: Wagging his taile like a Spaniel fawning vpon his maifter, and licked the handes and legges of the poore fellow, which for feare was almoſt dead. This Androdus perceyuing the flatteries of this fierce beaſt, re-couered comforte, and earnestly viewed and marked the Lion. Then they began to enter into mutuall acquaintance, one reioycing at an others meting. Upon which ſtraunge event, the people rayfed great ſhoutes and acclamations: wherupon Androdus was called before the Emperoure, and demaunded the caufe, why that moſt cruell beaſt did in that forte, fawne and fauour him aboue all other. Androdus touſd a maruaylous and ſtraunge historye of the caufe thereof, faying: "If it pleafe your Maieſtie, when my Lorde and maifter did by the office of Proconfull gouerne Africa, I throughe his caufelesſe ſtripes and dailye whippings, was forced to runne awaye. And when I had gotten pardon of the liefetenaunte of that countrie, to remaine there, I withdrew my ſelſe into the deſerts and voide places: and lacking meate to eafe the paine of hunger, I determined byſome meanes, to feke mine owne death. It chaunced about the midde of the day, when the Sunue
was fervent hot, I entred into a Cauze, which was farre from habitation, verye wide and large. Whereunto, within a while after, this Lion reftored, hauing one of his feete bloudie and hurt: for paine whereof, he vtttered much mone and forrow, bewayling the grieue, and anguiſhe of the fore. When I faw the Lion my hart began to quake for feare, but beinge come in, as it were into his owne habitation (for fo it shoulde appeare,) perceyuinge me to go aboute to hide myfelfe a farre of, he like a milde and gentle beast came vnto me, holding vp his foote, reaching the fame to me, as though he defred helpe and reliefe at my handes. Wherewithall I plucked out of his foote a flubbe, which flucke betwene the paws thereof, and taking a litle farue, which I had in my boſome, I thrust it into the bottome of the wounde, and diligently without any further feare, I dryed vp the wound, and wiped away the bloud thereof: wherewith the lion being eafe: defting his foote in my handes, he laye downe to refrefhe him felfe. From that day duringe the space of three yeares, the Lion and I continued together, and lued with like fare: the fatteſt and beft morfels of those beaftes, which he prayed, he did euer bring me into the Cauze: which meate because I had no fire, I rofte in the heat of the Sunne, and did eate the fame with good stomacke. But when I began to waxe weary of that kinde of diet, vpon a time the Lion being abroad, I forfoke the Cauze, and travauling almost the space of three dayes, I was espyed and taken of the foulidours, and brought home to my maister out of Africa to Rome: who immediatlie condempned mee to be devoure of beaftes. And now I perceiue that this lion fithens I lefte his companie is taken, and doth acquite that good tourne and cure, which I fliewed him then." The people hearing the diſcource of this straunge fact, made fuite that the fellow might be pardoned, and fet at libertie: and the Lion by generall voyce was giuen vnto him for reward. Afterwards Androδus caried the Lion abrode the citie in a litle corde, and had muche money giuen him: and the Lion was decked and beautified with flowers, and every man that met them, did vfe to fay:—"This is the Lion the frend of this man, and this is the man, the Phiftion of the Lion."
THE TWENTY-THIRD NOUELL.

A pretie disputation of the philosopher Phauorinus, to perswade a woman not to put forth her child to nurshe, but to nourishe it her-selfe with her owne milke.

It was told to the Philosopher Phauorinus, that the wife of one of his Sectators and scholers was brought a bedde of a sonne. "Let vs go (quoth Phauorinus) to vifite the childwife, and to gratulate the father for the joy of his sonne." When they were entred the house, after hee had faluted the good man, according to the custome, he asked the wife how she did, and prayed the Gods to fende her good footing, and then inquired of her trauel, and painfull panges. When he vnderftode that her trauel was greate, and her bodye weake with watchinge, howbeit somewhat comforted with sleepe which she had taken, he determined to enter into further talke. "I doubt not goffip (quoth he) but that you purpose to nourishe your sonne your selfe." The mother of the woman hearing him say fo, began to pray pardon, and said, that her daughter might not both suftaine paine in the birth, and alfo trouble to nourishe it herselfe. "I pray thee mother, said Phauorinus, to suffer thy daughter to be the whole and intire mother of her owne sonne. What kinde of halfe and vnperefecte mothers be they, which fo fone as they be deliuered do, against nature, by and by thruste the child awaye from them? Can they nourishe with their owne bloud, the thing which they fee not, and wil they not vouchsafe to beflow their milke vppon that, which is now a lyuing creature, crying out before their faces for the mothers helpe, and dutie? O thou vnkinde woman, doeft thou thincke that nature hath giuen thee two breastes for nothinge els, but to beautifie and adornne thy bodie, and not to giue sucke to thy children? In like fort many prodigious and monftruous women, haue dried vp and extinguished that mofte facred fountaine of the body, the educatour of mankinde: not without peril of their persons: as though the fame were a disgracing of their beautie and comlineffe. The like also fome do attempt by
denifies and subtile secretes to extrude theyr conceptions, that the
swelling of their body might not irrigate and wrinkle their faces,
and that their paineful labours and great burdens, do not make
them looke olde in their youthly dayes. And like as it is generally
to be abhorred, that man in his first beginnings, (when he is fash-
ioned and inspired with life, and in the handes of the cunning and
wife woman, dame Nature,) should be killed and slaine: euen so
with not much leffe deftatation it is to be had and compted, when
he is perfec te and borne and the childe of thine owne bloude, to be
depried from his due sustenance. But it is no matter (wil som
say) with whose milke hee be nourced, so hee receive milke and
liue. The like may be faid to that man which is so dull in per-
ceyning the prouidence of nature, that what matter had it been in
whole bodye, and with whose bloude, he himselfe had been formed
and brought into light. Hath not she which nowe respireth, and
with beauty waxeth white and fayre, the same bloude now in her
breastes, which was before remayninge in her wombe? Is not the
wysedome of nature manifest in this, that after the cunning work-
man the bloude, hath framed in the inward parts every body of man,
straight way when the time of byrthe approcheth, the same bloude
infudeth himselfe into the vpper partes, and is readie to nourife
the rudimentes of lyfe and lighte, offeringe acquaintance and
familiar sustinance to the new borne? Wherefore in vaine is not
that report and believe, that like as the force and nature of the
generation feede is able to shape the similitudes of the mind and
body, euen so the qualities and properties of the Milke, do
auayle to like effect. Which thinge is not onelye marked in
men, but also in brute beastes. For if Kiddes be sockled vp
wyth Ewes Milke, and Lambes wyth Goates, the wolfe of thone
will grow more rough and hard, and the heare of the other
more tender and soft. In trees also and fruities, there is for
the most part, a greater force and power in the nature of
the soile and water where they grow, eyther for the pruning
and planting, then there is if firaunge impes and feedes be
gristed and fowen there. And many times you see, that a fruit-
full tree, caired and fet in an other place, decayeth, throughge
the nature of the ground more barren. What reaason is this then,
to corrupt the noble nature of this borne childe, whose body and minde, is well begunne wyth naturall beginninges to infect the the same wyth the degenerate food of straung Milke. Specially if she to whom you shall put forth this childe to give sucke, be eyther a bonde and seruile woman, and (as commonly it chauncheth) of a forren and barbarous nation, be she wicked, ill favoured, whorish or drunken. For divers times without difference, children be put forth to suche Nourfhes, whose honestie and conditions, in the tyme of the putting forth, be utterly vnknowen. Shall we suffer therefore, this our infant to be corrupted with pestiferous milke? Shall we abyde a newe nature and spirite, to bee renued in his mynde and bodye, deriued from that whiche is mofte vile and wicked? Muche like to the same, whiche many tymes we see and wonder, howe diuers chyldren borne of chafle and honeft women, haue bodies and qualities farre discrepant from their honest parentes. Wherefore very trimlie and cunningly Maro folowing Homeres verses, doth fay, speaking of the cruel nature of Achilles:

Sir Peleus that gentle knight,
was not thy father sure,
Nor yet thy dame faire Thetis was
whose grace the Goddes did lure:
The raging Sea, and Stonie rockes,
did bring thee forth to light:
Thy nature is so bloudie bent,
so fierce in cruell fight.

He did not herein reprehende the birth of Achilles, but the nature of the cruell and sauage beaflie that broughte him vp; for he added this of his owne.

And the Hircan Tigres did gie him sucke.

And truely the condicion of the Nourffe, and nature of the milke, dispoeth almoft the greater part of the childes condition, whiche (notwithstanding the fathers feede, and creation of the bodie and mynde, within the mothers wombe) doth nowe in the beginning of his nouriture, configurate and frame a newe disposition in him. Moreover who can faye the contrarie, but that suche women as put their children from them, deliuering them to bee noursed of other,
doe cut of, naye, rather doe wype awayc and extinguyfhe, that bande and increase of mynde and affection, that doeth confociate and ioyne in nature, the parentes towarde their children. For when the chylde is put forth to an other place and remoued from the mothers figte, the vigor and tendernesse of her affection, is by litle and little forgotten, and out of memorie, and the dereft care of her tender babe, groweth to ytter silence. The fending awaye of the chylde to an other Nourice is not mucho inferior to the forgetfulness that chaunceth when death dothe take it awaye. Agayne, the affection, the loue, and familiaritie of the chyld, is prone to her that giueth it fucke. And fo as it is evidently seene in them that be put foorth, the chylde taketh no knoweledge, or desire of the owne mother, that brought it forth. Therefore, when the elementes and beginnings of natural pietye and loue be ones abandoned and defaced, howe foever suche children, in that forte brought vp, shall seeme to loue the parentes, yet for the moft part, it is no pure and naturall affection, but rather a supposed and Civile loue.” Thus this noble Philofopher giueth coun- fayle to euery good mother, not to be afhamed or grieved, to bringe vp her childe with her owne Milke, after her greatest payne past, whom before with her owne bloud, she disdained not to fecde in her owne bodie.
THE TWENTY-FOURTH NOUELL.

Of Sertorius a noble Romaine capitaine.

Like as in a good captaine, chothen out by any prince and monarch, to serue in his warres and exploytes, manhode and valianc is to be desired and wish'd: euen so in the same a politique minde, to forecaffe and preuente, as well the saufetie and good gouernement of his owne charge, as the anoyaunce of the enemie is to be desired. Cicero in his oration Pro lege Manilia, affirmeth fower thinges, mete to be in a Generall or Liutenaunte. That is to faye: Scientia rei militaris, virtus, authoritas, faelicitas, Knowledge of warfare, Manhode, Authoritie, and good Fortune. Knowledge and experience, in choyce of his fouldiours, in trayning the ignoraunt, in lodging the campe, in politique order howe to dispose the Scoutes and watche, in making the approche, and defence of the armie lodged, with other necessarie orders, incident to the fame. In manhode, boldlie to aduenture, warely to retire, paciently to suffer mi forfeiture, hardly to lie, fparely to fare, flourlie to abide stormes and colde weather. In authoritie wifelie to gouerne, gently to speake, iuftly to threaten, deferuedly to punishe, mercifully to forgive, liberally to deuide, and louingly to be obeyed. And in felicitie and good successe, to honour God: to be faithfull to the prince, to preuente the enemy, not to triumpe before the victorie. To be conftant in froward fortune, and coragious in extremitie. Al which and many other, are very mete and requisite in him, that fhalbe put in truft, by his soueraigne Lorde or Ladie, to aduenture the painful charge of a Deputie, General, Liutenaunt, or Captaine. Whereof, or in the chiefest of the fame this noble gentleman Sertorius, a captaine of the Romaine citie, in time of Marius and Sylla, when the citie of Rome were at ciuile diſceotion, had greate skil and knowledge. For besides his experience in the warres (as Plutarche faith in his life) hee was very abfitente from pleafures, and continente in other diſorders, a rare thing in men of his calling. But becaufe I purpofe not to flaye in the full dif-
course of his vertues and qualities, I meane but to touche in this Nouell, so muche as Aulus Gellius (in whom I am now conquer-fant) doth of him make rememhraunce. Referring the studious reader, defirous to know the state of his life and doinges, to the plentifull recorders of such memorable and worthie perfonages: Plutarche de viis ilufririum, and Appianu's de ciuili Romanorum bello. Which beinge Greeke authours, he very eloquently translated in the Latine, thone by Gulielmus Xilander 1561, and theother by Sigifmundus Gelenius 1554. This Sertorius was of a pregnaunt witte, and therewithal! a noble Captaine, very skilfull in the vfe and gouernement of an armye. In distrefle and harde aduen-tures hee pra£tifed for pollicie, to make lies to his fouldiours, to prove if they coulde preuaile. He vfed counterfait letters, to imagine dreames, and to conferre fals* religions, to trye if those things could serue his tourne, in comforting and couraging his fouldiours. Amonges al the fafts of Sertorius, this infuing was very notable and famous. A white Stagge of exceeding beauty and liuely swetenesse, was giuen vnto him by a Lufitanian: He perfwaded euery man, that the fame was delivered vnto him by the Goddes, and how the Goddeffe Diana had inspired that beaft to admonitfe and teache what was meete and profitable: and when he wente about to caufe his fouldiours to aduenture anye hard and difficile exploit: he affirmed, that the Stagge had giuen him warning thereof, which they vniverfally beleued, and willingly obeyed, as though the fame had been sent downe from the Gods in deede. The fame Stagge vpon a time, when newes came that the eneme ye had made incurfion into his campe, amafeed with the haste and turmoile, ranne awaye and hid him selfe in a marifhe harde adjoyning. Afterwardees being fought for, hee was suppos ed to be dead. Within fewe dayes after, tidinges was brought to Sertorius that the Stagge was founde. The meffenger was commanded by him to holde his peace, and threatened to be punished, if he did divulce it. The next day, the same meffenger was ap-pointed fodainly, to bring the Stagge into the place, where he and his frenedes, did confulte together. When they were assembled he tolde them howe the daye after that he had loift his Stagge, he dreamed that he was come againe, and according to his cuftome,
tolde him that was needefull to be done. Then Sertorius making
a signe, to have the order fulfilled, whiche he had geuen the daye
before, by and by the Stagge brake into the chamber. Where-
withall a great shoute was made, and an admiration rayfed of that
chaunce. Whiche credulitie of the barbarous countries, serued
Sertorius tourne in his weightie affaires. A worthy matter
also, is to be remembred of him, that no Souldiour that
euer serued him, of those vncliuile countries (that
tooke his part) did neuer reuolte or forfake
him, although those kinde of
people be mooste
inconstant.
THE TWENTY-FIFTH NOUELL.

Of the bookes of Sybilla.

In auncient Chronicles, thefe things appere in memorie, touchinge the bookes of Sybilla. A ftraunge and vnknowne old woman, repaired to the Romaine kyng Tarquinius Superbus, bearing in her armes nine booke, which the fayde were deuine Oracle, and offered them to be folde. Tarquinius demaunded the price. The woman asked a wonderfull fomme. The king making femblaunce as though the olde woman doted, began to laughe. Then shee gotte fyre in a chafing difhe, and burned three booke of the nyne. She asked the kyng again, if he would haue the fixe for that prife, wherat the kyng laughed in more ample forte, faying: “that the olde woman no doubt did dote in deede.” By and by the burned other three, humbly demaunding the king the like queftion, if he would buye the refle for that price. Wherepon the kyng more earnesflie gaue hede to her requeste, thinking the conftante demaundes of the woman not to be in vain, bought the three booke that remained for no leffe price, then was required for the whole. Therewithall the woman departed from Tarquinius, and was never seene after. Thefe booke were kept in the Capitole at Rome, whereunto the Romanes resorted, when they purpofed to afke counfayle of the Goddes. A good example for wyfe men to beware, howe they defpyfe or negleete auncient booke and monumentes. Many the like in this Realme haue bene defaced, founde in Religious houfes, which no doubt woulde haue conduced great utilitie and profite both to the common wealth and countrie, if they had bene referued and kepte, whiche booke by the ignoraunt, haue ben torne and raifed, to the great griefe of thofe that be learned, and of them that aspire to learning and vertue.
A difference and controversy betwene a master and a scholler, so subtile that the judges coulde not geue sentence.

Divers things be written, whiche although they sem of little importaunce, yet they be wittie and comfortable to recreate honest mindes and deserue to be had in remembraunce. Emongs whiche Aulus Gellius (who reporteth tenne of the former Histories, selected out of his booke De noetibus atticis) remembreth this pretie controversy. In Athenes there was a yong man, called Euathlus, who being desirous to be an Orator, and a pleading Advocate, to the intent he might postulate, according to the accustomed maner of Athenes in those daies, accorded vpon a price, with a renowned Orator named Protagoras, that he should instruct him that arte, for a price agreed vpon betwene them, vpon condicion that the Scholler should pay the one halfe of the money before hande vnto his maister, and the reste at such time as he should prove to be an Advocate, so well instructed, as the first matter, which he did pleade, he should obtaine sentence on his side, and gayne for his labour and industrie. But if sentence were pronounced against hym, he should not be bound to paye the same. Vpon this conclusion, the Maister taughte hym with greate diligence, the vettermoste of his knowledge in that arte. The Scholler againe learned and receyued his teaching, with greate promptitude and readinesse of witte. When Protagoras hadde taught him the vettermost of his knowledge: the Scholler Euathlus, to defraude hym of the reste of his money, determined never to be Advocate, whose craft Protagoras perceiving, cited him by writte, to appeare before the judge, to aunswere the reste of the bargaine. When they were both come in the Judges presence, Protagoras spake to his scholer in this wyse: “Euathlus, the bargaine betweene vs, thou canst not chosse but confesse and acknowledge, whiche in effect is this. It was agreed that I shoulde teache thee, the arte of pleading, and in the first matter whiche
thou diddeft pronounce and sentence giuen on thy parte, thou shouldest paye me the other halfe of the money (for the first moi- tie I receiued before hande) and howe to auoyde the satisfac- tion thereof (although thou knoweft, that I have full well deferued it) thou to defraud me of my duetie, refueft to be an Aduocate. But I wil tell thee, this thy determination is but vayne and frustrate: for I haue intangled thee in suche nettes, as thou canst not escape: but by one meane or other thou shalt be forced to pay mee. For if the Judge doe condempne thee, then maugre thy head thou shalt be confrayned: and if contrariwyfe sentence be giuen on thy fide, thou shalt be likewyfe bounde to paye me, by thy verie conce- naunt, fithens thou art bounde, when thou pleadeft first, and fentence should be giuen in thy behalfe. Doe nowe then what thou lifte, for in fine thou shalt be forced to paye me, in defpite of thy teethe." All the affiftantes held with Protagoras, affirming his fuite to be very reaonable. Notwithstanding Euathlus with a bolde spirite, aunfwered for him felfe in this maner: "Sir Protago- ras, it femeth vnto you that I am conviceted, but faye a whyle and giue me leave to speake: and then you fhall perceiue in what wyfe I will confounde your argument. Here you haue brought your action againft me, wherof I trufte vpon my reaonable answere be- fore the Judges, to be difcharged. For if by this your pleading, by circumftaunces and arte of an Oratour, which you haue vied in all your discours, the matter shall fall fo out as sentence be giuen on your fide, then the bargayne made betwene vs is voyde and of none effecte, bicaufe I losing the profite of my firfte pleading: wherein by our agrement fentence should be giuen on my behalfe, the fame bargaine is not accomplisht. For you should be payde the moitie of the money behinde, with that commoditie, which I did gayne by my firfte pleading: for whiche caufe, there is no reaon but I mufte be discharged of your demande." After this debating of the matter, the Judges wayed with argumentes of both parts whiche femedfo doubtfull vnto them, that knowing not howe to giue fentence, they fufpended the proceffe.

The fame Aulus Gellius, reciteth an other lyke queftion, whiche hee referreth to Plinie, as the firfte authour thereof. There was a lawe (fayeth hee) in a certayne citie, that what fo euer hee were,
that committed any valiaunte facte of armes, the thyng that he
demauended, whatsoeuer it were, shoulde be graunted vnto him. It
chaunced that a certayne perfone did this worthy acte, and re-
quird that a man's wyfe (whom he derely loued) shoulde be giuen
vnto hym: whiche wyfe by force and vertue of the lawe, was ac-
corildy deliuered. But afterwardes the man, from whome his
wyfe was taken, did the lyke facte, and demaundinge his wyfe to
be redeliuered vnto hym agayne, sayde vnto hym that had her: "If
thou wilt obserue the lawe, thou must of force deliuer vnto me, my
wyfe, but if thou do not like the lawe, thou oughtest yet to render
her vnto me, as mine owne." The other aunswered hym in like
forte: "If thou obserue the lawe, this woman is myne,
for I haue first wonne her by the lawe: but if thou
do not approue the lawe, thou haft no right
to demaunde her, shee nowe being myne."
THE TWENTY-SEVENTH NOUELL.

Seleucus king of Asia, gave his wife to his owne sonne in mariage, being his mother in lawe: who so frequently did love her, that he was like to die, whiche by a discreete and wyse invention, was discovered to Seleucus by a Philsition.

Although the wyfe Philosopher Plutarche, elegantly and briefely describeth this historie, in the life of Demetrius: yet bicause Bandello aptlye and more at large discourse the fame, I thought good to apply my pen to his stile. Who faith that Seleucus king of Babylon, a man verie victorious in battaile, was amongs the successors of Alexander the great, the moste happie and fortunate: He had a sonne called by his father's name Antiochus. After the deceafe of his wife, his sonne increased and gave great hope of valiaunce in future time, to become a valiant gentleman worthy of suche a father. And being ariued to xxii. yeres of age, it chanced that his father fell in love with a very faire yonge gentle woman, descended of great parentage (called Stratonica) whom he tooke to wife, and made her Queene, and by her had one sonne. Antiochus seing his mother in lawe, to be besides her great beautie) a curteous and gentle Lady, began to be very amorous of her, whose hart was set on fire (without apparent shew) that incredible it is to express the love that he bare her. And yet he thought that love to be unnaturall bicause she was his father's wife, and therefore durt not discouer it to any man. And the more secrete he kept it the more the heate began to boile and consume him. But bicause he sawe that love had fixed so deepe footing, that he was not well able to retire, hee determined after long sorow and great turmoile, to seke some quiet hauen to refle his weather beaten barke, that had ben toffed with the waues of penfife and forowfull cogitations. His father had many kingdomes and Provinces innumerable vnder his Empire. At whose handes Antiochus craued licence to visit some of them for his diporte and recreation, of purpose to proue if he could auoide that unfeasionalbe love, wherewith his hart was suppreffed. But he was no
With Faire Stratonica.

foner out of his father's house, but his harte was vexed with greater tortenates then before, being depruied from the fight of faire Stratonica, whose presence did better content him, then all the pleasures and sportes of the worlde. Neuerthelesse, desirous to vanquish his indurate affections, he continued abroade for a certaine time, during whiche space, vnable to quenche the fire, he led a more defolate and troublesome life, then he did before. In the end victorius loue toke him prifoner and caried him home againe to his father's house. Who seing the great loue that his father bare to his wife, and the joyfull tyme that hee spent with faire Stratonica, transported into many carefull panges, many times complained to him selfe in this wife. "Am I Antiochus the sonne of Seleucus? Am I he that my father loueth so well, honoreth so much, and eftemeth better then al his realmes and dominions? Alas if I be Antiochus in deed, the sonne of so louing a father, where is the dutifull loue, and bounden reverence that I ought to beare vnto him? Is this the dutie of a sonne towards his father? Ah wretche and caifte that I am. Whether hath grosse affection, vayne hope, and blynde loue caried me? Can loue be so blynde? Shall I be so voyde of fence, that I know not my mother in law from an other woman who loueth me no leffe, and entertaineth me so wel, as if she were mine own mother, that laboured with painful panges, to bring me into light? Which being true, as it is most true, why then do I loue her? nay rather more then loue her. Why do I feake after her? What meane I to hope for her? Why doe I precipitate so fondlye into the snares of blynde and deceitfull loue, and into the trappe of deceitfull hope? Can I not perceuve that these desyres, these vnflayed appetites, and vnbrayeded affections, doe procede from that whiche is dishonest? I see well enough that the waye I take leadeth mee into great inconuenience. And what reproche should I sustayne, if this vreasonable loue were made common to the world? Ought not I rather to suffer infamous death, then to see my father depriued of suche a wyfe, whom hee so derely loueth? I wyll giue ouer this vnemely loue, and reverting my mynde to some other wyght, I wyll accomplishe the dutie of a good and louinge sonne towards his father." Reaefoning thus with hym selfe, hee determyned wholly to giue ouer his en-
And hée had no soner purposed so to doe, but fodaynly the beautie of the Lady appeared, as it were in a visson, before the face of his mynde, and felte the flames to growe so hotte, as hée, vpon his knees, craued a thousande pardons of the louing God, for the abandoning of his gentle enterpryfe. And therewithal contrarie imaginations began to ryfe, whiche so contended with mutuall resistauance, as they forced hym thus to faye. "Shall not I loue this Ladie, because shee is my fathers wife? Shall not I proseecute my suite, for all that shee is my mother in lawe? Ah cowarde, fayntharted, and worthy to bee crowned a Prince of follye, if therefore I should giue ouer my former mynde. Loue prescrib-eth no fuche lawe to her futers as pollicie doth to man. Loue commandeth the brother to loue the fitter, loue maketh the dough-ter to loue the father, the brother his brothers wife, and many times the mother, her fonne in lawe: whiche being lawfull to other, is it not lawful to me? If my father being an old man, whose nature waxeth cold, hath not forgotten the lawes of loue, in louing her whom I loue: shal I being a yong man, subieect to loue, and inflamed with his paffions, be blamed for louing her? And as I were not blame worthy, if I loued one that were not my fathers wife, so must I accuse Fortune, for that shee gaué her not to wyfe to an other man, rather then to my father, bicauze I loue her, and would have loued her, whose wyfe so euer she had bene. Whose beautie (to say the trouth is fuch) whose grace and comelineffe so excellent, that shee is worthy to be receuied, honoured, and worshipped of all the worlde, I thinke it then convenient for me to pursue my purpose, and to serue her aboue al other." Thus this miserable louver, trauering in feueral mindes, and deluding his own fannie, chaunged his mynde a thousand times in an hower. In thende, after infinite difputations to him felfe, he gauè place to reafon, considering the great disconuenience that would infue his disor- dinate loue. And yet not able to geue it ouer: And determining rather to die, then to yelde to fuch wicked loue or to discouver the fame to any man. By little and litle he confumed, as fleting snow against the warme Sone: wherwith he came to fuche feble state, that he could neither spee, nor eate, and was compelled to kepe his bedde, in fuche wyfe, that with superfluous paine he was brought
to marueylous debilitie. Whiche his father perceiving, that louted him very tenderly, conceiued great griefe and sorrow: and sent for Eraeftratus, (which was a very excellent Phisition and of great estimation) whom very instantly he praied diligently to loke vnto his sone, and to prooude for him such remedie as was conuenient for the greatnesse of his disease. Eraeftratus vewyng and beholding all the partes of the yonge gentlemans body, and perceiuing no signe of sickenes, eyther in his vrine or other accident, whereby hee coulde judge his body to be diseased; after many discouerfes, gaue judgement, that the same infirmitie proceeded from some passion of the mynde, whiche shortelye woulde coffe hym his life.

Whereof he aduertisfed Seleucus. Who louing his sone after a fatherly maner, and spesiallye, because he was indued with vertue and good condicions, was afflicted with vnspakeable griefe. The yonge gentleman was a marueilous towarde youth, so actiue and valiaunte as anye that liued in his tyme, and therewithall verie beautifull and comely. Whiche made hym to be beloued of all men. His father was continuall in his chamber, and the Queene her selfe oftentimes visitid him, and with her owne handes ferued him with meates and drinkes: whiche bicaufe I am no Phisition, I knowe not whether the same did the yong man any pleafure, or whether it did him hurt or good. But I suppose, that her sight was joyfull vnto hym, as of her in whom he had placed his comfort, all his hope, quietnesse, and delight. But beholding before his eyes so many times the beautie of her whome so greatly he desered to enjoye, hearing her speake that was the caufe of his death, and receiuing seruice of meates and drinkes at her handes whome he louted better then the balles of his eyes: vnto whom he durft not make any request or prayer, whether his grief surmounted all other, and therefore continually pined and confumed, I thinke it of reason to be beleued. And who doubteth but that he feling him self to be touched with those her delicate handes, and feing her to fitte by him, and so many times for his fake to fetche so many slyghes, and with suche swete woordes to bidde hym be of good chere, and that if he wanted any thing to tell her, and praied him with pleafaunt woordes, to call for that he
lacked, and that for his sake she would gladly accomplish what he desired: who doubteth I say, but he was marnelously tormented with a thousande cogitations? Nowe conceiuing hope, and now dispaire, and still concluding with him selfe, rather to dye then to manifesfe his loue. And if it bee a griefe to all yonge men, (be they of neuer so meane and base condicion) in theyr youthlye tyme, to lofe their lyfe, what shal we thynke of Antiochus, beyng a yonge man of frese and flourifhyng age, the fonne of a ryche and mightie kyng, that looked if she escaped after the death of his father to bee heyre of all, did willingly craue death, of that small diseafe: I am afured that his forowe was infinite. Antiochus then beaten with pitie, with loue, with hope, with defyre, with fatherly reuerence, and with a thousande other thynges (lyke a shyppe tossed in depeft Seas) by litle and litle beganne to growe extremely sicke. Eraffistratus that sawe his bodye whole and sounde, but his minde greuoufly weakened, and the fame vanquished with fundrie passions. After hee had with him selfe con sidered this straunge cafe, hee for conclusion founde out that the yonge man was sicke of loue, and of none other cause. Moreouer he thought that many times, wife and graue men, through ire, hatred, dïdaine, melancholie, and other affections, could easely faine and dissemble their passions, but loue if it be kept secrete, doth by the clofe keping therof, greater hurt then if it be made manifest. And albeit that of Antiochus he coulde not learne the cause of his loue, yet after that imagination was entred into his head, he purpoed to finde it out by continual aboade with him, and by great diligence to obferue and marke all his actions: and aboue all to take hede to the mutacion of his poules, and whereupon their beating did alter. This deliberation purposed, he fat downe by the bed fide, and tooke Antiochus by the arme, and helde him faste where the poules ordinarily do beate. It chaunced at that very instant, that the Queene Stratonica entred into the chamber, whom so fone as the yonge man sawe comming toward him, sodainly the poule which were weake and feble, began to reuie through mutation of the bloud. Eraffistratus feling the renforcing of the poule, to prove howe long it would continuwe, he remoued not at the comming of the Queene, but still helde his
fingers upon the beating of the poulces. So longe as the Queene continued in the chamber, the beating was quicke and liuely, but when she departed, it caeased, and the wonted weakenes of the poulces retorned. Not long after the Queene came againe into the chamber, who was no soner espied by Antiochus, but his poulces receiued vigor, and began to leape, and so still continued. When she departed the force and vigor of the poulce departed also. The noble phisition seing this mutation, and that still it chaunced vpon the presence of the Queene: hee thought that he had founde out the cause of Antiochus sickene:fe: but he determined better to marke the same the next daye, to be the better assured. The morowe after, Erafistratus fatte downe againe by the yonge gentleman and took him againe by the arme, but his poulce made no motion at all. The king came to see his sonne, and yet for all that his poulces were still: and beholde the Queene came no soner in, but sodainly they reuiued, and yelded suche liuely mouing, as if you woulde haue sayde:—"Yonder is hee that fetteth my harte on fyre. Beholde where she is that is my life and death."—Then Erafistratus was wel assured and certaine that Antiochus was feriously inflamed with his mother in lawe, but that shame constrained him to conceale the hotte firebrandes that tormented him, and to kepe them close and secrete. Certified of this opinion, before he would open the matter, he con- sidered what way were best to gene knowledge therof to king Seleucus. And when he had well debated of this matter, he deuised this waye: hee knew that Seleucus loued his wife beyonde measure, and also that Antiochus was so deare vnto him as his owne life. Whereupon he thus sayde vnto the kyng. "Noble Seleucus, thy sonne is affetteth with a greuous maladie, and that (which is worse) I deme his sickene:fe: to be incurable." At whiche woordes, the forowefull father began to vter pitifull lamentation, and bitterly to complayne of Fortune. To whome the Phisition sayde.—"If it pleafe you (my Lorde) to vnderstande the occasion of his diseafe, this it is: The maladie that affeteth and languisheth your sonne, is Loue: and the loue of such a woman, which except he enjoy, there is no remedie but death." "Alas (quoth the kinge, weeping with bitter teares) and what woman is
fhee, but that I maye procure her for him, which am kinge of all Asia, and am able with intreatie, money, giftes, or other pollicie whatsoeuer, to make her obediente and willinge to my fonnes request. Tell me onely the name of the woman, that I maye prouide for my fonnes health, yea, though it coste me all my goodes and realme to, if otherwise fhee cannot be gotten: for if he die what shal I doe with my kingdom."

Whereunto Erafistratus aunfwered. "If it like your grace, your fonne is in loue with my wife, but because the loue of another man's wife seemeth vnto him vnreasonaable, he dareth not to manifeat it for shame, but rather witheth to die, then to open his minde. Howbeit, I by certaine euidente signes, do well perceiue it." When Seleucus hearde thefe words, he said. "O Erafistratus! thou being so worthie a man, to whom fewe in goodnesse and humilitie be comparable, so deare and wel beloued of mee, and beareth the bruite to be the very hauen and harborage of wifedome, wilt thou not faue my fonne, which is a yonge man, nowe vpon the floure of his youth, and moost worthy of life: for whom the empyre of all Asia is worthyly referued? O Erafistratus! the fonne of thy frend Seleucus, is thy king, who through loue and silence, is at the poyncts of death, thou seest that for modestie, and honestie sake, at this his laft and doubtfull passage, he had rather chose to die, then by speaking to offend thee, and wilt thou not helpe him? This his silence, this discretion, that his reuerence which he sheweth, oughte to moue thee to compasion. Thincke my wel beloued Erafistratus, that if he loue ardently, that he was forced to loue: for vndoubtedly, if he could not loue, he would doe the beft he could not to loue: yea, and with all his endeauour to refist it: but who is able to prescrib lawes to loue?

Loue I knowe, not onelye forceth men, but also commaundeth the immortal Gods: and when they be not able to refist, what can man's pollicie preuaile? Wherefore, who knoweth not what pitie mine owne deare Antiochus doth deferue? who being constrained, can none otherwise do: but to be silent in loue, is a moost euident signe of a noble and rare vertue. Dispoze thy minde therefore, to helpe my fonne: for I affure thee that if thou do not loue the life of Antiochus, Seleucus life must needes be hated of thee:
he cannot be hurt, but I likewise must be touched with griefe.” The wife Phisition, feing that his advise came to passe as he thought before, and that Seleucus was so instanct vpon him for the health of his sonne: the better to proue his minde and his intention, spake vnto him in this wise. “It is a common saying, my moft dradde Soueraigne Lord, that a man when he is whole, can giue to him that is sicke and weake, very good counfel. You perfwade me to giue my welbeloued wife to another man, and to forgoe her whom I mofte fervently doe loue, and in lackinge her, my life alfo must faile. If you do take from me my wyfe, you take with her my life. Doubtfull it is my Lord, if Antiochus your sonne were in loue with the queene Stratonica, your graces’ wyfe, whether you would be so liberall vnto him of her, as you woulde that I should be of mine.” “I would it were the pleASURE of the Gods (fodenly aunswered Seleucus) that he were in loue with my beft beloued Stratonica, I sweare vnto thee, by the reverence that I have always borne to the honourable memorie of my father Antiochus, and my grandfather Seleucus: and I sweare by all the sacred Gods, that freelye and forthwith, I would render her into his hands (althouge the see be the dearest beloued vnto mee,) in suche wife as all the worlde shoulde know what the dutie of a good and louing father ought to be to such a sonne, as is my intirely beloued Antiochus: whoe (if I bee not deceiused) is mofte worthie of all helpe and succour. Alas! this is a great vertue, in concealing that notable passion as an earnest affection of loue: and is it not worthie to be conferedate to eternall memorie? Is he not worthie of all helpe and comfort? Doth hee not deferue to be pitied and lamented of all the worlde? Trulye he is worse then a cruel enemie, naye he is rather more fierce and vnnatural then a fauage beast, that at such moderate behauiour as my sonne vfeeth, wil not take compassion.” Many other wordes the good father spake, manifestly declaring, that he for the health of his sonne, would not onely flicke to beftowe his wife, but also willingly his lyfe for his preferuation. Wherefore the Phisition thought it not good any longer to kepe secrete the cause, but toke the king aside, and saide vnto him in this wyfe. “The health of your sonne (my deare Lorde and Soueraigne) is not in my handes, but the
fame resteth in you, and in your wife Stratonica: whom (as I, by certaine signes doe manifestly know,) he ardentlie doth loue. Your grace now doth knowe from henceforth what to do, if his life be dere vnto you." And telling the king the maner of his loue, he joyfully toke his leaue. The king now doubted but of one thing, which was how to perfwade his fonne to take Stratonica to wife: and howe to exhorte his wyfe, to take his fonne to hufbande. But it chaunced for diuers caufes, that easelye ynowh he perfwaded them both. And perchaunce, Stratonica made a good exchaunge, in taking a yong man, to forfaie him that was olde. After Seleucus had made the accord betwene his wife and his fonne, he caufed al his armie to assemble, which was very great: to whom he saide in this maner. "My dere and louinge fouldiers, which fith the death of Alexander the great, haue (with mee) achiued a thousande glorious enterpryses: I thinke it meete and conueniente that yee be partakers of that which I purpose to bringe to paffe. Ye doe knowe that vnder mine Empyre, I have lxxi. kingdomes, and that I beinge an olde man, am not able to attende so greate a charge: wherefore (louinge companions) I purpose to deliver and ridde you from grievance of idlenesse, and my selue from trouble and toyle, referuing to mee onely so much as lyeth betwene the Sea and the riuer Euphrates. All the rest of my dominions I giue to my fonne Antiochus, vpon whom in mariage, I haue bestowed my wife Stratonica, which thinge ought to contente you, because my will and pleasure is such." And when he had tolde them the loue and sicknes of his fonne, and the difcrete deuife of the gentle Phisitio, in the presence of all his armie, the mariage was celebrated betwene Stratonica and Antiochus. Afterwards he crowned them both kynges and Queene of Asia, and with royall pompe and triumpha, the defired mariage was confummate. The armye hearing and seing these things, very highly commended the pietie of the father towards his fonne. Antiochus then continued with his welbeloved wife in ioy and quietnes, liuing together in great felicitie. This was not hee that for matters of ΑΕgipt did make warres with the Romaines: but he that onely inferred warres vpon the Gallatians, which out of Europa passed into Asia, out of which
countrie hee chasied them, and ouercame them. Of this Antiochus came Seleucus, which was father of Antiochus surnamed the great, that attempted very notable warres against the Romaines, and not his great grandfather, that maried his mother in law. Finally this Seleucus (of whom I recompt this historie) by giening his wife to his sonne, did accomplishe a miraculous act, and worthy (in deede) of sempiternall remembrance, and greatlye to bee commended therefore, who although he had achieved infinite victories ouer his enemies, yet there was none of them all fo great as the victorie of himselfe, and his passions. For certainly Seleucus did van-quish his owne appetites, by depriving himselfe of his wife, whom hee loued and esteemed, aboue all worldly things.
Of the straunge and beastlie nature of Timon of Athens, enemie to mankinde, with his death, buriall, and Epitaphe.

Al the beastes of the worlde do applye theimselfes to other beastes of theyr kind, Timon of Athens onely excepted: of whose straunge nature Plutarche is afontied, in the life of Marcus Antonius. Plato and Ariostophanes do report his marueyous nature, because hee was a man but by shape onely, in qualities hee was the capitall enemie of mankinde, which he confessed frankly vterly to abhorre and hate. He dwelt alone in a litle cabane in the fieldes not farre from Athenes, seprated from all neighbours and company: he never wente to the citie, or to any other habitable place, except hee were constrainyed: he could not abide any mans company and converfation: he was never seen to goe, to any mannes house, ne yet would suffer them to come to him. At the same time there was in Athenes another of like qualitie, called Apemantus, of the very same nature, differente from the naturall kinde of man, and lodged likewise in the middes of the fields. On a day they two being alone together at dinner, Apemantus faid vnto him: "O Timon what a pleafant feasf is this, and what a merie companie are wee, being no more but thou and I." "Naie (quoth Timon) it would be a merie banquet in deede, if there were none here but my selfe."

Wherein he shewed how like a beaft (in deede) he was: for he could not abide any other man, beinge not able to suffer the company of him, which was of like nature. And if by chaunce hee happened to goe to Athenes, it was onelye to speake with Alcibiades, who then was an excellente Captaine there, wherat many did marueile: and therefore Apemantus demaunded of him, why he spake to no man, but to Alcibiades. "I speake to him sometymes, said Timon, because I know that by his occasion, the Atheniens shall receive great hurt and trouble." Which wordes many times he told to Alcibiades himselfe. He had a
garden adjoyning to his house in the fields, wherein was a Figge tree, wherupon many desperate men ordinarily did hange themselves: in place whereof, he purposed to set vp a house, and therefore was forced to cutte it downe, for which cause hee went to Athenes, and in the markette place, hee called the people about him, saying that hee had newes to tell them: when the people vnderfloode that he was about to make a discourse vnto them, which was wont to speake to no man, they marueilled, and the citizens on euery parte of the citie, ranne to heare him: to whom he faide, that he purposed to cutte downe his Figge tree, to builde a house vpon the place where it stoode. “Wherefore (quoth he) if there be any man amonges you all in this company, that is disposed to hange himselfe, let him come betimes, before it be cutte downe.” Hauing thus bestowed his charitie amonges the people, hee retourned to his lodging, wher he liued a certaine time after, without alteration of nature; and because that nature chaunged not in his life time, he would not suffer that death should alter, or varie the same. For like as he liued a beastly and chorlifh life, euen so he required to haue his funerall done after that manner. By his laft will, he ordeined himselfe to be interred vpon the sea shore, that the waues and surges might beate and vxe his dead carcas. Yea, and that if it were possible, his desire was to be buried in the depth of the Sea: causing an Epitaphe to be made, wherin was described the qualities of his brutifhe life. Plutarche alfo reporteth an other to be made by Calimachus, much like to that which Timon made himselfe, whose owne foundeth to this effect in Englishe Verfe.

My wretched catife dayes,
expired now and paff:
My carren corps intered here,
is fad in grounde:
In wa terme waues of swel-
ing Sea, by surges caft,
My name if thou defire,
The Gods thee doe confounde.
THE TWENTY-NINTH NOUELL.

The marriage of a man and woman, hee being the husband of xx. wiues: and shee the wife of xxii. husbands.

Men commonly do reprowe the honour of widowes, becauf e they being twife or thrife wedded, doe marrie againe: and albeit by outward apparence, they which doe blame them feeme to haue reaion, yet no man ought to judge the secrecie of the hart. Mariage is holy and ought be permitted, and therfore by any means not to be reproued. Although it cannot be denied, but that the chaft life is moft perfefte, notwithstanding, that perfection in nothing doth diminish the other. The widowe marrying againe doth not offende God by mariague, and to the world she committeth the left faulte. And becauf e manye olde and aunciente widowes, in these daies, may not after three or fower mariages be dismaied and terrified from that state, I will recite an Historie, authour of which is S. Hierome, in an Epiftle Ad Gerontiam viduam de monogamia, whom for his holines and vertue, wee ought to beleue. It is also pretely set forth by Pietro Messia de Seuiglia, an excellent authour, a gentleman of Spaine, in the 34 Chapter of the first parte of his worke, called La Selua di varie Lezizioni. S. Hierome sayth, that in the time of Pope Damasus, hee sawe and knew in Rome, one woman lawfully maried to xxii. men, and was the widowe of xxii. husbands: there was alfo a man which had had xx. wiues, and was then the widower of the xx. Both which being free, and of equall state and condition, they made suite one to other: and that either of them might prowe whether should be the victor, in buryinge ech other, they maried together, which mariage was in great admiration amonges the Romaines: who mufing which of them should die firft, promifed that at the funeall, they would beautie the corpses, both with their presence, and alfo with tokens of victorie. It chaunced (fore againft her will I dare say) that the woman died firft. At the celebration of whole burial, all the Romaine husbands laied their heads together, howe they mighte
exornate and garnish the funeralles. They concluded, to goe before the corpes with Laurel garlands vpon their heads, singeing verses of praise for the obtaining of such a victorious conquest. Now where the women went, I cannot tell: for I finde written, that populus totius urbis præcedebat feretrum; wher populus, as I take it, signifieth the whole route of men and women. And yet I thinke womens' hartes coulde scarce aforde to goe before: therefore I thinke they came behinde like mourners, bearinge braunches without leaues, their beades in their handes, praying for all chriſten foules. But giuing women leave to mourne for such an ouerthrow, I woulde wiſhe all my frendes that be widowes, to folow the noble Romaine matrone and widowe called Annia, who (when her frendes and familiers, exhorted her to marie againe, because She was yong and beautifull) aunswearèd that she would not. “For, quoth she, if it be my fortune to haue a good hufband, as I had before, I shall still be afraid, lest death shoulde take him away: but if it be my chaunce to matche with one that is euill, howe can I be able quietly to beare that, hauing had so good a hufbande before.” Declaringe thereby, that being ones well matched, great heede ought to be taken, how to chose the nexte, leaſte in making hafte choife, leaſure for repentanz should folow.
A QUESTION OF SALADINE

THE THIRTYETH NOUELL.

How Melchisedech a ieue, by telling a pretie tale of three kinges, faued his life.

Saladine, whose valiaunce was so great, that not onely the fame from base estate aduaunced him to be Souldan of Babilon, but alfo thereby hee wanne diuers victories ouer the Saracene kinges and christians: who throughe his manifolde warres and magnificent triumphes, haung expended al his treasure, and for th'execution of one exploite, lackinge a great summe of money, knewe not where to haue the fame fo redily as he had occasion to impoy it. At length he called to remembraunce a rich ieue named Melchisedech, that lent out money for interest in Alexandria, whose greedie and couetous nature was such, that with his good will he would not do it, and to force him the Souldan was very loth. Howbeit, compelled by necessity, he cast his wits about him to finde a meanes how the ieue might serue his tourne, and thereupon founde out a sleight and waye by a colourable force. Who causing the ieue to be called before him, intertained him familiarly, making him to fit downe besides him, and saide to him these words. "Sir, I do learne by report of diuers, that you are verye wife and well learned in thinges touching God, for which cause I would gladly know of you which of the three lawes you jude to be moft sincere and true: the Jewishe law, the Saracene law, or the Christiante lawe?" The Jewe which in deede was verye wife, perceiued wel that Saladine went about to intrappe him in wordes, thereby to raife some quarell against him, and thought that it was not good for him to praife one of thofe lawes more then another, lefte Saladine mighte take aduauntage of him. Wherefore, to make a wife and discrete aunswere that he might not be ouer shotte, he sharpened his wittes, and fodainly came into His remembraunce this aunswere. "My Lorde, the question which you haue propounded is excellent, and to declare vnto you that which I knowe, I mufte tell you a tale, the better to open my meaninge, which if
it shall please you to heare, is this. I doe remember (if I be not deceived) that many times I have heard tell, how vpon a time there was a Noble man which was very rich, and had amongst his other treasures, a verye beautifull ringe of great price and estimation: which for the valour and beautie, hee was very defirous perpetually, to leave vnto his successeours: willing and ordeining that the fame sonne which should haue that ring by the gift of his father, after his decease, should be taken and reputed for his heire, and should be honoured and magnified of the refte as the chiefest. He to whom the fame ring was left, obseruued semblable order in his posteritie, and did the like that his predeceffor had done before him. In short time, this Rynge succeed from hand to hand to many successeours. And last of al it came to the hand of one that had three goodly sonnes, vertuous and very obedient to their father, who loued them all indifferently and in equall maner, which knowing the order for the disposition of that Ring, curious to be best esteemed and beloued, euery of them prayed his father so well as feuerally they could, (which then was aged) that when hee died he would giue him the Ring. The good man which loued one no better then another, knew not which of them to chofe, to whom he might dispofe it, and thought best to promife the fame to euery of them to fatiffie all three. Secretely he procured an excellent Goldsmith to make two other Rings, which accordinglye were made so like vnto the first, as the owner himselfe vnnethes knew one from the other. And when he was vpon his death bedde, he secretly gauie to euery of his sonnes a Ring. Who after the death of their father desirous to enter the inheritaunce and honour, one goinge about to displace another, euery of them to declare what title he had to enjoy the fame, brought forth his Ringe: and the ringes were founde so like, that the true Rynge could not be knowen. Therefore the process for the title remained in doubt and yet continueth till this daye. And fo I say vnto you my Lord of the thre lawes giuen by God the father to thofe three people, whereof you haue made the question: euery of thofe Nations thinketh to enjoy the inheritaunce of God, and to obserue the true lawe and his commaundementes: but which of them hath the truest lawe, that remaineth in doubt like
the question of the Rings." Saladine perceiving that Melchisedech knew right well how to evade the snare which hee had laid for him: determined therefore to open and disclose vnto him his necessity, to prove if he would do him that pleasure: which hee did, telling him his intent and meaninge, if he had not framed him that wyfe aunswere. The Iewe liberally lent him the summe of moneye that he demaunded, which Saladine wholie repaid vnto him againe, besides other very great rewardes that he gave him, vsing him still for his frende, and afterwards maintained him next his person, in great and honourable state.
THE THIRTY-FIRST NOUELL.

One called Guglielmo Borfiere with certaine wordes well placed, taunted the couetous life of Ermino Grimaldi.

Longe sithens there was a gentleman at Genoua called M. Ermino Grimaldi, whoe as all men thoughte, was the richest of possesion and ready money within that citie, and therin farre excelled all other citizens which then were knowne in Italie. And as he did surpashe al other Italians in substance and wealth, so in avarice and wretchednes he furmounted beyond measure the most couetous and miserable of the worlde. For he kept his purse so close that he did not onely neglecte to do good to other, but also to himselfe, by sparinge many things necessary for his owne person: he induced much hardnes in meate and drinke because he would spend nothing: contrary to the common custome of the Geneuois, who be wonte very nobly and honourably to maintaine themselues in apparell and fare. For which cause his surname Grimaldi deservedly was taken away, and was called of euery man nothing els but M. Ermino the couetous. It chaunced in those dayes, that as he by spending nothing multiplied his goods. There arriued at Genoua an honest gentleman and well spoked, a Courtier of good interteignement, named Guglielmo Borfiere, (nothing like the Courtiers in these dayes that to their great shame, for their corrupt and rude maners would be called and reputed gentlemen, which in deede maye bee counted Asses, broughte vppe and noseled rather in the filthye conditions of the vilest menne, then in Courtes.) In those dayes Courtiers occupied themselues, in treatinge of peace and endinge of quarelles that brede strife and diaffention amonges gentlemen, or in makinge of mariages, amities, and attonementes, and with mery woordes and pleasaut, did recreate troubled mindes, and exhilarated with pastimes other Courtiers, not with sharpe reprehensions, but like fathers rebuking the liues of the wicked, and that for no gaine or reward. Where some of the Courtiers of oure age do impoye their time, in ill re-
portes one of another, and do difeminate debate and strife, utter-
inge a thoufande vnhappie and vile wordes, yea and that (which
is worft of all) in common audience. Their maner is to reproze
and checke one an other with injuries, reproches and nipping
girdes, with falle and deceivable flatteries, villanously and diffe-
blingly, to begile poore and needie gentlemen. He is also the
propreft man and beft beloved of fome great men of like condi-
tions, and of them is beft rewarded that can vfe the vileft and
moft abhominable talke, or can do femblable deeds, which re-
doundeth to the great shame and dishonour, of the chiefe and
principall that beare the fwaie in Courte: proofe wherof is evi-
dent enough for that the vertues paff, haue forfaken the prefente
fort, who liue in the ordure and filth of all vices. But to procede
in that which I haue begun, (although vpon iuft occafion I haue
a little more digreffed then I thought,) I fay that the forefaid
Guglielmo Borfiere, was honoured and visited of the gentlemen
of Genoua, who making his abode for a certaine time in the Citie,
and hearing tel of the miferie and conetoufnes of M. Ermino, had
great defire to fee him. M. Ermino hearing tell that this Gugli-
elmo Borfiere was an excellente man, and therefore (although a
couetous man) yet hauing in him fome sparke of gentilitie, he re-
ceived him with friendlye woords and good countenaunce, entringe
into communication with him of diuers and fundrie matters, and
in talking brought him with certaine other Citizens to one of his
houfes which was very faire and newe, where (after hee had fhew-
ed him his houfe) he faid vnto him: "M. Guglielmo, you that
haue feene and heard many things, can you fhew vnto me any new
denife neuer feene before, that I may caufe the fame to be painted
in the hall of this my houfe." To whom M. Guglielmo (hearing
his fonde demande) aunfweared: "Sir I can fhewe you nothing
but that which hath beene knowne before, excepte Neinges or fuch like.
But if it pleafe you sir I wil gladly teach you one,
which I thincke you neuer faw." M. Ermino glad to heare of
that, faid: "I pray you sir tell mee what it is," (not thinking he
would haue made that aunfwere). To whom M. Guglielmo redely
faid: "Caufe the figure of Liberality to be painted." At which
aunfwere M. Ermino was fo fodenlye afhamed, as he was forced
to change his minde in maner cleane contrarye to his accustomed vse, and trade of life, saying: “M. Guglielmo, I will cause the fame to be painted in such wise, as neither you nor any man els, shall haue occasion iustly to obiect the fame against me.” And from that time forth (such was the force of that taunt) hee was the most liberall and bountefull gentleman that dwelte in Genoua, and one that honoured straungers and citizens more then euer did any in his time.
THE THIRTY-SECOND NOUELL.

Maister Alberto of Bologna, by a pleasent aunswere made a gentlewoman to blushe, which had thoughte to haue put him out of countenaunce, in telling him that he was in love with her.

Not manye yeares paffe there was at Bologna a notable Phisition, renowned throughe out the whole worlde, called Maister Alberto, whoe beinge old, almost lx. yeares of age, had such an excellent wit, that although naturall heate was expired in his bodie, yet hee disdayned not to conceiue some amorous flames of love. Seing at a banket a verye fayre gentlewoman a widowe called (as some faye) Madonna Margherita de Ghišleri, she pleased his fanlie so well, that he fixed her so fast in the siege of his remembranuce, as if he had been a yonge man of rype and youthlye yeares. In such wise as that nighte he could take no reste, if the day before hee had not seene the faire and beautefull face of this faire gentlewoman. For which cause sometimes a foote, and sometimes on horsebacke as he thought best, he continually vfed to passe before her lodginge, which was the cause that shee and divers other gentlewomen did marke th'occasion of his ofte pasing to and fro that waye. And many times they iested and dalied amongst them selues to see a man of such yeares and experience to be in loue, thinking that the displeasaunt passion of loue, could fasten no hold but in the fonde mindes of yonge people and no where els. Wherefore Maister Alberto daily pasing to and fro the house of that gentlewoman, it chanced vppon an holye daye, that shee sittinge with other dames before her doore, and sawe Maister Alberto a farre off, comming towards them, she with the rest determined courteously to receive him, and reverently to salute him, and afterwardes merely to talke and sporte of his loue, which accordingly they did. The gentlewoman rising vp conveyed him into a court, of ayre fresh and pleasaunt, where they caufed to be brought forth excellent wynes and comfits, and in the ende with manye cherefull and pleasaunt woordes, one of them asked him how it
was possibile, he could be in loue with that fayre gentlewoman, speciallye fithens manye fayre and trimme yonge menne, did loue her. Maifter Alberto perceyninge himselfe touched and gefted at, very honeslye aunfweared with fmyling countenaunce: "Maittres, no wyse man whatsoeuer hee be oughte to marueile whye I am in loue, especiallye with you (lookinge vpon her whom hee loued) because your beautye and woorthines dothe well deffere the fame. And although naturally the forces which be incident to exercifes of Loue, do faile and decaye in olde men, good wil therefore is not in them depruied, nor the judgement in knowledge, the which ought to be beloued. But because they have greater experience then yonge men haue, therefore by nature they better know the qualitie of loue. The hope that moueth mee an olde man to loue you, that is noe well beloued of yong men, is this: I haue many times been conuerfaunte in places where I haue seene gentlewomen for their collation and pleafure after dinner, oftentimes to eate Lupines and Leeke, and albeite that in the Leeke, there is nothing good or holsome, yet the heade thereof is les hurtful, and moft pleafaunte to the mouth, whereof generally (through a folifh luft) ye women holde the heade in your hands and chawe the leaves, which not onely be euil and nought, but alfo of an ill fanoured smel and fauour. And what doe I knowe (maiftres) if in the choife of your frendes ye do the like? which if ye do, no doubt it is I, whom you haue choisen to be your frende, and haue forfaken all other." This gentlewoman somwhat ashamed blushing with the reft, said: "Maifter Alberto, you haue ful wel and curteouslye paied vs home, and aunfweared our prefumptuous obiection. Notwithstandinge I doe esteeme and accept your amitie and loue, as I oughte to regard the loue of a wife and honest perfonage. And so (mine honestie and honour faued) al that I haue to doe you pleafure, is to be assured at your commandement." Therewithall M. Alberto rofe vp, thanking the gentlewoman, and with much sport and pleafaunt talke taking his leaue of the company departed. In this maner the gentlewoman giuing ouer her fecoffes and tauntes, whereby she thoughte to putte Mayster Alberto out of concey, was put to silence her selfe. Whereof I (in the name of Panfilo Filofrato and Dioneo) by
waye of intreatie do befeech yee Ladies, Pampinea, Fiammetta, Philomena, and other gentlewomen, to beware howe ye doe contrive your holy day talke, by waste wordes issuing forth your delicate mouthes, in carping, gauding, and iefting at young gentlemen, and speciallye olde men, and Maister Alberto of Bologna, that for loue like the grene falkes or graye heades of Lekes, doe desire to fauer your mouthes, and by honest recreation and pleasure to gratifie your comlie personages, left before the banket be done, and all the comfits spent, ye departe with blushing cheekes, hanging downe your heades, not shaming to looke your mother in the face from whence you came: I meane the earth. Where dame nature hath formed you by your comely grace, and your fayre face, to behold eche man, and to utter pleasing talke intermixed with honestie and vertue.
THE THIRTY-THIRD NOUELL.

Rinaldo of Esti being robbed, arrived at Castel Guglielmo, and was succoured of a wydowe: and restored to his loffes, retournig faleur and founde home to his owne house.

In the tyme of Azzo Marques of Ferrara, there was a marchaunt named Rinaldo of Esti, come to Bologna to do certaine affaires. Whiche when hee had dispatched, in retournig homewardes, it chaunced as hee departed out of Ferrara, and riding towards Verona, hee mette certayne men on horfebacke, whiche femed to be Marchauntes, but in verie deede were arrant theues: with whome he kepte companie, and without fuspicion what they were, rode together familiarly talking. These good felowes feing this Marchaunt and thinking that he had money about hym, determined to robbe him, when they fawe their aduauntage, and to the intent he should not suspefte them, they rode lyke graue men of honeft conuerfation, debaring with him of honeft caufes, and faithfull, shewing them felues counterfaetely, to be lowly and gentle. Upon whiche occassion, he thought him felfe mofte happy that he had mette with fuch companie, because he and his ferauant rode together alone. And as they were talking of diuers matters (as chaunceth in communication) they fel in talke of prayers, that men do make vnto God. And one of the theues (for they were three in nomber) sayd vnto Rinaldo: “And you gentleman, what praier bee you accuftomed to faye, when you ryde by the waye?” To whom Rinaldo anfwered: “To tel you the truth, I am a man very playne, and rude in those matters, and I have a fewe prayers at my fingers endes: suche as myne aunceftours vfed before me. And I let go currant ii. s. for xxiiid. But neuerthelesse, I haue alwayes accuftomed, when I ryde by the way, to fay in the morning at my going forth of my lodging, a Pater nofter and an Ave Maria, for the foule of the father and mother of sainct Iulian: and after that, I pray to God and sainct Iulian, to fende me good lodging the night folowing. And full oft in my time I haue founde, in trauailing of Countries many great daungers, all whiche
hauing escaped, it hath bene my fortune always (when night approached) to chaunce vppon good lodging: whiche maketh me steadfastly beleue that fainêt Iulian (vnto whose honour I faye the fame) hath obtained this benefite of God for me, and I thought that daye wherein I neglected, to faye in the morning that prayer, I could neither faultely trauell, ne yet at night obtain good harborough." He that demaunded the question, asked him: "And haft thou faid them this morning?" "Yea verely," answered Rinaldo. Then he whiche already knewe howe the matter would go, faid to him felfe, thou shalt have enough to doe anone, for if thou haue not fayde them this morninge, it may fo happe that thou shalt lodge full ill this night. And afterwaures hee faid, "I haue likewyse trauayled in my dayes a great waye, and never faid thofe praieres, but I haue heard many men greatly prayfe them (although) I could never perceiue but that I haue bene well lodged. And peraduenture this night you shal proue, which of vs two shal haue beft lodging, you that haue sayd them, or I which haue not faid them. It is most true that I haue accustomed, in ftede of that praier, to faye that vers Dirupifi, or the antheme Intemerata, or the De profundis, which are (as my grandmother did teach and instrucfte me) of verie great effeçte and vertue." And speaking thus of diuers thinges, always riding, excepting the place and time, to accomplísh their wicked intent: it chaunced that approching nere to Castel Guglielmo, when they had pafsed ouer a ryuer, thefe three theues, late in the evening in a darke place, did fette vppon him and robbed him, dismounting him from his horfe, and left him there in his fhyrte. And as they were going waye, they fayde vnto hym: "Goe and feeke if thy fainêt Iulian, will helpe thee to good lodging this nighte, for our fainête wyll helpe vs to good." And repaffing through the Riuier, they went their waye. The feruaunt of Rinaldo, feyng the theues fette vppon his maister (like a cowarde) helped him nothing, but tourned his brydle and never left galloping vontill he came to Castell Guglielmo: where because it was nighte, he lodged in an Inne, without any further care for his Maiﬆer. Rinaldo being stil there in his fhyrte, bare footed and bare legged, in the great Froft and Snowe, not knowing what to doe, and feing night already approche, quaking, and his
teethe clacketing in his head, began to looke about hym, if he could see anye place there for hym to reforte for succour, that he might not dye for colde: but (leynge none at all, because a little before, the warres had with fyre consumed all thynges) being sore afflictéd for colde, he began to make spede towards the Castell Guglielmo, not knowing that his seruaunt was fledde thither: thinking that if he might come in, God would sende hym some succour, but darke night ouertooke him a good waye of, before hee could come to the Castell, almost the space of a mile, by whiche meanes he arrived there verye late, the gates being shutte vp and the bridges drawen, that he could not goe in. By reasoun whereof hee was verie forowesfull and discomforted, lamentable casting his eyes about, to espie if it wer poffible that at the left he might shroude him selfe free from the snowe: and by chaunce he sawe a house vpon the walles of the Castell, vnder whiche he determined to reste tyll it was daye, and repairing thereunto, he found vnder the house a doore, (whiche was locked) vnder which doore gathering a little strawe that he founde thereabout, he sat down very heauie and penfife: making his complaint many tymes vnto saucete Julian, that the faith which he repose in hym had nowe deceiued him. But saucete Julian taking pitie vpon hym, without any further delaye, prepared him (as it chaunced) a good lodging: for there dwelleth in that Castell a woman whiche was a wydowe, to faire a perfone as might be seene, whom the Marques Azzo loued as his life, and kepe her there for his owne pleafure. And the same woman dwelte in the house, vnder the porche wherof Rinaldo was gone to reste him selfe, vnto whome the daye before, the Marques reforted to disport him selfe that night, and in her house had secretly caufed a bathe to be made, and a great supper to be prepared. All which being readie, and the good wyfe expecting nothing els but the comming of the Marques, it chaunced that one of his men called at the gates of the Castell, with newes to the Marques, that sodainly he must ryde awaye; wherefore he sent woore to the wydowe, that shee should not attende his comming: who, not a little displeafl with the meffage, not knowing what to doe, determined to enter the Bathe whiche was prepared for the marques, and when she had supped to goe to
bedde. This Bathe was harde by the doore wherunto poore Rinaldo was approched. The widowe being in the Bathe, hearing the plaintes and trembling voyce of Rinaldo, thought it had been the noyfe of a Storke. Whereupon she called her mayde and faide vnto her: "Go vp, and looke ouer the walles, to know who is at the doore and what he would haue." The mayde, according to her maistres commaundement, went to the doore, and the night being somewhat cleare, fawe Rinaldo fittting in his shyrte, bare legged, shaking for colde, as is before faid, and asked him what he was. Rinaldo with his teete shuyering in his head, coulde scarfe well speake, or vter a woorde, but yet fo brieffe as he coulde, he tolde her what he was, howe and for what purpofe he was come thither. Afterwardes he piteously began to praye her (if she coulde) not to suffer him that night to stervue for colde. The maide pitying his estate, returned to her maistres, and tolde her what she fawde: who likewyse hauing compassion vppon him, remembiring that she had the keye of the doore (whiche sometimes ferued the turne, when the marques was disposed secretly to come in) she fayde to her mayde: "Go open the doore softly, for we haue prepared a supper, and here is no man to eate it: and also here is lodging sufficient to harbour him." The mayde greatly prayinge her maistres for her curtesie, wente forth and opened the doore. And when he was let in, they fawe him to be almoxt froffen for colde: sayinge vnto him, díspatche good felowe, goe into the Bathe, being yet hotte. Whiche thinge he right willingly did, not looking that he shoulde be bidden againe, and being recomforted with the warmth therof, he felt him selve resuued from death to life. The good wyfe caufed certayne apparel of her late dead husband, to be searcht out for him, and when he had put them on, they were so mete, as though they had bene made of purpose, and waiting what it shoulde please the good wife to commaund him, he began humbly to thanke God and faincte Iulian, that hee was deliuered from that euill nighte (contrarie to his expectation) to so good a lodging. After this the fayre wydowe, somewhat reposeing her selve, caufed a great fyre to be made in one of her great chambers, into the whiche shee came, and demaunded her mayde what maner of man he was. The maid aunswered: "Maistres, nowe he is in good apparell, he is a verie handsome felowe, and femeath
to be of good reputation and honestie." "Goe thy wayes (quod her maiftres) and call hym hether. Bidde him come to the fyre, and tell hym that he shall suppe with me, for perchaunce he hath eaten no meate this nighte." Rinaldo came into the chamber, and seing the wydowe, he made to her great reverence: thanking her for her kindneffe shewed vnto him. When the wydowe had seene him, and heard him speake, perceiving him to be suche a one as her mayde reported, shee intertaigned him in curteous wyse, causing him familiarly to sitte downe before the fire, and demaundd what mishap brought him to that place. To whome Rinaldo reherfed the whole discourse. For she had heard at the comming of Rinaldo his seruaunt to the Caftell, a brute of his roberie, whiche made her to beleue him the better: She tolde him alfo, that his man was come to the towne, and howe hee might easely finde him the next morning. And after meate was ferued to the table, Rinaldo and she washed together, and then sat down to supper. He was a goodly perfonnement, faire and pleasaunt to beholde, yonge and of good behauiour, vpon whom the woman many times did cast her eyes, and liked him well. To be shorte, this lecherous Lady, burning inwardlye with amorous desyre, abused her selfe with hym, in steede of the Marques. But when the morning began to shewe foorth her light, the wydowe, to the intent no suspicion might bee hadde, gau e him certayne base and courfe apparell, and filled his purfe with money, praying him to kepe her counsell, and first tolde him whiche way he should take to seeke his man, letting him out at the doore wherewith he came in. Who seming as though he had traveilled a great waye that morning, when the gates were opened, went into the Caftell, and founde his seruaunte. And then putting vppon hym suche apparell as was in his male, and being about to mounte vpon his man's horfe, it came to passe, like as it had bene a diuine miracle, that the three theues, whiche had robbed him the night before, were taken for doing an other robberie a little whyle after, and were brought to the Caftell, and vppon their confession, his horfe, apparell, and money, were restored to him againe, losinge nothing but a payre of garters. Wherefore Rinaldo thanking God and saunt Julian, mounted vppon his horfe and retourned whole and faule to his owne house. And the nexte daye, the three theues were connued foorth, to bleffe the worlde with their heeles.
THE THIRTY-FOURTH NOUELL.

Three yonge men hauing fondlye consumed all that they had, became verie poore, whoshe nephew (as he retourned out of Englande into Italie,) by the waye fell into acquaintance with an abbote, whome (upon further familiaritie) he knewe to be the king of Englanedes daughter, whiche toke him to husbande. Afterwardes she restored his uncles to all their losses, and sent them home in good state and reputation.

There was fometyme in the citie of Florence, a knight called Sir Tebaldo, who as some faie, was of the house of Lamberti: and as other affirm, of Agolanti. But leaving the variaunce of whether house he was, true it is, that hee was in that time a notable riche and wealthy knight, and had three fonnes. The firste called Lamberto, the seconde Tebaldo, and the thirde Agolante, all faire and goodly yonge men: and the eldest of whiche was not xvi. yeares of age. When the sayde Sir Tebaldo died, to them (as his lawefull heires) he lefte all his landes and goodes. Who being verie ryche in readie money and possessions, continued their life without governedment at their owne pleasures, and without byrdle or stay they began to consume their goodes. They kepte a greate and franke house, and many Horces of great value, with Dogges and Haukes of sundrie kyndes, giuing liberall giftes, and obseruing diuerse gestes at Tilt and Torney: doing also that whiche not onely did appertayne and belonge to Gentlemen, but also that whiche was incident to the trade and course of youthe. They continued not long in this order, but their substaunce lefte them by their father, was very muche consumed. And their reuennes (not able to mainteine their expences) began to decrease, whereupon they were fayne to morgage and fell their inheritance, in suche wyse as in the ende they grewe to extreme pouertie. And then penurie did open their eyes, in like forte as before riches had closed them vp. For whiche caufe, Lamberto vpon a daye did cal his other twoo brethren vnto him, and tolde them of what honour their father was, to what value his rycheffe did amounte, and nowe to
what pouertie they were come through their difordinate expences: giving them counfaile (so well as he could) that before miferie did growe any further vpon them, by selling that whiche was lefte, they shoulde goe their waye: whiche they did. And without leaue taken of any man, or other solempnitie, they departed from Florence, and taried in no place before they were arrived in Englande. Where taking a little house in the citie of London, they liued with little expences, and began to lende out their money to vfurie: and Fortune was so fauourable vnto them by that trade, that in few yeares they had gayned a verie notable somme of money, whiche made them one after an other, to retire agayne to Florence with their substaunce: where they redeemed a great part of their inheritauence, and bought other lande, and so gaued them felues to mariage: continuing neuerthelesse in Englande, their money at intereft. They sent thither to be their factour, a yonge man their nephewe, called Alexandre. And they three dwelling still at Florence, began agayne to forget to what miferie their inordinate expences hadde brought them before. And albeit they were charged with houfholde, yet they spent out of order, and without respect, and were of great credite with every Marchaunt: whose expences, the money that Alexandre many times did send home, did helpe to supporte for certaine yeares, which was lent out to divers gentlemen and Barons of the countrey, vpon their Castelles, Manours, and other revenues, wherof was receuied an incredible profite. In the meane time the three brethren spent so largely, as they borrowed money of other, fixing all their hope from Englande. It chaunced that warres happened betwene the king of England, and one of his fonnes, whiche bredde muche diuision in that lande, some holding of one parte, and some of another. By meanes whereof, all the Manours and morgaged landes, were taken awaye from Alexandre, hauing nothing wher vpon any profite did rye. Howebeit he dailye trusted that peace shoulde bee concluded betweene the father and the fonne, and that all things should be surrendred, as well the principall as the intereft: determining vpon that hope not to departe the Countrie. The three brethren whiche were at Florence, not limiting any order to their difordinate expences, grewe daylye worfe and worfe. But
in proceffe of tyme, when all hope was passe of their recoverye, they loste not onely their credite, but the creditours desirous to be payde, wereayne to fende them to pryfon. And because their inheritaunce was not sufficient to paye the whole debte, they re-mayned in pryfon for the reste, and their wines and children wer diopered, some into the countrie, and some hether and thether, out of order, not knowing how to do, but to abide a poore and miserable life for euer. Alexandro which of long time taried for a peace in Englande, and seing that it came not to passe, consider-ing alfo with him selfe (ouer and beides his vaine abode, for recoverie of his debtes) that he was in danger of his life, he pur-pofed to retourne into Italie. And as he travailed by the waye alone, and departed from Bruges, by fortune he perceiued an abbot clothed in white, in like maner about to take his journey, accompanied with many Monkes, and a great traine: hauing much cariage and diuers baggages before. After whome rode two olde knightes, the kinfmen of the king, with whom Alexandro entred acquaintance by reason of former knowledge, and was receiued into their companie. Alexandro then riding with them frendlye, demaunded what Monkes they were that rode before with so great a trayne, and whether they went. To whome one of the knightes aunswered, that he which rode before, was a yonge gentleman their kinfman, which was newly choisen Abbot of one of the best Abbaies'in England. And because he was verie yonge, and not capable by the decrees, of suche a dignitie, they went with him to Rome, to obteine of the holy father a dispensation for his age, and for a confirmation of that office. But they willed him to disclose the fame to no man. And so this newe Abbot, riding sometimes before and sometimes after, as we see ordinarie that Lordes doe when they travell in the countrie, it chaunced that the Abbot eying Alexandro riding besides him, which was a faire yonge man, honeft, curteous, and familiar, who at the first meting did so maruellously delight him, as any thing that euer he fawe in his life, and calling him vnto him, he began familiarly to talke, and asked what he was, from whence he came, and whether he went. To whom Alexandro declared liberally all his state, and satisfiied his demaunde, offering vnto him (although his power was
litle) al the seruice he was able to do. The Abbot hearing his
courteous offer and comely talke, placed in good order, considering
more particularly the state of his affaires, and waying with him
selfe, that albeit his traine was small yet neuerthelesse he seemed
to be a gentleman, and then pitying his mishappes, he recomforted
him familiarly, and faide vnto him: That hee ought dailye to live
in good hope, for if he were an honest man, God would aduaunce
him againe not only to that place from whence fortune had
thrown him downe, but also to greater eftimation: praying him
that ifthens he was going into Thufcane, whether he likewyse went,
that it would please him to remaine in his companie. Alexandro
thanked him humblie of his comfort, and faide vnto him that he
was redie to impoyl him selfe where it should please him to com-
maunde. The Abbot thus riding, (into whose minde newe thoughts
entred vpon the sight of Alexandro) it chaunted, after manie daies
iournies, they arrived at a village that was but meanly furnisht
with lodging. The Abbot defirous to lodge there, Alexandro
intreated him to light at the Inne of an hofte which was fami-
liarly knowne vnto him, and causd a chamber to be made redie
for him selfe in the worste place of the houfe. And the Marshall
of the Abbot's lodgings, being alreadie come to the towne, (which
was a man very skilfull in those affaires) he lodged al the traine
in that village, one here, an other there, so well as he could.
And by that time the Abbot had supped, night was farre spent,
and euerie man repaired to his lodging. Alexandro demaundt
the hofte wher he shoulde lie? To whom the hoft made aunswere
"Of a trouthe Maister Alexandro I knowe not, for you see that
all my houfe is so full, as I and my houfholde are faine to lie
uppon the benche: howe be it, I haue certaine garrettes, harde
adioyning to the lorde Abbottes chamber, where I may place you
very well, and I wyll causse my folkse to beare thither a pallet, where
if you pleafe, you may lodge this night." To whom Alexandro
said. "But how shall I passe through the Abbot's chamber, the
rowme being so freight as not one of his Monkes is able to lie
there. But if I had knowne it before, the Curteins had bene drawen,
I would haue causd his Monkes to haue lien in the Garret, and I
my self would haue lodged where they do." Wherunto the
histe saide, "It is doen nowe, but (me thinke) you may if you lifte lie there so well, as in any place of the house. The Abbot being asleepe, and the Courteins drawn, I wyll softly and without noyse conueye a pallette thyther." Alejandro perceiuing that the same might be done, without any anoiaunce to the Abbot, agreed and conueyed him felse, so secrete as hee could, through the chamber. The abbot whiche was not a sleepe (but gaue him felse to thinke and imagine vpon his newe defires) heard the wordes that were spoken, betweene the hofte and Alejandro, and likewise vnderstanding where Alejandro lay, was verie well contenec in him felse, and began to faye: "The Lorde hath fent me a tyme fauourable to satifisfie my defyres, whiche if I doe not nowe receive, peraduenture the like will neuer be ofred againe." Wherfore perfwading with him felse to take that present ocasion, and fuppoing likewyse, that every man was a sleepe, he called Alejandro fo softlie as he could, and willed him to come and lie beside him: who after many excuses, when his clothes were of came vnto him. The Abbot laying his arme ouer him, began to attempete fuche amorous toyes, as hee accustomed betwene twoo louers: whereof Alejandro meruayled muche, and doubted that the Abbot being furpryfed with dishoneste loue, had called him to his bedde of purpose to proue him. Whiche doubt the Abbot (either by presumption, or some other acte done by Alejandro) vnderstanding: incontinently began to smyle, and to putte of his slyrte whiche he ware, and toke Alejandro's hande, and laide it ouer his fomacke, faying vnto him: "Alexandro, cast out of thy mynde thy vnhonest thought, and fele here the thing which I haue secrete." Alejandro laying his hande ouer the Abbottes fomacke, perceiued that he had twoo breastes, rounde and harde, the skinne whereof was verie fine and tender, whereby he perceiued that hee was a woman, whom incontinently hee embraced, and without looking for any other inuitation, he would haue killed her, but she saide vnto him: "Before thou approche any nearer, marke what I shall faye vnto thee. I am a woman and not a man, as thou maiest perceiue, but being departed a maid from my house, I am going to the Pope, to praye him to place me in mariage. But when I first viewed thee, the other daye, whether it was through thy good
fortune, or my milhap, lorne attached me in suche wyfe as neuer woman loued man, as I do thee, and therefore I do purpose to take thee to hubbande before all other: but if thou wilt not take me to wife get the hence and retourne to thyne owne bedde." Alexandro although hee knewe her not, yet hauing regarde vnto the companie and traine that folowed her, judged her to be some noble and riche Ladie: on the other parte, he fawe that she was a perfonage right beautifull and faire, therefore without any further consideration, he anfwered. "That for fo muche as her pleafure was fuch, he was verie well contented." Shee then fitting vp in her bedde, hauing a little table (wherin the picture of Chrifte was painted) inwowed him with a ringe, doing the order of espousalles, and afterwards embracing one an other, to their great contentation and pleafure, they ioefully continued together that night. And after they had deuifed and concluded the order and meanes to order their affaires from that time foorth, Alexandro, fo fone as it was daye, rofe vp and went out of the chamber that waye he came in, without knowledge to any man where he lay that night. Then right ioefully and glad, he proceeded in his iourney with the abbot and his companye, and within fewe daies arriued at Rome. And when they had remained there a certain time, the Abbot taking with him but the twoo knightes and Alexandro, went to the Pope: where doing to him their due reuerence, the Abbot began to speake in this wyfe. "Holie father (as your holinesse doth better knowe then any other) every man that purpofeth to liue an honeft life, ought to auoyde (fo muche as lieth in him) all occafions that may drawe him to the contrary. Which to th'intent I that am defirous to leade an honeft life, may fully perforne, am secretely fled and arriued here, in the habite wherein you fee, with a good porcion of the king of Englandes treafure, who is my father: that your holines may beftow me in mariage, for fo muche as my father woulde giue me to wife (which am a yonge gentlewoman as you fee) to the Scottifhe king, a very riche and welthy Prince, but yet very olde and decrepito. And his olde age was not fo much the occafion of my departure, as the feare which I conceiued (through the frailtie of my youth to be maried vnto him,) to commit a thing that should be contrarie to the lawe of God,
and the honour of the bloud roiall of my father. And in coming hitherwardes, being in this deepe deliberation with my self, almighty God, who only knoweth assuredly, what is needful and necessary for vs al, did place before mine eies (through his gracious mercy as I trust,) him that he thinketh mete to be my husband, which is this yonge gentleman (pointing to Alexandro) whom you see standing besides me. The honestie and worthinesse of whom is well able to matche with any great lady, how honorable soever she be, although per aduenture, the nobilitie of his bloud is not so excellent as that which procedeth from the roiall and Princely stock. Him then haue I choien to be my husband, him I will haue and none other, whatsoeuer my father shall say, or any other to the contrarie. Wherefore the principall occasion that moued me to come hither, is now dispatched. But I will accomplishe and performe the rest of my voyage, as well to visithe the holy and reverent places (wherof this citie is ful) and your holinesse: as alfo that the contract of mariage (hitherto only made in the presence of God, betwene Alexandro and me,) may be consumate openly in the presence of you, and consequently in the sight of all men: Wherefore I humbly beseeche your fatherhode, to be agreeable vnto that whiche it bath pleased God and mee to bring to passe, and that you would giue vs your benediction, to the intent we may liue together in the honour of God, to the perfection and ende of our life." Alexandro greatly maruiled, when he vnderstoode that his wife was the daughter of the king of Englannde, and was rapt with an vnspakeable ioye. But much more maruiled the two knightes, which were so troubled and appalled, that if they had bene in any place els, sauing in the presence of the Pope, they woulde haue killed Alexandro, and peraduenture the lady her self. On the other part the Pope was verie much astonned, both at the habite and apparell of the Lady, and also of her choise. But knowing that the same could not be vndone, he was content to satisfie her request. And first of all he comforted the two knightes, whom he knewe to be moued at the matter, and reduced them in amitie, with the lady and Alexandro: then he gave order what was beste to be done. And when the mariadge daie, by him appointed, was come, he called the Ladie to issue forth, clothed in
royall vestures, before all the Cardinalles, and many other great personages that were repayred to the great feast, of purpose by hym prepared. Whiche Ladie appeared to be so fayre and comelie that not without deferte shee was prayed and commended of all the assemblie. In like maner Alexandro, gorgeouly appareled, both in outwarde apparaunce and condicions, was not like one that had lent monie to Vfurie, but of a more Princelie grace and was greatlye honoured of those twoo knightes, where the Pope solemnely celebrated (againe) the efpoufalles. And after that ryche and royall mariage was ended, he gaue them leave to departe. It seemed good to Alexandro, and likewise to the Lady, to goe from Rome to Florence, in whiche citie, the brute of that accidente was alreadie noysed, where being receiued of the citizens with great honour, the Ladie deliuered the three brethren out of prifon, and having firfte payde euery man their debte, they with their wifes, were repossessed in their former inheritaunce. Then Alexandro and his wife, with the good will and joyfull gratulations of all men departed from Florence, and taking with them Agolante, one of their vnclcs, arriued at Paris, where they were honourably interteigned of the Frenche king. From thence the twoo knightes went into England, and fo perfwaded the king, that they recovered his good will towardes his daughter: and fending for his sonne in lawe, hee receiued them both with great ioy and triumpe. And within a whyle after, he inuesed his faide sonne with the order of knight hode, and made him Earle of Cornewale, whose wisedome proued fo great, as hee pacified the father, and the sonne whereof infused, surpassing profite and commoditie for the whole Realme, whereby also he gained and got the loue and good will of all the people; and Agolante his vncl, fully recovered all debtes, due vnto him in Englands. And the Earle when he had made his vncl knightes suffered him to retourne in riche estate to Florence. The Earle afterwardes liued with his wife in great prosperitie (and as some do affirme) both by his own pollicie and valiaunce, and with the aide of his father in lawe, he recovered and ouercame the Realme of Scotlande, and was there crowned Kyng.
LANDOLPHO RUFFOLO.

THE THIRTY-FIFTH NOUELL.

Landolpho Ruffolo being impoorished, became a pirate and taken by the Geneuois, was in daunger of drowning, who sauing himselfe upon a litle coafer full of rich iewels, was receiued at Corfu, and beinge cherishe by a woman, retourned home very riche.

It is supposd, that the sea coast of Reggium (in Calabria) in the most delectable part in all Italy, wherin (hard by Salerno) there is a countrye by the Sea Side, which the inhabitauntes doe terme the coast of Malfy, so full of little cities, gardeines, fountaines, riche men and marchauntes, as any other people and countrie. Among which saide cities, there was one called Rauello, where in time past (althoughe in these dayes there be very rich men), there dwelle a notable man of substaunce, called Landolpho Ruffolo: who being not contented with his riches, but defirous to multiplye them double, was in hazarde to lose himselfe, and all that he had. This man, (as all other marchauntes be accustomed) after he had considerd with himselfe what to doe, boughte a very greate shippe, and fraughted the fame with sondrye kindes of marchaundize of his owne adventure, and made a voyage to the Isle of Cypri, where he found (besides the commodities which he brought) many other shippes arriued there, laden with such like wares: by which occasion it happened, that hee was forced not onelye to sell the same good cheape, but alfo was constrained (if hee woulde dispatch his goodes) to giue them almost for nought, whereby he thoughte that he was utterly vndone. And being greatly troubled for that losse, not knowing what to doe, and seing how in so litle a time, of a rich man he was come to begger state, he thoughte either to die, or els by piracie to recouer his losses, to the intent he might not returne to the place poore, from whence he was departed riche. And hauing founde a copefeman for his great barque, with the money thereof, and with other which he receiued for his marchandise, he boughte a small pinnas, meete for the vs of a pirate, which he armed and furnished with al things necessary for that purpofe: and determined
to make himselfe riche with the goodes of other men, and chieflye hee ment to fet vppon the Turkes: whereunto fortune was more fauourable then to his former trade: and by chaunce, by the space of one yeare, he robbed and toke so many Fowtes and galleis of the Turkes, as he had recovered not onely that which he lofte by marchaundife, but also more then twise so muche as whereunto those losstes did amounte.

Wherfore, well punished with the first forow of his losstes, knowing his gaines to multiplie, as he needed not returne the seconde time, he thoughte with himselfe that the fame which he had gotten was sufficiente: and therefore determined presently to returne to his owne house with his gotten goods. And fearing the hinderance which he susstained in traffique of Marchaundife, hee purposed to imploie his moneye no longer that ways, but in that barque wherewith hee had gained the fame, with his ores hee tooke his course homward: and being vppon the maine Sea, in the night the wind rofe at the Southeaft, which was not onely contrary to his course, but also raised such a tempeft, as his final barque was not able to endure the Seas. Wherupon he toke harborough in a Creke of the Sea, whiche compassed a little Ilande, there expecting for better wind. Into which creke within a while after, with much a do for auoyding of that tempeft, arriued two great Argofes of Genoa, that were come from Constanti-nople: the mariners of which greate shipes, when they sawe the little barque, they closed vp the waye, that the pinnas could not goe out. And then vnderstanding of whence he was, and knowinge by report, that he was very riche, determined (being men naturally giuen to spoile and loue of money,) to take her. And setting a shore part of their men, well armed and furnished with crossebowes, they concuied themselfes to keepe and defende that none within the Pinnas (except they woulde be shot through) was able to escape: then retiriing into their skiftes, with helpe of the Tide they approched Landolpho his barque, which without any great dificultie, in a small space they toke with all the company, not loosing so much as one man. And carying Landolpho aborde one of their cockes, and all within borde his little Pinnas, they foncke the fame and al the Mariners, and kept Landolpho,
suffering him not to have about him any kind of armure, not so much as an haberion. The next day the winde chaunged, and the shippes hoifted vp failes toward Leuant, and all that day prosperoufie faile failed on their voyage. But vpon the clofing of the night, a storeme rofe againe, and seperated the two ships, one from another, and by force of the wind, it chaunced the ship wherein poore Landolpho was, ftraike with great violence vpon a fande, in the Iland of Cephalonia: and as one would throw a glaffe againft a wall, even fo the shipp opened, and fell in peces, whereby the forowfull Mariners that floode above, (the seas being couered with goodes, coaffers and plancks of the ship that swam aboue water, which chaunceth many times in fuch like accidents, the night being darke and the billowes going high and fiireinable, fuch as were able to swim, began to take holde of thofe thinges which Fortune gaue vnto them. Amonges whom wretched Landolpho, feinge death before his face (which he fo greatly defired, and fo many times craued the day before, rather then to retourne home in that poore eflate) was afraied, and caught hold of a borde amognes the reft, trufting it might chaunce that God woulde pardon him of drowninge, and fende him fome refuge for his efcape. And as hee was a horfeback, and fletinge vpon a plancke, fo wel as he could, (driuen here and there with the Sea and winde) he helde fafte the fame till it was day lighte: which when he perceiued, he looked about him and faw nothing but the cloudes, the Seas, and a coaffer, swimminge aboue water, which was driuen fo nere him, that it made him manye times to feare that it would be his overthrow. And the nerer it came, the more hee laboured to put it backe (fo well as he could) with his hande, although his force and power was gone: but how fooner it chaunced, a gale of winde blew out of the fkiies, and ftraike the coaffer againft the borde whereuppon Landolpho was, who by that meanes driuen backe, was forced to glue ouer the plancke, and with a billow was beaten vnder the water, and afterwardes, remounting aloft againe, hee fwan more through feare then force. And feing the borde caried a farre of from him, fearinge lef he should not be able to faften the fame againe, he drewe toward the coaffer which was nere ynough vnto him, and laying his
breathe upon the couer thereof, he made it go (so right as he could) with his armes. And in this maner driuen by the Sea, now here now there, without eating (as hauing not wherewithall) and drinking more then he would, he continued all that day and night following not knowing wher he was, for he sawe nothing but Sea. The next morning, eyther by the will of God, or through the windes force, Landolpho (which was then transformed into a sponge) holding faste with both his handes the brimme of the coafer, (like as we see them that feare to be drowned, do take hold of the next thinge that commeth to hande,) arrived at the shore of the Isle of Corfu, wher by fortune, a poore woman was seeing her vessell with Sand and Salt water, who seing him draw nere, and perceyuing in him no forme or fashion of a man, was afraid, and crying out ranne backe. He not able to speake, and see but very little, could say nothinge, but as the Sea droue him nere the shore, the woman dierfied the likenes of a coafer, and beholding the same more aduifedlye, saw at lengthe his armes vpon the same and therewithal his face, marueiling with her felie who it shou'd be: wherfore moued with compaffion, she wente into the Sea a little waye, which then was calme, and catching him by the heare, she pluckte him and the coafer to lande: and with much a doe unfolded his armes that were about the coafer, causing her maide that was with her to carrie the coafer vpon her head: and she bare him to lande, (like a little childe,) which done, she put him into a hotte house, and with warme water, by frotting and robbing him, his naturall heate, and other his fences loft, began to come againe into their former courfe. And when he sawe time she tooke him out, cherishing and comfortinge him with wynes and brothes, and so well as shee could, made him at lengthe to recouuer his force in such wise as he knew wher he was. Then the woman deliuered him his coafer, which he had faued, and badde him to seeke his adventure. And thus this good woman delt with Landolpho, who little esteemed the coafer, but yet he considered that it coulde not be of so small value, but that it was able to beare his charges for certaine dayes. Howbeit, feelinge it to be lighte, he was cleare voyde of hope to haue anye succour and reliefe thereof. Neuerthelesse (when the good wyfe was out of the doores) he
brake open the fame to see what was within, where he found many precious Jewels, some bound together and some loose, wherein he had pretie skill: and knowing them to be of great value, giving thanckes to God, which had not yet forfaken him, was wholly recomforted. Howbeit, for so much as in a little space he had bin twice cruellye distrefsed and tormented by Fortune, fearing the third time, he thought that it was needeful for him to take heed how to dispose his things in safetie till he came home to his owne house. Wherefore hauing bestowed those precious Jewels in certaine ragges and cloutes so well as he could, he said to the good wife that he had no neede of the coafer, but if shee would giue him a bagge, he would bestow the same vppon her: which the good wife willingly did. And Landolpho giuing her so great thanckes as he could, for the kindnes which he had found at her hands, toke his leaue, and imbarking himselfe, he paffed to Branditio, and from thence from place to place till hee came to Trani, where findinge diuers of the Citie wherein he dwelt, that were Drapers, he was apparelled of them (in a maner for Gods sake) to whom he told the discourse of all his fortune, except the coafer, who lent him a horse, and sent diuers in his company to bring him home to Rauello. And when he was in safety arrived, he thanked God that had brought him thither, where he searched his bouget with more leasure then he did at the first, and founde that he had manye stones of so greate value, that sellinge them at price reasonable, for leffe then they were worth, his substance did amount to so much more then it was when he departed from his house. And when he had founde the meanes to dispatch and sell his Jewels, he sent to Corfu a good peece of money, to the woman that toke him oute of the Sea, to recompence the kindnes, that he had found at her handes: and

the like to them of Trani, that had giuen him apperell, the rest he toke to himselfe and would be no more a Marchaunte,

but liued at home in honest estate to the ende of his life.
THE THIRTY-SIXTH NOUELL.

Andreuccio of Perugia being come to Naples to buy horses, was in one night surprised, with three maruelous accidentes. All which hauinge escaped with one Rubie he retourned home to his house.

There was at Perugia a yong man, called Andreuccio di Pietró, a horfe corfer, who vnderstanding of a horfe faire at Naples, did put five hundred Crownes in his purfle, and neuer traueling before from his owne house, went thither with certayne other marchants, who arriued at Naples vpon a Sunday at night. The next morninge, accoridinge to the instructiouns giuen him by his hoft, he went to the fayre, where he viewed and faw many horfes, whereof diuers did very well like him, and demaunded their prifes: but with none he could agree of price. And to shew himselfe a right well able man to paye for that he boughte, many times (like a dolte and foole as he was) hee drew out his purfle stuffed with crownes, in the preſence of them that paffed to and fro.

It chaunced that a yonge woman of Scicilia (which was very fayre, but at euery man's commaundement, and that for little hire) paffed by as he was shewinge his purfle, not marked or perceiued by Andreuccio, who fodenlye faide to her felfe: "What is she in all this towne, that shoule be like vnto me, if all thofe crownes were mine?" And fo paffed forth. There was with this yonge peate, an old woman, a Scicilian alfo, who fo fone as she efpied Andreuccio, forfoke her companion and ran affectuouſlye to imbrace him. Which the yonge woman perceyuinge (not fpeaking a word) she gaue good heede to that they faid: Andreuccio tourninge himſelfe to the olde woman, immediatlye knew her, and reioyfed muche that he had fo happily met her: whom after greate gratuſlacions and manye welcomes, she promifed to viſite at his lodginge, which done, she departed from Andreuccio, and hee retourned to buy his horffe, howbeit that morning he bought none at all. The yonge dame, which had firſt feene this purfle, and marked the acquiſtance between the old woman and him, to affaie by
what means he might get that money, or at lease some part thereof, subtely asked the old woman what man that was, of whence, what he did there, and how he knew her. To whom the olde woman particularly recompted her whole acquaintaunce, how she dwelt of long time in Scicilia with his father, and afterwards at Perugia. And likewise she told her when he retourned, and for what cause he was come to Naples. This iollie wenche, wholy informed of Andreuccio his parentes, and of their names, made a plat and foundation, by subtil and craftie meanses, how to obtaine her purpose: and when she was come home to her house, she sent the old woman about businesse for that day, because she might not retorne to Andreuccio. She had dwelling with her a pretie girle, well nofeled and brought vp in doing of arrantes, whom about euening, she sent to the lodging of Andreuccio to make inquirie for him: where by fortune she chaunced to finde him standing alone at his hostes doore, whom the girle did ask he knew not an honest man of Perugia called Andreuccio di Pietro, that hoste there: "Yes my girle (quothe he) I am the same man." Then she toke him a side, and faide vnto him, "Sir, there is a gentlewoman of this towne, that would gladly speake with you, if it were your pleasure." Which when Andreuccio heard, by and by he called to minde, and seemed to himselfe that hee was a goodly yonge man of person, and that without doubte the same woman was in loue with him, because in all Naples he thought ther was none so proper a stripling as himselfe: whom incontinent he aunswere, that he would vaie vpon her, demaunding when he should come and to what place. To whom she made answere. "Euen when it pleaseth you sir, for my maistresse attendeth at home for you. Andreuccio vpon that, without any word spoken to his hoste, whither he was gone, said to the wenche. "Go thou before, and I will follow." And the girle did conduct him to her maistres house, which dwelt in a streate called Marpertugio, a name shewing the honestie of the streate, wher she dwelt. But he knowing and suspecting nothing, thought the place to be right honest that he went vnto, and the wife likewise honest and good, and boldly entred the house, the wenche going before: and mountinge vp
the fiaiers, this yonge griflle called her maistres, sayinge vnto
her that maister Andreuccio was come. Who redie at the upper
steppe, seemed as though she attended for him. This Ladie was
fine and had a good face, well appareled and trimmed after the
beft maner. And seinge maister Andreuccio at hand, descended
two steppes of the fiaiers with her armes open to imbrace him,
foldinge the fame aboute his necke, and paused a certaine space
without speaking any word, as though great loue and earnefte
affection enforced her fo to doe. Then weeping, she kifled his
face, and with a voice halfe uttered betwene howling and
speaking, she said vnto him: “O Andreuccio mine owne deare
hart, moft hartely welcome.” Andreuccio marueyling at thofe
tender words, all amazed aunswere: “Gentlewoman, and you
also well found out.” Afterwards she toke him by the hand and
conued him vp into a parlour, and from thence (without further
talke) into a chamber, which was all perfumed with Roses, with
flowers of Oreges, and other swete smelles: where he sawe a
bedde well furnifhed, and diuers fortis of apparell placed vp
pon presles (accordinge to the maner of that countrie) and many
other faire and riche ornaments. By reafon whereof Andreuccio,
which was but a freshe water Souldiour, thought that shee had
been a great ladie. And they two sittinge together vppon a
chefte, at her bed’s feete, she began thus to saye vnto him.
“Andreuccio, I am affured you do greatly wonder at these
faire words, this curteous interteignement, and at the teares
which I let falle. And no maruile, although you do not know
mee, and peraduenture neuer heard tel of me before: but I wil
declare vnto you a thing more straunge and marueilous then
that is: and to tell you plaine, I am your owne fifter, and I say
vnto you, that fith it hath pleased my Lord God, to shew me fo
much grace and favour, that I doe now see one of my brethren
before I die (althoughe I desire to see them all) I care not when
hee do call mee from this wretched world: I am fo in minde
comforted and releued. And where it may chaunce, that you
neuer vnderfloode fo much before this time, I will tell you the
whole difcourage. So it is, that Pietro my father and yours, dwelt
of long time (whereof it is possible, that you haue heard report)
at Palermo, where through the goodnesse and frendlye behavioure of him, there be yet some remayninge that did beare him singular good wil and frendship. But amonges other which loued him moste, my mother (which was a gentlewoman, and then a widow) without doubt did loue him best: in fuch wife, that fhe forgetting the lone of her father, and of her brethren, and the lone of her owne honour and reputation, they deald so together as they beget mee, and am here as you see. Afterwardes when your father and mine had occasion to depart from Palermo, he returned to Perugia, leaving my mother behinde, and me his yong daughter, neuer after that (so farre as I knowe) caringe neither for my mother or me: whereof if he were not my father, I coulde blame him very much, consideringe his ingratitude towards my mother. Albeit, he ought to vfe towards mee so muche affection and fatherlye loue as to his owne daughter, being come of no kitchin maide, ne yet of anye bafe woman: for my mother otherwise not knowinge what he was, did commit into his handes (moued of mere loue) both herselfe and all that she had. But what? thinges ill done, and so longe time past, are more easie to be reprehended then amended. Thus the matter went, he left mee a little infante at Palermo, where when I was grown to yeares, my mother which was riche, gau mee to wife, to one of the house of Gergenti, a gentleman of great honesty and reputation, who for the loue of my mother and me, returned to dwell at Palermo, where greatly fauouringe the faction of the Guelphi, hee began to practize a certayne enterprife with our king Charles, which being knowne to king Frederick, before the fame enterprife could take effect, we were forced to flie out of Scicilia: at what time I had thought to have been the chiefeft ladie, that euer dwelte in that Island. Wherfore taking with vs fuch fewe things as wee were able to carie (fewe I maye well call them, in respect of them we posseffed) and leaung our houfes and Palaces, we came vnto this citie: where we found kinge Charles so beninge towards vs, that he hath recompensed part of our losse, which we suffened in his service. For he hath giuen vs posseffions and houfes, with good prouision of housholde to my husband and your brother in law, as you now see and per-
ANDREUCCIO.

ceiue: and in this maner I do remaine here, where (sweete brother) I thancke God (and not you) that at this present I see you:” and therewithal she toke him about the necke, weeping tenderly, and then kisst his face againe. Andreuccio hearing this tale spokene in order, and digested from poinct to poinct with good utterance, wherof no word flunce betwene her teeth, or was impeached by defect of tongue, and remembred how it was true that his father dwelt at Palermo, knowing alfo by himselfe the maner of yong men, which in their youth be promtete and willinge to louse, and seinge her tender teares, her embracinges and honefte kifles, thoughte all that shee had spokene to be moste certaine and true. And after shee had done her tale, he answered in this wife: “Madame you may not thincke vnkindnesse, if I do maruell at this, for that in verye deede, I haue no acquaintaunce of you, no more then if you had never beene borne: but whether my father hath spokene of you or of your mother at any time, truly I do not now remember: but so much the more I do reioyce that I haue founde a fister here (as is true) becaufe I am here alone: and certainly I knowe none so honourable, but you may seeme agreeable vnsto him so well as to mee, which am but a poore marchaunt: howbeit, I do beseche you to tell me how you did know that I was in the City.” To whom she aunswere: “This morning a poore woman which offtentimes repaireth to my house, gaue me knowledge thereof, becaufe of long time (as she told me) she did dwell with your father at Palermo and at Perugia: and becaufe I thought it more convenienent and meete, to bidde you home to mine owne house then to feke you in another mans, I thought good to sende for you.” After these words, she began in order to inquire of the state of his parents, calling them by their proper names: whereunto Andreuccio made aunswere, that now he percieued he had better caufe to giue credite vnsto her words then before. Their discouerse and talke of thinges being long and the weather hot, shee called for Greke wine and comfits, and made Andreuccio to drinke. Who after the banquet, desirous to depart to his lodging (for it was about supper time) she by no meanes woulde suffer him, but making as though she were angrie, said vnsto him: “Oh God! I see now moft euidently, that you do
make little accompte of mee, being your owne fitter whom you neuer sawe before, and in her house: wherunto you ought to re-forse when so euer you come to towne: and will you nowe forsake the same to suppe in an Inne? But of trust you shall not chose but take part of my supper: and although my husband be not at home (whereof I am righte forie,) yet you shall knowe that his wife is able to make you some good chere." To whom Andreuccio, not knowing wel what to say els, made this aunfeare: "I do lone you as I oughte to lone a fitter: but if I goe not to mine Inne, I know they will tarie for mee all this night before they go to supper, to my great reproch and shame." "Praifed be God (quoth she then) I haue seruantes to auertifie your hoft that you be here with me, to the intente hee shall not tarie for you. But pleafeth you fir, to do me this great curtefie, that I may sende for your companions hither to beare you company, that afterwardes, if you will needes depart, ye may goe all together." Andreuccio aunfeared, that he would send for none of his company that night: but for so much as she was so importunate, he hismeselfe was righte well content to satisfie her request. Then she made as though shee had sent to his Inne to give word that they should not tarie for him: and after much communication supper was placed vpon the table, serued in with manye deuies and fondrie delicats abundantly, and she with like sleights continued the supper till it was darke night. And when they rofe from the table, Andreuccio made haft to departe, but shee would not suffer him, tellinge him that Naples was a towne fo straight of orders that none might walke abrode in the night, and specially straungers; and that like as she had sent word how they should not tary for him at supper, even so she had done for his bedde. All which Andreuccio beleefing, and taking pleafure that he was with his fitter, (deceived though he were of his falue belife) was wel contented to tarie. Their talke and communication after supper was of purpofe dilated and protracted, and one part of the night being spent, she left Andreuccio in his chamber going to bedde, and a little boye to waite vpon him to see that he lacked nothinge, and shee with her women went into another chamber. The time of the yeare was very hotte, wherefore Andreuccio being alone,
striped himselfe and laid his hose and doublette vnder his beddes head, and desirous to go to the priuie, he asked the boie where it was, who pointing to the doore in a corner of the chamber, said vnto him: "Goe in there." Andreuccio safely wente in, and chaunced by Fortune to let his foote vpon a borde, which at both endes was looofe from the ioyft whereupon it lay, by reason whereof the bord and he tumbled downe into the Iakes: and God so loued him, that in the fall he received no hurt although it were of a good height, fauing he was imbroined and arraied with the dunge of the place, wherof the Iakes was full. Which place (to the intent you may the better vnderstand what is said, and what shall follow) euen as it was I wil describe vnto you. There was in a little straighte entrie (as manye times we see betweene two houfes) certaine bordes laied vpon two Ioiffes, betwene the one houfe and the other: vpon which was placed the feate of the priuie, one of which bordes was the fame that fell downe with Andreuccio, who now being in the bottome of the Iakes, forowfull for that sodaine chaunce, cried oute to the boie for helpe. But the boie so soone as hee hearde, that hee was fallen, wente in to tell his maistres, whoe by and by ranne into his chamber to seeke for his clothes: and when she had founde them, and in the fame his money, which Andreuccio like a foole, without mistruste, still caried about him: she now posseffed the thing for which she had before laied the snare, in sayning her selfe to be of Palermo and the daughter of one of Perugia. And caring no longer for him, she straight way shut fast the priuie doore whereat he went forth when he fell. Andreuccio seing that the boie would not aunswere, began to cry out a loude, but all was in vaine: wherefore suspecting the cause, and beginning somewhat to late to vnderstande the deceit, he kept ouer a little wall which closed the place from the sight of the street. And when he was in the open streete he went to the dore of the houfe, which he knew well ynough, makinge a noife, rapping hard and long at the doore, but it was in vaine: for which cause he began to complaine and lamente, like vnto one that manifely saw his miffortune, saying: "Alas, in howe litle time hauie I lost ffe hundred crownes and a fister." And after many other words, he began
againe to bounfe at the doore, and to crie out. He rapped so long and cryed so loude, as he waked manye of the neighbours there aboutes, who not able to suffer that noyfe, rose out of their beds, and amongst others one of the maides of the houfe (fayning her selfe to be sleepe) looked out at the window and saide in great rage: "What noyfe is beneath?" "Oh" saide Andreuccio, "do yee not know me? I am Andreuccio, the brother of madame Floredelice?" "Thou haft droncke to much me thinketh, (quoth the maide) go sleepe and come againe to morow: I know none called Andreuccio, nor yet do vnderstand what thou meanest by those foolish words, get thee hence good man and let vs sleepe I pray thee." "Why (quoth Andreuccio) doest thou not heare me what I say? thou knowest me well ynowth if thou wilt, but if the Scicilian kinred be so fone forgotten, give me my clothes which I haue left behinde me, and I will go hence with al my hart." Whereat the maide laughed and faide: "I thineke the man is in a dreame:" and with that she tourned her selfe and shut fast the window. Andreuccio now furie and certaine of his losse, attached with incredible forow, conuerted his anger into rage, thoughte to recouer by anoiaunce that which he could not get with fayre wordes. Wherefore takinge vp a bigge stone, he began againe with greater blowes to beate at the doore. Which when manye of the neighbours (that before were waked oute of their sleepe and rifen) did heare, thinking that it was some troublesome fellow that counterfeited those words to anoye the good wife of the houfe, and all they likewise troubled with the noyfe: loking out of the windowes, began to rate him with one voice (like a forte of Curres of one ftrate, which doe baule and barke at a ftraunge Dogge that pafieth by) sayinge: "This is to much flame and villanie, to come to the houfes of honest women at that time of the night, and to speake such fonde wordes. Wherefore (good man) gette thee hence for God’s fake, and let vs sleepe: if thou haue any thing to do with the good wife, come againe to morow and disquiet vs no more to night." With which wordes, as poore Andreuccio was somewhat appeased, one that was within the houfe, a ruffian (that kept the good wife) whom Andreuccio neuer saw, nor heard before: looked out of the windowe, and
with a bigge and horrible voice, demaunded who was beneath? Whereat Andreuccio lifting vp his head, saw one, that so far as he could perceiue, seemed to be a long lubber and a large, with a blacke beard, and a sterne visage, looking as though he were newly rysen from bedde, ful of sleepe, gaping and rubbing his eyes. Whom Andreuccio aunaweared in fearefull wife, saying: "I am the good wiu'e's brother of the house." But the Ruffian interrupting his aunware, speaking more fiercely then at the first, said: "I know not who thou arte, but if I come downe, I will so codgel and bombafte thee, as thou shalte not be able to stature thy selfe, like an affe and dronken beast as thou art, which all this night wilt not suffer vs to slepe." And with these wordes turning himselfe aboute, he shutte the windowe. Diuers of the neighbours (which knewe better the conditions of that terrible Ruffian) speakinge faire to Andreuccio, faide vnto him: "For God's sake good man, depart hence in time, and suffer not thy selfe to be slaine:" "Gette thee hence (quoth an other) and faye not but thou haddest warning." Whereat Andreuccio being appalled, and with the Ruffians woordes and fight amazed, moued likewise by the counfaile of the neighbours that spake to him as he thoughte, in charitable wyfe, toke his waye to retourne to his Inne, the forowfulles man that euer liued, and in greatest despaire, for loss of his money. Turninge that way, wherein he was guided by a little girlie the day afore, and anoyed with the stench that he felt about him: desirous to goe to the sea side to wafe him, hee declined to muche on the left hande, taking the waye vp to the fstreet called La Ruga Catellana, and as hee was marching vp the highest parte of the citie, by chaunce hee sawe twoo men before him, with a lanthorne light in one of their handes, coming towards him, for anoyding of whom (because he feared that it was the watche, or some other ill dispose perfones) he hidde him selfe in an olde house harde by. But they (as of purpose) went to the very fame place: where one of them discharging hym selfe of certain instrumentes of yron, whiche he bare vpon his backe, both of them did vewe and furueie those yrons, debating of diuers thinges touching the fame, and as they were talking togetheres, one of them sayde: "What meaneth this? I smel the
foullest stench, that euer I felte in all my life." And when he had sayd so, he lift vp the Lanthorne and espied miserable Andreuccio couching behinde the wall, and being a frayde, asked who it was, Andreuccio helde his peace. But they approching neare him with their lighte, demanded what hee made there, so filthely arrayed. To whom Andreuccio refered the whole aduenture as it chaunceth. Who considering the canfe of that misfortune, sayd one to an other: this no doubt was done in the house of Scara-
bone Butta Fuoco: and tournyng towards Andreuccio, one of them sayde vnto him. "Good man, although thou haft loft thy money, yet thou haft great canfe to praye God that it was thy chaunce to falle, and not to enter againe into the house: for if thou haddest not fallen, affyre thy felfe that when thou haddest bene a flepethylene, thy throte had bene cutte, and so with thy money
shouldefte haue loft thy life. But what auaileth it, nowe to wepe and lament: for thou haft fo fone plucke the farres out of the Skye, as enuer recover one peny of thy loftif: and without doubt he will kill thee, if hee vnderstande that thou make any worde thereof." When they had sayde so, and had giuen
him that admonition, they comforted him in this wyse. "Good felowe, we doe lament thy state: And therefore, if thou wilt ioyne thy felfe with vs, about an enterprife, which we haue in hande: we waraunt thee, thou shalt get a great deale more than thou haft loft." Andreuccio like one in extreame dispaire, was content. The daie before was buried one Meffer Philippo Minutulo, an Archebifhop of Naples, in riche pontificalles and ornamentes, with a Rubie vpon his finger, that was worth five hundred Ducates of golde, whome they purpofted to robbe and dispoyle, telling Andreuccio the whole order of their intent: who more couetous, then well aduised, went with them. And going towards the great church: Andreuccio his perfume began to fente very strong, whereupon one of them sayde. "Is it not poiffible to deuife a waye, that this shitten beafe may waife him felle in fome place, that he finke no more thus filthelie?" "Yes, (quod the other) there is a pitte here harde by, ouer whiche there hangeth a pulley, and a great bucket, where we may preffently waife him." When they were come to the pitte, they founde the rope hanging ftilly vpnon the
but the bucket was taken away: wherefore they thought beste to tie him to the rope, and to let him downe the pitte to waife him selfe: and that when he was washed, he should wagge the rope, and they woulde hoist he vp againe. Whiche they did, But it chaunce that whiles he was thus clenfing him selfe in the pitte: the watche of the citie (because they swepte and the night was very hot), being drie and thristie came to the pitte to drinke. The other twoo perceiuing the watche at hande, left Andreuccio in the pitte and ranne awaye. The watche whiche was come thether to drinke, perceiued not those two that were fledde; and Andreuccio being still in the bottome, when he had clenfed him selfe, began to wagge the rope. The watche fitting downe by the pittes fyde caste of their clokes and layde downe their halberdes and other weapons, and began to drawe vp the rope, thinking that the bucket full of water was tied to the fame. When Andreuccio was haled vp, to the brincke of the pitte, hee forfode the rope, and cast him selfe with one of his handes vpone the fyde of the fame. When the watche fawe that, they for feare ranne away fo faste as they could without speaking any worde. Whereof Andreuccio did marueile very much: and if he had not taken good holde, he had fallen agayne downe to the bottome, to his great hurt, and peraduenture not without peril of his life. Notwithstanding being out of the pitte, and finding halberdes and other weapons there, which he knew wel his fellows brought not with them: he then began muche more to wonder. But betweene feare and ignorance of that which happened, complaing him self of his harde fortune, without touching of any thing, he determined to go from thence, and wandred he could not tell whether. But as he was departing from that place, he met his fellows, retiring backe to drawe him vp. And when they perceiued him alredie haled out of the pitte, they wer wonderfully abashed, and asked who drewe him out? Andreuccio made aunfwer, that he coulde not tell, rehearsing to them in order, what had chaunce, and of the things he founde without. They understanding the matter, laughed and tolde him againe the caufe, wherefore they ran awaye, and what they were that drewe him vp. And without further talke (being then about mid-
night, they repaired to the great churche: into the whiche they easely entred: and wente to the Tombe, whiche was of Marble, verie huge and weightie: the couer whereof being verye great, with their crowes of yron, and other tooles, they lifted vp so farre, as one man was able to enter, which doen, one asked an other, who should goe in? "Not I" quod one: "And not I" (quod the other) "No, nor I" quod Andreuccio. The other twoo hearing Andreuccio faye so, stpped vnto hym, saying: "Wilte thou not goe in? by the faythe wee owe to God: if thou goe not in, we will fo beate thee, with one of these yron barres, as thou shalt never sturre againe out of this place." Andreuccio being made their common riding foole, greatly fearing when he heard them faye so, went in: and when he was in the graue, he sayde vnto him felfe. "Thefe good felowes do make me goe in, because they would deceiue me: for when I haue geuen them all that is here, and I readie to come out, they meane to runne awaie to faue them felues, and to leave me behinde without any parte thereof." Wherefore he purposed first, to take his owne porcion to him felfe: and remembring the Ring of great valour, whereof they tolde him: so fone as he was in the graue, he pulled it of from the Archebishops finger, and put it vpon his ow: and afterwardees taking the Crosse, the Miter and the Gloues, dispoyling him euen to his shyrt, he gane them all sayning. "That there was nothing els." But they pressinge vpon him that there was a ring behinde, willed him thoroughlie to make searche for it: howebeit he stil aunswered that he could not finde it. And becaufe he would make them to tarie a litlle longer, he fained as though he had made a further searche. The other so subtile and malicious as he, bad him to feke stil: and when they faw time, they toke away the proppes that flaised vp the Tombe, and ran awaye, leaung poore Andreuccio fast shutte in the graue. Whichte when Andreuccio percieued, what chaunced to him then, eche man may consider: then he affayed some times with his shoulders, sometymes with his head, to remoue the couer, but all was in vaine. Wherefore euen for verie sorrowe, he fell in a fownde vpon the dead bodie of the Bifhop. And if a man had seene them both at that instant, it coulde not well haue bene discerned, whether was the dead
ANDREUCCIO.

155

corps, the Archebification dead, or poore Andreuccio dying: but after he was come to himself, he began piteously to complains, seing he was arrived to one of these two ends, either in the Tombe to die for hunger, and with the stenche of the dead bodie, putrifying with wormes, if no man came to open it: or else to be hanged as a thiefe, if hee were founde within: and as he was in these considerations tormented with fowles: he heard a noyse in the church of divers men, who as he thought came to the like fa{t}e, that he and his felowe had done before, wherewith his feare began much more to augmente. But after they had opened the grave and stayed it vp, it came in question amongst them who should go in. And when they had contended a good space about the same, a priest that was in the companie sayde. "Why are ye afrayde? doe ye thinke that hee will eate you? the dead neuer eate men: I will go in my selfe." And when he had sayde so, he laied him downe vpon his brest at the side of the grave, and thrusting his feete in before, he went downe. Andreuccio seeing that, ered him selfe vp right and catcht the Priest by one of the legges, making as though he would have drawen him in: which when the priest perceived, he cried out a loude, speeding him selfe out so fast as he could. Wherewithal the reste dismaid almost out of their wittes, leauing the grave open, take their legges and ran, as though a hundred thousand devils had bene at their tailes: whiche seing, Andreuccio (more joyful then he looked for) lepte out of the grave, and ran as fast as he could out of the Churche, at the place where he came in.

At what time daylight began to appeare, and he with the ringe on his finger, wandred he wiste not whether, tyll he came to the Seaside, and at length recouered his Inne, where he founde his companie and his hoste al that night, taking greate care for him. To whome recompting that whiche chaunced, his hoste gaue him aduise incontinently, to get him out of Naples, whiche prentely he did: and retournd to Perugia, hauing bestowed his v. C. crownes vpon a rynge, whiche he thought to haue imploied vpon horses:

for whiche cause he made that iourney.
THE THIRTY-SEVENTH NOUELL.

The erle of Angiers being falsely accused, was banished out of Fraunce, and left his two sonnes in sondry places in Engelande, and retouning (unknown) by Scotelande, founde them in great authoritie, afterwardes he repayred in the habite of a feraunte, to the Frenche kinges armie, and being knowne to be innocent, was againe aduaunced to his firft estale.

The Romaine Empire being transferred from the Frenche, vnto the Almanes, there rofe a great discencion betwene both the nacions, and in the ende a cruel and continuall warre. For whiche cause, as well for the defence of his kingdome, as to offende his enimies, the Frenche king and one of his sonnes, with all the power of their owne Realme and of their frendes and allies, assembled a great hoste of menne to encounter with their enemies: and before they proceeded, because they would not leave their realme without a gouernour, knowing Gaultieri, Erle of Angiers, to be a gentle and fage knight, and their mofte trulie frend, and that he was a man moste expert in the art of warfare, seming vnto them (notwithstanding) more apt to pleasure, then paine, lefte him Lieutenaut general in their place, for the gouernement of the whole kingdome of Fraunce: and proceded in their enterprize. The Erle then began with great knowledge, and by good order, to execute his office committed vnto hym, doynge nothinge withoute the confente of the Queene and her fayre daughter in lawe, although they were lefte to be vnder his cufodie and gouernement, yet nerertheles, he honoured them as his Maiitresses and superiours. The Erle Gaultieri was a beautiful personage, about the age of fourtie yeares, so familiar and well condicioned, as any gentleman could be, and be sides that, hee was the moste excellent and trimmest knight that was knowne in those dayes, and one mofte comelie in his apparell. It chaunced that the king and his sonne, being at the warres aforesaide, the wife of the Erle died in the meane whyle, leauing him onely twoo litle yong children, a sonne and a daughter, whiche he had by her. He then frequenting the court
of the aforesaid ladies, talking many times with theim about the
affaires of the Realme: the wife of the kings sonne, fixed her eyes
vpon him, and with great affection (for his persone and vertues)
feruently embraced hym with secrete loue. And knowing her
felle to bee yonge and frehe, and him to be without a wyfe,
thought (sodainly) to bring to passe, that whiche shee desired, and
thinking that nothing could lette it but onelye shame to discover
it, shee purposed ytterlye to abandonne the fame. And vpon a
daye beyng alone, shee fente one to seke the Erle, as though shee
would haue communicated with him of other matters. The Erle
whole mynde was farre different from the Ladies, incontinently
came vnto her: who beyng fette downe together vpon a bedde
(whiche she desired) alone in a chamber, he asked her twyfe vpon
what occaision she fente for hym: and she hauing nothing to faye
vnto hym, pressed in the ende, and rapte with loue waxed verye
shamefafte and almooste wepinge, and quaking for feare, with faynte
woordes, began to faye as foloweth. "My derely beloued and
louingfrende, and Lorde, you may easely knowe (beyng a wyfe
man as you be) the frailtie of men and women: and by diuers
considerations, the weakenesse to be more in the one, then in the
other. Wherefore (before a iust iudge) one fault of diuers qual-
ties, ought not of reason to receive one like punishement. More-
ouer who is he that will faye, that a poore man or woman, which
getteth their liuing with the labour of their bodie, ought not more
to be reprehended if they become amorous, and subiect to their
lustes, then the riche Ladie whiche taketh no care for her liuing,
or wanteth any thing that shee desyreth. Truely I beleue there is
none that will faye fo: for which reason I suppoze that the things
beforesayd, ought to ferue the greatest part of the excuse to the
aduantage of her that doth possesse them: if it happen that shee
gewe her felle fully to the conductions of loue: and the superflu-
sage of her saide excuse ought to consiffe, in that shee hath
chosen her a faye and vertuous frende, if shee that loueth hath
done fo in dede. Whiche twoo thinges as they ought to be (in
my iudgement) fo they are in me, and many other also: whiche
ought to induce me to loue, accordingly as my youth requireth,
and the great disfaunce that is betweene my husbande and mee.
It behoueth nowe then, that they shoulde aduance them felues in your presence, for the defence of my burning loue: and if the same do raine in you, whiche haue power in the wise, then I befeche you to gene me counsayle and aide in the thing which I shal demande. True it is, that for the long absence of my hus- bande (not able to refift the prickes of the fleche, and the force of loue) whiche be of suche great effect, that they haue many times past and yet daily do vanquifhe and overcom, not only feble and weake women, but also the strongest men. I liuing in eafe and idlenes as you fe, and forced to folowe the pleafures of loue and to become amourous: and as I do knowe well, that suche things (if they were known) shoulde not be reputed honest. Neuertheleffe, the fame being kepfe secrete, I truife shall not be reprocheful. Notwithstanding dame Loue is fo fauourable vnto mee, that not onely thee hath gene me true judgment in choife of a frende, but hath reuiled vnto me that it is you which is worthy to be beloved, of suche a Ladie as I am. For if I be not greatlye deceived, I doe make accompte that you be the fayreft perfonage, the femelieft, the moft curteous, and wyseft gentleman, in all the Realme of Fraunce. And as I maye faye, by reafon of his absence, that I am without a husband fo may you affirme that you be without a wise: wherefore I befeche you, for the loue that I beare vnto you, that you will not denye me your loue and frend- ship, and that you will haue pitie vpon my young yeares, whiche doubtles do consume for you, as I fee againft the fierie flames.” At which worde the teares ran downe in fuch abundance, as where she thought to make further supplication and praiers, she had no more power to speake. But holding downe her head, like one that was overcome, she threw her felfe downe into the Erles lappe, who like a faithfull knight, began to blame (with sharpe re- bukes) her fonde and foolifhe loue: pushing her from hym, as she was about to clepe him aboute the necke, and swoore great othes, that rather hee woulde be drawn in peces then content to fuche a thing, to bee done by him, or any other, againft the honour of his Lorde and maifter. Whiche woordes the Ladie hearing, fodainly forgat her loue, and in great rage, sayde vnto him: “Shall I then be frustrate, thou arrent villayne, in this wyfe of my de-
fired ioye? but styens thou goest about, to seke my destruction, I will cause thee to be put to death, or els to be banyished the worlde.” When she had sayde so, by and by the caught her selfe by the heare of the head, and almofte tare it of cleane, and then layde handes vpon her garments, renting the same in peeces, and afterwardees cried out aloude: “Helpe, helpe, the Erle of Angiers wil rauiyne me by force.” The Earle seeing that (and farre more doubting of the enui, and malice of the Courte, then his owne confience, for any committed facte, fearing alfo, that more credite would be geuen to the wickedness of the Ladie, then to his innocencie) conueighed him selfe from that place, and so soone as hee could, hee wente out of the palace, and fledde home to his owne houfe, where without any further aduife, he placed his children on horesebacke, and so well as he coulde caried them to Callice. At the brute and noyfe of the ladie, many people assembled: who seing and hearing the occasion of her crie, not onely beleued her wordes, but alfo affirmed, that the pompoufe state of the Erle, was vfed by him to bring to passe, th’effect of his desire. Then they ranne to the houfes of the Erle, in great furie, to arreste his perfone: but not finding hym there, they firfte facked his houfes, and afterwardees ouerthrew them to the grounde. The newes hereof (so wicked as might be deuised) arriued at the king and dolphins Campe, whereof they were so troubled and offended, as they condemned the Earle, and all his progenie to perpetuall exile: promising great giftes and rewardes, to them that would present them quicke or dead. The Erle being offended in his confience, for that he was fled, innocent of the facte, made himself culpable therof, and arriued at Callice with his children, difembling what he was, and sodainlye passed ouer into England, and in poore apparel, traualied vp to London. And before he entred the citie, he gau his children diuers admonicions, but spacially of two things: First, that they should beare paciently the pouertie, wherunto fortune (without their offence) had brought them. Afterwardees, that wisely they should take hede, at no time to manifeste and declare from whence they came, and whose children they were, as they loued the price of their owne lyues. The fonne was named Lewes, almofte of the age of nyne yeares, and the doughter called
Violenta, was about the age of vii. bothe whiche chylde, as
their age could suffre them, did well obserue their fathers heft,
as afterwardes it did right wel appeare. And because that this
might the better be brought to passe, it feme good vnfo to him, to
alter their names, naming the fon Perotto, and the daughter
Gianetta. And when they were arrived at London, in maner of
beggers, they craueth their almoſte, and being by fortune for that
purpofe, one morning at a church doore, it came to passe that a
great Lady, which was one of the Marshalles of Englandes wines,
in going out of the church, fawe the Erle and his two litle children
begging their almoſte, of whom she demaundes, what countrie
man he was, and whether thofe children were his owne, or not.
To whom the Erle anfwered, that he was a Picarde, and by reaſon
of a wicked faſt, done by his eldeſt fonne (that was an vnhappy
boye) he was forced to departe his countrie, with thofe his twο
children. The Ladie whiche was pitifull, fixed her eyes vpon the
girle, who pleafed her verie much, because she was beautifull,
gentil, and amiable, saying: "Good man, if thou be content to
leave vnto mee, this thy litle doughter, which hath a good face, I
will willingly take her, and if she become a dutifull maiden, when
she is mariagable, I wil marie her in honest wise." This de-
maundes greatly pleafed the Erle, who redely anſwered, that hee
was contented, and with teares trickeling downe his eyes he de-
lieured and commendes his pretie doughter vnto her. And when
he had thus well beftowed her, he determined to tarrie no longer
there, but in begging his almoſte, trauayled through the countrie,
with his fonne Perotto, and went into Wales, not without great
labour and paine, as one neuer accustomed to trauayle on foote.
Where dwelte one other of the kyng of Englandes Marshalles,
that was of great authoritie, and kepe a noble house: to whose
courte the Erle and his fonne oftentymes repayred, to practife
and begge their liuing: where one of the Marshalles fonnes, and
other Gentlemens chyldren, doyng certayne chyldythes fportes and
paffymes, as to runne and leape, Perotto began to entermedle hym
felfe amonges them (who in thofe games dyd fo excellently well,
as none was his better) whiche thyng diuers tymes the Marshall
perceiuing, well pleaſed with the order of the chyld, afked of
whence hee was. It was tolde him that hee was a poore man's sonne, which many tymes came thither, to begge his almose. The Marshall desiring to hau the childe, the Erle, whiche prayed vnto God for nothing els, liberally gaue hym vnto hym, although it greeued hym to departe from him. The Erle then hauing bestowed his sonne and his daughter, determined no longer to tarrie in England, but so well as he could, he passed ouer into Irelande, and when he was arriued at Stanforde, he placed him selfe in the seruice of a man of armes, belonging to an Erle of that countrie, doing all thinges that did belong vnto a seruing man, or page: and not knowen to any man, hee continued there a long time, with great paine and toile. Violenta named Gianetta, that dwelt with the Ladie at London, grewe so in yeares, in beautie, in perfonage, and in such grace and fauour of her lord and lady, and of all the reste of the house, and so well beloved of al them that knew her, that it was maruailous to see. All men that fawe her maners and countenance, judged her to be worthy of great honour and possession, by reason wherof, the lady that receiued her of her father, not knowing what she was, but by his reporte, purposed to marrie her honourable, according to her worthinesse. But God the rewarde of all mens deerties, knowing her to be a noble woman, and to beare (without cause) the penance of an other man's offence, disposed her otherwise, and to the intent, that this noble gentlewoman might not come into the handes of a man of ill condicions, it must be suppos'd that that whiche came to paffe was by God's own will and pleasure, suffred to be done. The gentlewoman, with whom Gianetta dwelte, had but one onely sonne by her husband, whiche both she and the father, loued verie dearelye: as well because hee was a sonne, as also that in vertue and good merites hee greatly excelled. For hee surpaßed all other in good condicions, valiaunce, goodnes, and beautie of perfonage, being about five yeares elder then Gianetta: who leyng the mayden, to be both sayre and comelye, became so farre in loue with her, as he eftemed her aboue all thinges of the worlde. And because he thought her to be of bafe parentage, he durst not demaunde her of his father and mother to wyfe. But fearing that he should lose their fauour, he kept his loue secret, therby he was
worfe tormented, then if it had bene openly knownen. And thereby it chaunced, through Loue's malice, he fel fore sicke: for whose preservation, were many Phisicians sent for, who marking in him all signes and tokens of sicknes, and not knowing the disease, were altogether doubtfull of his health: wherof the father and mother tooke so great sorrowe and griefe, as was possible, and many times with pitifull prayers, they demaunded of him the occasion of his disease. To whome he gaue for aunfwere, nothing els but heauie sighes, and that he was like to consume, and die for weake-neffe. It chaunced vpwn a daye there was brought vnto him a Phisicion, that was very yonge, but in his science profoundlie learned, and as he was holding him by the poules, Gianetta (who for his mother's sake, attended him very carefully, entered vpwn occasion into the chamber, where he lay sicke, and so fone as the yonge gentleman perceiued her, and that she speake neuer a woorde, or made any signe, or demonstration towards him, he felte in his hart to arise his most amorous desire, wherefore his poules began to beate aboue their common custome: whiche thing the Phisicion immediatlie perceiued and marueiled, standing still to see howe long that fitte would continue. Gianetta was no foner gone out of the Chamber, but the beating of the poules ceased: wherefore the Phisicion thought, that he had founde out some part of the gentleman's disease, and a little while after seming to take occasion to speake to Gianetta holding him still by the armes, he caused her to bee called in, and she incontinently came, but she was no foner entred the chambre but the poules began to beate againe: and when she departed, the beating ceased. Wherupon the Phisicion was thoroughlie perfwaded that he vnderstode the effeit of his sicknes, and therwithall rose vp and taking the father and mother aside, sayde vnto them: "The health of your sonne doth not confite in the helpe of Phisicians, but remaineth in the handes of Gianetta your maide, as I haue perceiued by moste manifest signes, which maide the yong man fervently doth love. And yet (fo farre as I perceiue) the maide doth not knowe it: you therefore vnderstand now what to doe, if you loue his life." The gentleman and his wife hearing this, was somewhat satified: for so muche as remedy might be founde to saue his life, although it
greued them greatly, that the thing whereof they doubted, should come to passe, which was the marriage between Gianetta and their sonne. The Phisicion departed, and they repaired to their sick sonne, the mother saying vnto him in this wyse: “My sonne, I would neuer haue thought, that thou wouldest haue kept secret from mee, any parte of thy desire: specially, seing that without the fame thou doest remaine in daunger of death. For thou art, or ought to be assured, that there is nothing that may be gotten, for thy contentment, whatsoeuer it had bene, but it should haue bene provided for thee, in as ample maner as for my selfe. But fitte thou hast thus done, it chaunceth that our Lord God, hath shewed more mercy vpon thee, then thou hast done vpon thy selfe. And to the ende thou shalt not die of this disease, he hath declared vnto me the caufe of the fame: which is none other, but the great loue that thou bearest to a yonge maiden, whersoever she be. And in deed thou oughtest not to be ashamed, to manifest thy loue, because it is meete and requisite for thyne age. For if I wist thou couldest not loue, I would the lesse esteem thee. Now then my good sonne, be not afraid, franckly to discouer thine affection. Drive away the furie and thought which thou haft taken, and wherof this sickenes commeth, and comfort thy selfe. Being assured, that thou shalt desyre nothing at my handes, that may be done, but it shal be accomplished of mee, that loueth thee better then mine owne life: and therefore expell from thee this shame and feare. And spare not to tell me, if I be able to doe any thing, in that which thou louest. And if thou perceiue, that I be not carefull to bring it to passe, repute me for the cruelllest mother that ever bare childe.” The yonge gentleman hearing these wordes of his mother, was first ashamed, but after thinking with him selfe, that none was so well able to pleasure him as thee (driving awaye all shame) sayed to her in this wyse: “Madame, there is none other thing that hath made me to kepe my loue so secret, but that, which I see by commune proffee in many, who after they be growen to yeares of discretion, doe neuer remembre that they haue bene yonge. But for so much as herein I doe see your Ladihsip diuerce and wyse, I will not onely affirme that to be true, whiche you haue perceiued in me, but also I will confesse
what it is, vpon condicion that the effect shall folowe your promise, so farre as lieth in you, and whereby you shalbe able to recover my life.” Whereunto the mother trustfull to much in that, which she ought not to have accomplisht, for certaine considerations, which afterwarde came into her minde, anfwered him liberally: “That he might boldly dycouver all his desire, and that forthwith she would bring the same to paffe.” “Madame (sayde the yonge man then) the great beautie and commendable qualities of your maiden Gianetta, whom as yet not only I haue no power to intreate, to take pitie vpon me, but also I haue made no wight in the world priue of this my loue. The not dyclofing and secrecie of whose loue, hath brought me in case you see: and if fo be the thing, whiche you have promiseth, doe not by one meane or other come to paffe, affure your selfe that my life is but shorte.” The Ladie knowing, that it was more tyme to comforte, then to reprehende, sayd vnto him finiling: “Alas, my sone, were you sicke for this? Bee of good chere and when you are whole let me alone.” The yonge gentleman being put in good hope, shewed in litel tyme tokens and signes of great amendement. Wherof the mother was maruellous glad, disposyng her selfe to proue, howe she might obferue that whiche she had promiseth. And on a day calling Gianetta vnto her, demaunded in gentle wife, by waye of mery talke, “If she had not gotten her a louer.” Gianetta with face al blushing, aunswered: “Madame, I haue no nede thereof, and much more vnsmelly for so poore a damosell as I am, to meditate or thincke vpon louers, which am banished from my frendes and kinsfolke, remaining in seruice as I doe.” To whom the Lady faide: “If you have none, wee will beftowe one vpon you, whiche shall content your minde, and make your life more delectable and pleaunft: for it is not meete that so faire a maide as you be, shoulde continue without a louer.” Whereunto Gianetta aunswered: “Madame, waying with my selfe, that you haue taken me from my poore father, and brought me vp as your daughter, it becommeth me to do that whiche pleafteth you. Notwithstanding, I intende neuer to make any complaint to you for lacke of such, but if it please you, to give me a hufbande, I purpofe dutifully to loue and honour him. For my progenitours haue
left me none other inheritaunce but honestie, whiche I meane to kepe, so long as my life indureth." These woordes to the Ladye, semed contrary to that whiche shee desirde to knowe, to attechieue her promyfe made to her sonne, although (lyke a wyfe Ladie) to her selle, shee greatly prayfde the Damofell, and fayde vnfo to her.

"But Gianetta, what if my Lorde the Kyng (whiche is a younge Prince, and you a fayre mayden) would take pleaure in your loue, woulde you refuse him?" Whereunto the mayde fodaynye aunswered. "The Kyng maye well force mee, but by conffent he shall neuer obtayne the thing of mee that is difhonnefte." The Ladye conceuyng the courage, and floutneffe of the mayden in good parte, fayde no more vnfo to her, but thinking to put the matter in proffe, she tolde her sonne, that when he was whole, she woulde put them both in a chamber that he mighte have his pleaure vpon her. For she thought it difhonneft to intreate her maide for her sonne, because it was the office of a Ruffian. The yong man was no-thing contented therewith, whereby hee fodainlye waxed ficke againe: which the ladye perceiuinge, opened her whole intent to Gianetta: but finding her more conffant than euer she was before, she told her husband all that she had done, whoe agreed (althoughe against their willes) to geue her to be his wife, thinkeinge it better (their sonne lyuing) to haue a wife vnagreeable to his eftate, then to fuffer him to die for her fake. Which after great conffultation, they concluded, wherof Gianetta was maruelously well pleasde, and with devout harte gaue thankes to God for that he had not forgotten her. And yet for all that, shee woulde neuer name her selle otherwife, then the daughter of a Picarde. The yong sonne waxed whole incontinently, and was maried, the best contented man alioe, and began to dispose himselfe, louingly to lead his life with her. Perotto which did remaine in Wales with the other Marffall of the king of England, semably increafed, and was welbeloved of his maffier, and was a very comely and va-llaut personage, that the like of him was not to be found in all the Iffland, in fuch wife as at Torneis, Iufes, and other facies of armes, there was none in al the Countrie, comparablc vnfo him: wherefore by the name of Perotto the Picarde, hee was knowen and renowned. And like as God had not forgotten his fifter, euen
so he shewed his mercifull remembrance of him. For a certaine plague and mortality, happened in that country, which consumed the one halfe of the people there: besides that the most part of them that liued, were fledde for feare into other countries, wherby the whole province, seemed to be abandoned and desolate. Of which plague, the Marshall his maister, his wife, and his sonne and many other brothers, newes, and kinfolke died, of whom remained no more, but his onely daughter, which was mariageable, and some of his seruantes, together with Perotto, whom (after the plagues was somewhat ceased) the yong gentlewoman toke for her husband, through the counfaile and consente of certaine of the country people that were alieue, because he was a valiant and honest personage, and of all that inheritance which her father lefte, shee made him lord. A litle while after, the king of Englande understanding that the Marshall was dead, and knowing the valour and stoutnesse of Perotto the Picarde, he made him to supplye the rowme of the deade Marshall. In this fort in short time, it chancened to the two innocent children of the Erle of Angiers, which were left by him as lost and quite forlorn. It was then the xviii. yeare after the Erle fledde from Paris, hauing in miserable sorte suffred manye adventuures. Who seinge himselfe to begin to waxe olde, was de Desire (being yet in Irelande) to knowe (if hee could) what was become of his children. Wherefore, persuyuinge that he was wholly altred from his wonted forme, and feeling himselfe more lustie (through the longe exerciese and labour which he had suffeined in seruice) then he was in the idle time of his youth, he departed from his maister (verye poore and in ill apparel) with whom hee had continued in seruice a long time, and came into England to that place where he had left Perotto, and founde him to be Marshall of the country, and saw that he was in health, lustie, and a comelye personage, which rejoysed him marvelousy, but he would not make himselfe to be knowne to him, till hee had seene what was become of his daughter Gianetta: wherfore taking his journey, he rested in no place, till he came to London. And there secretely inquyring of the Lady, with whom he had left his daughtuer, and of her state, he learned that his daughter was her onnes wife, whereof hee toke exceding great pleasure. And from that
time forth, he compted his aduersties past as nothing, fith he had found his children living and in such great honour. And desirous to fee her (began like a poore man) to harbour himselfe neare vnto her house, whereuppon a certaine daye, beinge seene of Giacchetto Lamyens: (for that was the name of the husbande of Gianetta,) who hauinge pitie vpon him because he was poore and old, commaunded one of his seruaunts, to haue him into the house and to giue him meate for God's sake, which the seruaunt willingly did accomplishe. Gianetta had many children by Giacchetto, of which the eldest was but eight yeares olde: the fayrest and beste favoured children of the worlde. Who when they sawe the Erle eate meate, they all came about him and began to make much of him, as though by nature's instruction they had knowen him to be their GRAundfather. And wee knowinge his nephewes, began to shew them tokens of love and kindnesse. By reasone whereof the children would not go from him, although their gouvernour did call them away: wherfore the mother beinge tolde the same, came oute of a chamber vnto the place where the Erle was, and threatened to beate them if they would not do as their maister bad them. The children began to crie, and faid that they would tary by that good man, that loued them better then their maister did, wherat the Lady and the Erle began to laugh. The Erle not as a father but like a poore man, rofe vp to doe honour to his daughter because she was a noble woman: conceyuing marueilous ioy in his minde to fee her: but she knewe him not at all, neither at that instant, nor after, because he was so wonderfully tranfornmed and changed from that forme he was wonte to be: Like one that was old and gray headed, hauinge a bearde leane and weather beaten, refembling rather a common personne then an Erle. And the Ladye seinge that the children woulde not departe from him, but still cryed when they were fetched awaye, she willed the maister to let them alone. The children rayninge in this sort with the honest poore man, the father of Giacchetto came in the meane time, and vnderstode this of their maister: He that cared not for Gianetta, faid, "Let them alone with a mischiefe, to keepe companie with beggers, of whom they come: for of the mothers side, they be but verlettes children, and therfore it is no marueil, though
they loue their company." The Erle hearing those words, was very forowfull, notwithstanding (holding downe his head) he suffred that inuiure, as well as he had done manie other. Giacchetto which knew the mirth and ioy that the children made to the poore man (although he was offended with those words) nevertheless, made as much of the poore Erle as he did before. And when hee fawe him to weepe he commaunded that if the honest poore man would dwel there to do some seruice, he shoule be retyned. Who aunfwere, that he would tarrie there with a good will, but he fayd that he coulde do nothinge els but kepe horfe, whereunto he was accuftomed all the dayes of his life. To whom a horfe was appointed to keepe, and daylye when he had dresse his horfe, he gaué himselfe to play with the children. Whiles that Fortune thus dealt (according to the maner abouefaid with the Erle of Angiers and his children, it chaunced that the French king (after many truces made with the Almaynes) died, and in his place was crownd his fonne, whose wife shee was that causd the Erle to be banished. When the laft truce with the Almaynes was expired, the warres began to grow more sharpe, for whose aide the king of England sent vnto him (as to his new kinfeman) a great number of people vnder the gouernement of Perotto his Marshell, and of Giacchetto Lamyens, fonne of his other Marshell, with whom the poore Erle went: and not knowen of any manne, remained a greate whyle in the Campe as a seruaut, where notwithstanding, like a valiaunt man, with his aduice and deedes he accomplisht notable thinges (more then hee was required.) It chaunced that in the time of the warres, the Frenche Queene was very fore sicke, and perceyuing hermselvse at the point of death, repenting her of all her finnes, and was confessed devoutly to the Archbishop of Roane, who of all men was reputed an holye and vertuous man: and amonges all her other finnes she tolde him of the great wronge that she had done to the Erle of Angiers, and was not onely contented to reveale the fame to him alone, but also rehearsed the whole matter before many other perfonages of great honour, desiring them that they would worke so with the king, that if the Erle were yet livinge or anye of his children, they might be restoréd to their state againe. Not long after the Queene departed, and
was honourable buried. Which confession reported to the Kinge, (after certaine sorrowfull sighes, for the injuries done to the valiant man) hee made Proclamation throughout all the Campe and in many other places, that whosoever could bring forth the Erle of Angiers, or any of his children, shoulde for every of them receive a great reward, because he was innocente of that matter for which he was exiled, by the onely confession of the Queene: and that he intended to exalte him to his former estate, and more higher then euer hee was. Which thing the Erle hearing (being in the habite of a servant) knowing it to be true, by and by he wente to Giacchetto, and prayed him to repaire to Perotto that they might come together, because he woulde manifest vnto them the thinges which the kinge sent to seeke for. And when they were all three assembled together in a chamber the Erle faide to Perotto, that now he thought to let him understand what he was, saying these wordes: "Perotto, Giacchetto whoe thou seest here hath espoused thy fister and neuer had yet any dowrie. And because she maye not be destitute of her Dowrie, I purpose that he and none other shal haue the reward, which the king hath promised to be so great. Thou shalt manifest thy selfe Perotto, to be the sonne of the Erle of Angiers, and Violenta the wife of Giacchetto to be thy fister, and me to be the Erle of Angiers thy father." Perotto hearing this and stedfastly beholding him, began to know him, and weeping, threw himselfe downe at his feete, and afterwards embracing him, said: "My deare father, you are right hartely welcome." Giacchetto hearing first what the Erle had faide, and after feinge what Perotto did, he was incontinently surprized with so great marueil and joye that he knew not what to do: notwithstandinge, geuinge credite to his words, as being ashamed of the opprobrious talke, which he had said towards the Erle, as to a servaunt, weeping, fell downe at his feete and humbly asked pardon for all his rafhe behauours towards him: which was courteously graunted vnto him by the Erle, who toke him vp. And after euerie of them had a while debated of their Fortune, and had well bewailed the same, and rejoysed one with another, Perotto and Giacchetto would haue newly apparellle the Erle, but he in no wise would suffer them. And beinge desirous that
Giacchetto mighte haue assurance of the rewarde promised, he woulde that he shoulde first present him to the king after that fort in the habite of a servaunte as he was, that hee mighte make him the more ashamed. Then Giacchetto with the Erle (and Perotto after) came before the king, and offred to present the Erle and his children if it should please him to reward him according to the Proclamation. The king incontinently causd to be brought forth a reward of maruellous value, (as Giacchetto thoughte) and commaunded him forthwith to present the Erle and his children according to his promise. Giacchetto then tourned about, and placed before him the Erle his servaunt, and Perotto, saying: “Sir, beholde the father and the sonne, the daughter which is my wyfe, is not here. But by God’s helpe you shal see her shortly.” The king hearing this, behelde the Erle: and albeit he was so greatlye chaunged from his former fauour, after hee had well viewed him, he knew him, and with teares standinge in his eyes, hee causd the Erle to rie vp, that kneeled before him, kisst and imbrasing him, and very graciouslye receiued Perotto: and commaunded forthwith that the Erle should be restored to apparell, servaunt, horses and furniture, according to his state and degree, which incontinentlye was done: And moreouer the kinge greatly honoured Giacchetto, and forthwith desired to know all their Fortunes paffed. And when Giacchetto had taken the great reward for bringing forth the Erle and his children, the Erle said vnto him: “Take these royall rewards of the king, my soueraigne Lord, and remember to tel thy father, that thy children, his nephewes and mine, be no beggers borne of their mother’s syde.” Giacchetto toke the reward, and causd his wife and his mother in Lawe to come to Paris: likewise thither came the wife of Perotto, where, with great Ioy and triumphe, they taried a certaine space wyth the Erle, to whom the kinge had rendred all his goodes, and had placed him in greater au thoritie, then euer he was before. Then euery of them toke their leave and retourned home to their owne houfes: and from that time forth the said Erle, to thende of his life, liued in Paris, in greater honour and au thority, then euer he did before.
Giletta a Phistion’s daughter of Narbon, healed the French King of a Fisula, for reward whereof she demaunded Beltramo Counte of Rossiglione to husband. The Counte being married against his will, for despite fled to Florence and london another. Giletta his wife, by policy founde meanes to lye with her husbande, in place of his lower, and was begotten with childe of two sonnes: which known to her husband, he receiued her againe, and afterwards he lived in great honour and felicite.

In Fraunce there was a gentleman called Ifnardo, the Counte of Rossiglione, who because he was sickely and diseased, kepte alwayes in his house a Phistion, named maister Gerardo of Narbona. This Counte had one onely sonne called Beltramo, a very yonge childe, amiable and fayre. With whom there was nourished and brought vppe, many other children of his age: amonges whom one of the doughters of the saied Phistion, named Giletta, who feruently fill in loue with Beltramo, more then was meete for a maiden of her age. This Beltramo, when his father was deade, and left vnder the royall custody of the king, was sente to Paris, for whose departure the maiden was very penfife. A little while after, her father being likewise deade, free was defrous to go to Paris, one-lye to see the yonge Counte, if for that purpose she could get any good occasion. But being diligently loked vnto by her kinffolke (becauese she was riche and fatherlesse) she could see no convenient waye for her intended journye: and being now marriageable, the loue she bare to the Counte was neuer out of her remembrance, and refused manye husbandes with whom her kinffolke woulde have matched her, without making them privie to the caufe of her refuall. Now it chaunced that she burned more in loue with Beltramo than euer shee did before, because she hearde tell that hee was growen to the state of a goodly yong gentleman. She heard by report, that the French king had a swelling vpon his breast, which by reaon of ill cure was grown to be a Fisula, which did put him to marueilous paine and grieve, and that there was no
Phisition to be found (although many were proued) that could heale it, but rather did impair the griefe and made it worfe and worfe. Wherefore the king, like one in dispaire, would take no more counfell or helpe. Wherof the yong mayden was wonderfull glad, thinckinge to haue by this meanes, not onely a lawfull occaion to go to Paris, but if the diseafe were such (as she supposed,) eafelye to bringe to paffe that shee mighte haue the Counte Beltramo to her husbande. Whereupon with such knowledge as she had learned at her father's hands before time, shee made a pouder of certaine herbes, which she thought meete for that diseafe and rode to Paris. And the first thing she went about when she came thither was to see the Counte Beltramo. And then she repayed to the king, praying his grace to vouchsafe to shew her his griefe.

The king perceyuing her to be a fayre yonge maiden and a comelie would not hide it, but opened the fame vnto her. So soon as shee saw it shee put him in comforte, that shee was able to heale him, saying: "Sir, if it maye please your grace, I truste in God without anye greate paine vnto your highneffe, within eights dayes to make you whole of this diseafe." The king hearing her say fo, began to mocke her, saying: "How is it possible for thee, beinge a yong woman, to do that which the befe renowned Phisitions in the world can not?" Hee thancked her for her good will and made her a direct aunswere, that hee was determined no more to followe the counfaile of any Phisition. Whereunto the maiden aunswereid: "Sir, you dispaie my knowledge because I am yonge and a woman, but I asfure you that I do not minifter Phisicke by profession, but by the aide and helpe of God: and with the cunninge of maister Gerardo of Narbona, who was my father, and a Phisition of great fame fo longe as he liued." The king hearing those words, sayd to himselfe: "This woman peraduenture, is fente vnto me of God, and therefore why shoulde I disdaine to proue her cunninge? for so muche as the promifeth to heale me within a little spacie, without anye offence or grieue vnto me." And being determined to proue her, he said: "Damofel, if thou dost not heale me, but make me to breake my determination, what wilt thou shal folow therof." "Sir," sayd the maiden: Let me be kept in what guard and keeping you lift: and if I do not heale you with-
in these eight days, let me be burnt: but if I do heale your grace what recompence shal I haue then?" To whom the kinge aunswered: "Because thou art a maiden and vnmaried, if thou heale me according to thy promife, I wil beftow thee vpon some gentle-
man, that shalbe of right good worhip and estimation." To whom the answere: "Sir, I am very well content that you beftow me in marriage: but I befeech your grace let me haue fuch a husband as myselfe shal demand, without presumption to any of your children or other of your bloud." Which request the king incontinently graunted. The yong maiden began to minifter her Phificke, and in short space before her appointed time, she had thoroughly cured the king. And when the king perceived himselfe whole, faid vnto her: "Thou haft well deferred a husbande (Giletta) even fuch a one as thy felfe shalt choo:" "I haue then my Lord (quothe) deferred the Countie Beltramo of Rosiglione, whom I haue loued from my youth." The king was very loth to graunt him vnto her: but for that he had made a promife which he was loth to breake, he caused him to be called forth, and faid vnto him: "Sir Countie, knowing full well that you are a gentleman of great honour, our pleasure is, that you returne home to your owne house to order your estate according to your degree: and that you take with you a Damofell which I haue appointed to be your wife." To whom the Countie gaue his humble thanks, and demanded what she was? "It is she (quothe the king) that with her medecines hath heale me." The Counte knew her wel and had already seen her, although she was faire, yet knowing her not to be of a flocke conuenable to his nobility, fironfully faid vnto the king, "Will you then (fir) give me a Phifitton to wife? It is not the pleasure of God that ever I shoule in that wife beftow my felfe." To whom the king said: "Wilt thou then, that wee shoule breake our faith, which wee to recover health haue giuen to the damofell, who for a reward asked thee to husband?" "Sir (quothe Beltramo) you may take from me all that I haue, and giue my perfon to whom you please because I am your subiect: but I affure you I shal never be contented with that marriage," "Wel, you shall haue her, (faid the king) for the maiden is faire and wife, and loueth you moft intirely: thinking verely you shal
leade a more joyfull life with her, then with a Lady of a greater house." The Countie therewithal held his peace, and the kinge made great preparation for the mariage. And when the appointed day was come, the counte in the presence of the king (although it were against his wil) maried the maiden, who loued him better then her owne selfe. Which done, the Counte determining before what he would do, praied licence to retourn to his countrye to confummat the mariage. And when he was on horsebacke hee went not thither but toke his journey into Tufcane, where understanding that the Florentines and Senois were at warres, he determined to take the Florentines parte, and was willingly receiued and honourable intertaigned, and was made capitaine of a certaine number of men, continuing in their seruice a long time. The new maried gentlewoman, fcarce contented with his vnkindnes, hopinge by her well doinge to caufe him to retourn into his countrye, went to Rossfiglione, where she was receiued of all his subiects for their Lady. And perceyuing that through the Countes absence all thinges were spoiled and out of order, shee like a fage Ladye, with greate diligence and care, dispoſed his thinges in order againe: whereof the subiects reioyfed very much, bearing to her their harty loue and affection, greatly blaming the Counte because he coulde not content himselfe with her. This notable gentlewoman hauing restored all the countrie againe to their auncient liberties, sent word to the Counte her husband, by two knights, to signifie vnto him, that if it were for her sake that hee had abandoned his countrie, vppon retourn of aunſweare, she to do him pleafure, would departe from thence. To whom he chorlifhly replied: "Let her do what the lifte: for I do purpope to dwell with her, when shee shall haue this ring (meaning a ring which he wore) vpon her finger, and a fonne in her armes begotten by mee." He greatly loued that ring, and kepte it very carefully, and neuer toke it from his finger, for a certaine vertue that he knew it had. The knights hearinge the harde condition of two thinges imposſible: and feinge that by them he could not be removed from his determination, retourned againe to the Lady, tellinge her his aunſweare: who, very forowfull, after shee had a good while bethoughte her, purpoſed to finde meanes to attaine the two thinges, that thereby
she might recover her husband. And hauinge aduised her selfe
what to doe, shee assembled the noblest and chiefeffe of her
Country, declaring vnto them in lamentable wyse what shee had
alreadye done, to winne the loue of the Counte, shewing them
also what followed thereof. And in the ende saide vnto them,
that shee was lothe the Counte for her sake should dwell in
perpetuall exile: therefore shee determined to spende the reste of
her time in Pilgrimages and devotion, for preseruation of her
Soule, prayinge them to take the charge and gouernemente of
the Country, and that they would let the Counte understande,
that shee had forfaken his house, and was removed farre from
thence: with purpoe neuer to returne to Roffiglione againe.
Many teares were shed by the people, as she was speaking those
wordes, and divers supplications were made vnto him to alter his
opinion, but all in vaine. Wherefore commending them all
vnto God, shee toke her way with her maide, and one of her kin-
men, in the habite of a pilgrime, well furnisched with siluer and
precious Jewels: telling no man whither shee wente, and neuer
rested till shee came to Florence: where arryvinge by Fortune at
a poore widowes house, shee contented her selfe with the state of
a poore pilgrime, desirous to heare newes of her Lord, whom by
fortune she sawe the next day passing by the house (where she
lay) on horsebacke with his company. And although she
knewe him well enoughe, yet shee demanded of the good wife
of the house what hee was: who aunswered that hee was a
strange gentleman, called the Counte Beltramo of Roffiglione, a
curteous knight, and wel beloved in the City, and that he was
maruelously in loue with a neighbour of her’s, that was a gentle-
woman, very poore and of small substance, neuerthelesse of right
honest life and good report, and by reason of her povertie was yet
vnnared, and dwelte with her mother, that was a wife and honest
Ladye. The Countesse well noting these wordes, and by litle and
little debating euery particular point thereof, comprehending the
effecte of those newes, concluded what to do, and when she had
well understonded which was the house, and the name of the Ladye,
and of her daughter that was beloved of the Counte: vpon a day
repaired to the house secretely in the habite of a pilgrime, where
finding the mother and daughter in poore estate amonges their familie, after she had saluted them, told the mother that she had to faye vnto her. The gentlewoman ryfing vp, curteously intertayned her, and being entred alone in a chamber, they faye downe and the Counteffe began to speake vnto her in this wise. "Madame, me thinecke that ye be one vpon whom Fortune doth frowne, fo wel as vpon me: but if you please, you may both comfort me and your selye." The lady anfwered, "That there was nothing in the world wherof she was more defirous then of honest comfort." The Counteffe proceeding in her talke, saide vnto her. "I haue neede now of your fidelitie and truete, whereupon if I do faye, and you deceiue mee, you shall both vndoe me and your selye." "Tell me then what it is hardlie (saide the gentlewoman:) for you shall never bee deceiued of mee." Then the Counteffe beganne to recite her whole estate of loue: tellinge her what she was, and what had chaunced to that present daye, in such perfite order as the gentlewoman beleuenge her, because shee had partly heard report before, began to haue compassion vpon her, and after that the Counteffe had rehearsed the whole circumftaunce, she continued her purpose, saying: "Now you haue heard amonges other my troubles, what two things they bee, which behoueth mee to haue, if I doe recover my hufband, which I knowe none can helpe me to obtaine, but onelye you, if it be true that I heare, which is, that the Counte my hufband, is farre in loue with your daughter." To whom the gentlewoman sayd: "Madame, if the Counte loue my daughter, I knowe not, albeit the likelyhoode is greate: but what am I able to doe, in that which you defire?" "Madame, aunfweared the Counteffe, I will tell you: but first I will declare what I meane to doe for you, if my purpose be brought to effete: I see your faire daughter of good age, readie to marie, but as I vnderftande the cause, why shee is vnmaried, is the lacke of substance to beftowe her. Wherefore I purpose, for recompence of the pleasure, which, you shall doe for mee, to giue fo much readie money to marie her honourable, as you shall thincke sufficient." The Counteffe' offer was very well liked of the Ladie, because she was poore: yet having a noble hart, she saide vnto her. "Madame, tell me wherein I may do you seryce: and if
it be a thinge honest, I will gladlye performe it, and the fame
being brought to paffe, do as it shall please you." Then said the
Countesse: "I thinke it requisite, that by some one whom you
truste, you giue knowledge to the Counte my husband, that your
doughter is, and shalbe at his comauandement: and to the
intent she may be well assured that hee loueth her in deede above
anye other, she must pray him to sende her a ring that hee weareth
vpon his finger, which ring as she knoweth, hee loueth very
dearly: and when he sendeth the ringe, you shal giue it vnto me,
and afterwards sende him woord, that your daugther is readie to
accomplithe his pleaure, and then you shal cause him secretelye
to come hither, and place me by him (in steede of your daugther)
peraduenture God will giue me the grace, that I may be with
cchild, and so hauing this ring on my finger, and the childe in
mine armes begotten by him, I maye recover him, and by your
meanes continue with him, as a wife ought to do with her hus-
bande." This thinge seemd difficiulte vnto the Gentlewoman:
fearing that there woulde folowe reproche vnto her daugther.
Notwithstandinge, considering what an honest part it were, to be
a meane that the good Ladie might recover her husbande, and that
she mighte doe it for a good purpose, hauinge affaunce in her
honest affection, not onely promiseth the Countesse to bring this
to passe, but in fewe dayes with great subteltie, folowing the
order wherein she was instructed, she had gotten the ringe,
although it was with the Countes ill will, and toke order that the
Countesse in steede of her daugther did lye with him. And at the
first meeting, so effectuouesly desir'd by the Counte: God so dis-
pofed the matter that the Countesse was begotten with child, of
two goodly sonnes, and her deliuerie chaunced at the due time.
Whereupon the gentlewoman, not onelye contented the Countesse
at that time with the companye of her husbande, but at manye
other times so secretely as it was neuer knowen: the Counte not
thinkinge that he had lien with his wife, but with her whom he
loued. To whom at his vprifing in the morning, he vset many
curteous and amiable woords, and gaue divers faire and precious
Jewels, which the Countesse kept most carefully: and when she
perceiued her selfe with child, she determined no more to trouble
the gentlewoman, but said vnto her. "Madame, thanckes be
to God and you, I haue the thing that I defire, and euen fo it is
time to recompence your defect, that afterwards I may depart."
The gentlewoman said vnto her, that if she had done anye pleafure
agreeable to her minde, she was right glad thereof which she did,
not for hope of reward, but because it appertayned to her by
well doing fo to doe. Whereunto the Counteffe said: "Your
fayinge pleafeth me well, and for my part, I doe not purpose
to giue vnto you the thing you shal demaund in reward, but for
conferation of your well doing, which dutie forceth me to do."
The gentlewoman then confrained with neceffity, demaunded of
her with great bafhfulneffe, an hundred poundes to marie her
daughter. The counteffe perceiuinge the fhamefaftneffe of the
gentlewoman, and her curteous demaunde, gaue her fvue hundred
poundes, and fo many faire and coftly Jewels, as almoft amounted
to like valour. For which the gentlewoman more then contented,
gaue moft harty thankes to the Counteffe, who departed from the
gentlewoman and retourned to her lodging. The gentlewoman
to take occasion from the Counte of anye farther repaire, or fendinge to her house, toke her daughter with her, and went into the
country to her frends. The Counte Beltramo, within fewe dayes
after, being reuoked home to his owne house by his subieftes,
(hearinge that the Counteffe was departed from thence) retourned.
The Counteffe knowinge that her huibande was goone from
Florence and retourned home, was verye gladde, continuing in
Florence till the time of her childbedde, being brought a bedde
of tooo fonnes, whiche were very like vnto their father, and
caufed them carefully to be nourfed and brought vp, and when
she fawe time, she toke her iourney (vnknowen to anie) and ar-
riued at Montpellier, and refiting her felfe there for certayne dayes,
hearing newes of the Counte, and where he was, and that vpon
the daye of Al Saincestes, he purpofed to make a great feafe, and
assembly of Ladies and Knightes, in her pilgrimes weede she re-
paired thither. And knowing that they were all assembeld, at the
palace of the Counte, readie to fitte downe at the table, thee
paffed through the people without chaunge of apparell, with her
twoo fonnes in her armes: and when thee was come vp into the
hall, even to the place where the Counte sat, falling downe prostrate at his feete, weeping, saying vnto hym: "My Lorde, I am thy poore infortunate wyfe, who to th'intent thou mightest returne and dwel in thine owne house, haue bene a great whyle begging aboute the worlde. Therefore I nowe beseeche thee, for the honoure of God, that thou wilt obserue the conditions, which the twoo (knightes that I sent vnto thee) did commaunde me to doe: for beholde, here in myne armes, not onely one sonne begotten by thee, but twayne, and likwyse thy Ryng. It is nowe time then (if thou kepe promife) that I shoule be receiued as thy wyfe." The Counte hearing this, was greatly aftonned, and knewe the Ryng, and the children also, they were so like hym. "But tell me (quod he) howe is this come to pafse?" The Countesse to the great admiration of the Counte, and of all thofe that were in presence, reherfed vnto them in order all that, whiche had bene done, and the whole discourse thereof. For which caufe the Counte knowing the thinges he had spoken to be true (and perceiuing her constant minde and good witte, and the twoo faire young boyes to kepe his promife made, and to pleafe his subiectes, and the Ladies that made fute vnto him, to accept her from that tyme foorth as his lawefull wyfe, and to honour her) abieeted his obstinate rigour: cauing her to rife vp, and imbraced and kissed her, acknowledging her againe for his lawefull wyfe. And after he had apparelled her according to her estate, to the great pleafure and contentation of thofe that were there, and of al his other frendes not onely that daye, but many others, he kept great chere, and from that time forth, hee loued and honoured her, as his dere spoufe and wyfe.
THE THIRTY-NINTH NOUELL.

Tancredi Prince of Salerne, caused his daughter's lover to be slayne, and sent his harte vnto her in a cup of golde: whiche afterwardes she put into pouffoned water, and drinking thereof died.

Tancredi Prince of Salerne, (an vniversalie in the region of Italie) was a curteous Lorde, and of gentle nature: had he not in his age imbrued his handes with the bloud of his owne daughter. It chaunced that this Prince in al his life time, had but that daughter: but more happie had he ben if she had neuer ben borne. That daughter he loued fo well, as a father might loue his childe: and for the tender loue he bare her, he was not able to suffer her to be out of his sight. And could not finde in his harte to marié her, although she had many yeres paffed the time that she was mariageable: notwithstanding, in thende he gave her to wife to one of the fonnes of the Duke of Capua, with whom she continued no long time, but was a widowe, and then returned vnto her fathers house againe. This Ladie was very faire and comely of bodie and face, as any creature could be, yonge, lustie, and more wife peraduenture then a woman ought to be. And thus dwelling with her louing father, she liued like a noble Ladie, in great pleafure: and seing that her father for the loue he bare vnto her, had no mynde or care to marié her agayne, and also she thinking it skarce honest to require him thereunto, deuised secretly (if it were possibl) to retaine some valiaunt man to be her louer. And seyng manye gentlemen and others, frequenting her fathers court (as we commonly fee in the courtes of princes) and marking the behauiour and order of many (amonges all) there was a young man, one of her fathers seruauntes that liked her well, whose name was Guifcardo, of very base birth (but in vertue and honest condicions more noble then the rest) and many times when she sawe him, she wonderfully delited in him, alwayes prayfing his doinges aboue all others. The younge man, not hauing good consideratlon of him selfe, perciuing her fervent affection, so fixed his minde that he dispoed the fame vpon
nothing els but to loue her. One louing an other secretly in this
dote, and the Ladie vere ludious to finde occasion that she
mighth talk with him, vnwilling to comitte the secrecie of her
loue to any man, she imagined a newe devise to geue him know-
ledge thereof. And wrote a letter signifying vnto him, what he
should doe the next day, and howe he might vshe himselfe to come
talke with her: and then putting the letter into the cane of a
rede, she gave it vnto Guifcardo in sporting wife, and said.
"Thou shalt this night make a paire of Bellowes for thy fervant
wherewith she may kindle the fire." Guifcardo toke it, and thought
that thee did not geue it vnto him, without some special purpose
went to his chamber, and loking vpon the Cane perceived it to be
hollowe, and opening it founde the letter within whiche thee
had written. And when he had well perufed it, vnderstanding
the tenour thereof, he thought hym selfe the happieuest man in
the worlde, and began to put hym selfe in readinesse, to mete
with his Ladie, by suche wayes and meanes, as thee had to him
appointed. There was in the corner of the Princes palace a Cauie,
long time before made vnnder the fyde of a hille, whiche Cauie
received light by certayne ventes made of force within the sainyd
mountaine, and becase the same was not frequented and vfed,
it was ouergrown with bushes and thornes. Into which Cauie
was a descant by a secrete payre of slayers, into one of the lowest
chambers of the Palacie, wherein the Ladie lay, which was out of
all men's minde, because it was not occupied many a day before,
and shut vp with a very strong doore. But Loue (in the eyes
wherof nothing is so secrete, but well come to knowledge) had
brought the same againe into the remembrance of the amorous
Lady. The opening of which doore (that no man might knowe
it) many dayes did trouble her wittes: afterwarsde when she had
founde the waye, she went downe alone into the Cauie, and viewing
the vente, whereunto she had geuen order for Guifcardo to come,
she tolde him of what height it was from the ground: for the execu-
tion wherof, Guifcardo prepared a rope with knots and degrees
to goe vp and downe, and putting vpon him a leather coate, to
kepe him from the thornes and bushes, went downe the next
night at the saide vente, vnknowen of any man: and fastening
one of the endes of the rope, to the flocke of a tree, that grewe at the mouth of the vente, hee flipte downe into the Caue, and taried there for the Ladie, who the next daye faining her selfe to sleepe after dinner, sent her maydes out of her chamber, and locked her selfe within alone: and then opened the doore, and went downe into the Caue, where finding Guiscardo, they maruellously rejoysed one with an other. And from thence went vp together into her chamber: where they remained together, the moiste parte of that day, to their great delight. And hauing geuen good order for the affaires of their loue, and the secrete vse therof, Guiscardo retourned into the Caue, and the Ladie locked the doore, and came out amonges her maides. The next night after, Guiscardo ifliued out of the vente vpon the rope, wherewith he descended and conueied him selfe into his chamber. And hauing learned the waye, he retourned thither many times after. But Fortune envious of that pleaufe, so long and great, with dolorous sucesse, tourned the ioye of those twoo louers into heauie and sorowefull ende. The Prince accustomed sometimes to reforde alone into his daughter's chamber, and there for a whyle to tarie and talke with her, and so to departe. Vpon a daye after dinner, when the Ladie (whose name was Gifmonda) was in the garden with all her maidens, he repaired unknowen or seen of any man into her chamber. But being loth to trouble his daughter of her pleaufe, and finding the wyndowes of her chamber shut and the curtens of her bedde drawen, he satte downe vpon a stoole at the beddes feete, and leaning his head to the bedde the Curteine drawen ouer him (as he had bene hidden of purpofe) he fel a sleepe. And the king being thus a sleepe, Gifmonda that (in euill time) the same daye had appointed Guiscardo to come, left her maydens in the Gardeine, and entred very secretly into her chamber, locking fast the doore after her, and not knowing any man to be there, thee opened the doore of the Caue to Guiscardo, who was redie to wayte for her comming. Then they cafte them selues vpon the bedde, as they were wonte to doe, folacing the time together, vntill it chaunced that the Prince awaked, heard and fawe what Guiscardo and his daughter did. Whereof being verie sorowfull, he would vpon the firft fight haue cried out: but that he thought
it better for that time to holde his peace, still to kepe him selfe sectrete, to the intent that he might more priuelie, and with leffe shame, accomplishe that which he purpose d to do. The twoo louers continued togethers a great time, as they were wont to do, without any knowledge of the Prince his being there, and when they saw time, they went downe from the bede: and Guiscardo retourning to the Caue, shee went forther of her chamber, from whence Tancred (as olde as he was) conueyed him selfe into the Gardeine out at a wyndowe of the same, vnseene and not perceiued of any. Who like a pensife man, and carefull euen vnto death, repaired to his owne chamber, and the next night, about one of the clocke, he caused Guiscardo to be apprehended, by an order that he had prescribed, at his comming forth of the Caue, euen cloathed as he was, with his leather coate: and by twoo men was secretly conueyed to the Prince. Who so fone as he fawe him, sayd vnto him with teares standing in his eies: "Guiscardo, the beneuolence and goodnes towards thee, haue not merited this outrage and shame, that thou hast committed this daye in mine owne house, which I fawe with mine owne eyes." To whom Guiscardo gaue no other aunswere, but that Loue was of greater force, then either any Prince or hym selfe. Then the Prince commaundd him to be kept, in a chamber adioyning. The next day the king (Gismonda being ignoraunt hereof) resolued in his minde, diuers and sundrye matters, and after duner as he was accustomed, he wente into his doughter's chamber, and caused her to be called vnto him, and shutt the chamber doore, in lamentable speche sayd vnto her. "Gismonda, I had so much affiance and trufte in thy vertue and honestie, that it coulde not euer haue entred into my mynde (although he had bene tolde me, if I had not sene it with mine owne propre eyes) but that thou haddeft not onely in deede, but also in thought, abandoned the companie of all men, except it had bene thy huzbande: whereof I shalbe right pensife and sorowefull so longe as this litle remnaunt of life (that mine olde age doth preferue) indureth in mee. And shalbe thou couldes not conteyne from suche dishonest loue, I wolde it had pleased God, that thou haddeft taken a manne, equall to thyne estate. But amonges so many that do frequente
my court, thou hast chosen this young man Guiscardo, whose birth is very vile and base, and brought vp (as it were for God's sake) from a childe to this present daye, in our Court. For which consideration I am verie fore disquieted, not knowing how to take this at thy handes: for with him (whom I haue caused to be taken this nighte in going out of the Cave, and nowe kepe as prifoner) I have already concluded what to do. But with thee what I shal do, God knoweth: of the one side, the loue that I still beare thee, more then any father euer bare to his daughter, doth drawe me: on the other side, a iust displeasure and indignation, taken for thy great follie, doth moue me. The one mocion would that I should pardon thee, the other forceth me against my nature, to be cruelly vnto thee. Notwithstanding, before I doe make any certaine resolucion, I defire to heare what thou canst faye for thy selfe." When hee had spoken those woordes, he kissed her face, weeping verie bitterly like a childe that had ben beaten. Gifmonda hearing her father, and knowing that not only her secret loue was discovered, but also her louer Guiscardo to be in pryson, conceived an inestimable sorrow, yttering the same many times, with outeries and schreches, according to the maner of women, howebeit, her great courage surpased her weakenesse, and did sette a bolde face on the matter, with marueilous stoutnesse determining, before she made any suche for her selfe, no longer to liue, seeing that her frende Guiscardo was alreadie dead. Wherefore not like a sorrowful woman, or one taken in any faulte, but as a desperate persone, with a drie and stout countenaunce, not troubled or vexed, she said thus to her father: "I doe not purpofe, deare father, to stonde in deniall, nor yet by humble fute to make requete: for the one wyll nothing ayayle mee, and the other is to none effecte. Moreouer I doe not intende by any means, to befeche your clemencie and loue towards mee, to be beneuolente and bontifull, but confessinge the trouthe, I will first with true reaons and argumentes, defende myne honour, and afterwardes profecute in vertuous wyse, by effectes, the stoutnesse of my courage. True it is, that I haue loued and do loue Guiscardo, and will loue him so long as I liue, which shalbe but a little time. And if so be that a woman may loue a man after death, I will not cease
to loue him. But womanly frailtie and feminine weakenesse hath not so much induced me hereunto, as the litle care you haue had to beflow me in mariage, and the great vertues that daily I haue seene in Guifcardo. You ought deare father to knowe, that your selfe is of flese, and of flese you haue engendred me your daughter, and not of Stone or Iron. In likewyse you ought, and muſt remember (although now you be arrived to olde yeares) what yonge folkes bee, and of what great power the lawe of youth is: and although you were (during the force of your youthlie dayes) trayned and exercized in faete of armes, yet nowe you oughte to knowe what great puiſſance reſteſt in the idle and deſtike life, as well in the aged, as amonges yonge people. I am then as you be, begotten of fleſhe, and my yeres fo few, as yet but yonge, and thereby full of luſt and deſtike. Wherunto the knowledge which I haue had alreſdy in mariage, forceth me to accompliſhe that deſire: and to the fame be added maruelous forces, againſt whiche it is imposſible for me to reſſte, but rather to folowe, whereunto they drewe me. I am become amorous like a yonge woman, and like a woman as I am, and certainly I would haue imployed my whole force that waye, fo farre as I could not to com‐mitte any shame to you, or to my selfe in that, whereunto my na‐turall offence hath forced me. To which thing, pitiful loue, and gentle fortune haue founde out, and shewed a waye secreſt enoſh, whereby without knowledge of any man, I am come to the ef‐teſt of my deſires: which thing I will not deſine (who fo ever tolde you of it, or by what meanes fo euer you are come to the knowledge of it) I haue not taken Guifcardo to be my louer by chaunce, as many women haue done, but I haue choſen him by long aduide and deliberation, abone all others, and haue brought him into me in this wife, inioying with our wife continuance of longe time, the accompliſhment of my deſire, wherof me thincke (although I haue not offended but by loue) that you doe purpoſe to proſecute rather the vulgar opinion, then the truth, purpoſinge in this wife moſt bitterly to comproſtle me, faying: ‘That you haſt not haſt ſuch an occaſion of anger, if I haſt choſen one that haſt been a gentleman.’ Wherein you do not conſider, that the faulte is not mine, but rather to be afcribed to fortune, who ought to be
blamed because many times shee exalteth the unworthy, and treadeth vnder foote those that be most worthy: but nowe let vs leaue of further talke of this matter, and consider the beginninge hereof. First of all you see, that of one maffe of shee we haue all received flesh, and that one Creatour hath created evry lyuing creature, with force and puissance equally, and wyth equall vertue: which vertue was the first occasion that made the difference and distinfection of vs all that were borne, and be borne equall, and they that obtayned the greatest part of vertue, and did the workes of her, were called noble, the rest continuing vnoble. And albeit contrary vse afterwards obscured this Law, yet therefore, shee is not removed ne abandoned from nature, or good manners. In likewise shee that by vertue performeth all his doinges, doth manifelstlie sheewe himselfe to be noble: and he that doth otherwise terme him, doth commit the faulte, and not he that is so called. Behold all your gentlemen, and examine well their vertue, their conditions and maner of doinges. On the other part, behold the qualities and condicions of Guiscardo: then if you please to giue judgement wythout affection, you shall say that he is righte noble: and that all your gentlemen be villaines in respecte of him. The vertuous and excellencye of whom, I beleue cannot be placed in any other wight, as in hym, as well by your owne report as by the choyse of mine owne eyes. Who euer prayfed man so, and with such ample commendacions praiue worthie, wherein an honest man ought to be praied, as you haue done? and truly not without cause: for, if mine eyes be not deceiued, you never gaue hym anye praiue but that I haue knowne more in him then your wordes were able to expresse. Notwithstanding, if I haue bin deceiued herein, it was you by whom I haue bin deceiued: wil you then say that I couple myselfe with a man of base condicion? Truly you cannot well say so. But if you will saye, perchaunce with a poore man, I confesse it: and verely it is to your shame, that you have not vouchsafed to place in highe estate a man so honest, being your owne fernaunt, Neuertheless, pouertie doth not deprive anye parte of nobilitie, but riches hath. Manye kinges and greate Princes, haue bin poore in olde time, and manye ploughmen and sheepeheardes in times past, haue bin ad-
uaunced to riche estate. And the last doubt which troubleth you, is, that you be doubtfull what to doe with me: caste boldly out of your minde that doubt, and if you do intend in thextre-
mitie of your age to vfe that which in your youth you never did, I purpose to become cruel also. Ufe your cruelty against me, for the auoyding whereof I haue not determined to make any supplication to you as galtie of this faulte, if faultes may be rehearsed. Assuring you, that if you do not vnto me, that which you haue done or will doe to Guifcardo, mine owne handes shall doe it. Wherefore goe to, and let fall your teares with women, and if you purpose to be cruell, kill him and let me alfo drincke of the fame Cuppe, if you thincke we haue deferred it.” The king hearing the stout words of his daughter, thoughte not that shee woulde haue done in deed, as her wordes pretended, and as she said she would doe. Wherefore departing from her, and not willing to vfe any maner of crueltie towards her, hee thoughte by the destruction and slaughter of Guifcardo, to coole her burning loue. And therefore commaunded two of his seruauntes (that had Guif;

And therefore commaunded two of his seruauntes (that had Guif;

cardo in keeping) without any noife, to strangle him the next nighte, and afterwares plucking his harte out of his bodie, to bringe it vnto him: who did as they were commaunded. And the next day the king caused a faire Cuppe of gold to be broughte vnto him, wherein he laid the harte of Guifcardo, which he sent (by one of his truflieft seruauntes) vnto his daughter: and commaunded him, when hee presented the same vnto her to say these wordes: “Thy father hath sent thee this presente, to conforte thy selfe with the thing, which thou doest chieflie loue, as thou haftie comforted him of that which he loued moft.” Gismonda not amoued from her cruel determination, caused to be brought vnto her (after her father was gone) venemous herbes and rootes, which she distilled together, and made water thereof to drinke fodenly if that came to passe which she doubted. And when the kinges seruaunte was come vnto her, and deliuered his presente, he said as he was commaunded. Gismonda toke the Cuppe with fierce countenaunce, and couering it, so soone as shee sawe the harte, and vnderfloode the wordes, shee thoughte verelye that it was the harte of Guifcardo, wherefore beholding the seruaunt, she said vnto him: “Truly it behoueth that such a hart as this is, shoulde be
intombed in no worse graue then in golde, which my father hath most wisely done." Afterwards lifting the Cuppe to her mouth, she kissed it, saying: "I have in all things, euen vnto this time (being the last ende of my life) always found the tender loue of my father towards mee: but nowe I knowe it to be greater, then euer I did before. And therefore in my behalfe, you shall render vnto him, the laft thanckes that euer I shall give him, for so great a prequete." After those wordes, tourninge herfelfe towards the Cuppe, which shee helde fafte, beholdinge the hart, shee faide thus: "Oh sweete harbourage of my pleasures, curfed be the crueltye of him that hath caufed mee at this time to loke vpon thee with the eyes of my face: it was pleaure ynough, to see thee euery hower, amonges people of knowledge and vnderstanding. Thou haft finifhed thy courfe, and by that ende, which fortune vouchfafed to giue thee, thou art dispatched, and arriued to the ende wherunto all men haue recourse: thou haft forsaken the miferies and traneyles of this world, and hafte had by the enemy himselfe such a sepulture as thy worthinesse deferueth. There needeth nothing els to accomplifhe thy funerall, but onely the teares of her whom thou diddest hartelye loue all the daies of thy lyfe. For hauing wherof, our Lord did put into the head of my vmercifull father to send thee vnto me, and truly I will beflow some teares vpon thee, although I was determined to die, without theading any teares at all, ioyntlie, not fearefull of any thinge. And when I haue powred them out for thee, I will caufe my soule, which thou haft heretofore so carefully kepte, to be ioyned wyth thine. For, in what company can I trauell, more contented, or in better safegard in places vnknowen, then with thy soule? Truly I am well assured, that it is yet here within, that hath respecte to the place, aswell of his owne pleasures, as of mine, being assureed (as the who is certayne, that yet he loueth me) that he attendeth for myne, of whom he is greatly beloued." When she had thus saide, she beganne to let fall (as though there had been a fountaine in her head) so many teares, as it was a myracle to beholde her, oftentimes kissting the deade harte. Her maydens that stood aboute her, knewe not what hart that was, nor wherunto those woords did tende: but being mouted with compassion they all wepte: pitifullie demaundinge (althoughe in
vayne) the occasion of her forowfull plaintes: and comforted her so well as they could. Who after she had powred forth sufficent teares, lifted vppe her heade and when she had wiped her eyes, she sayd: "Oh louing hart, all my dutie is fulfilled towards thee, hauinge nowe nothinge to doe but onely to yelde forthe my ghoste, to accompany thyne." And this sayd, she caused the glasse of water, which she had made the daye before, to be brought vnto her: and poured it out into the cuppe where the hart laye, all bained with a multitude of teares: whiche shee putting to her mouthe, without feare, dronke vp all. And that done went into her bedde, with the cuppe in her hand, toffing her bodie as decently as she could vppon the fame, holding the harte of her dead frende, so nere as shee coulde, vnto her owne. Her maidens seing this (although they knewe not what water it was, that she dranke) sent worde to the king, who fearing that whiche happened, incontinentlye wente downe into his daughters chamber: where he arrived even at that instante that she had caft her selfe vpon the bedde, and being come to late to succour her, with sweete woordes he began (seing her in those pangues) to wepe bitterly. To whome his daughter sayde: "Father, kepe in thofe undesired teares and bestowe them not vpon me, for I desire them not: who euer fawe man beside you, to bewayle the wilfulnesse of his owne facte. Howe be it, if there do yet reste in you any sparke of that loue, which you haue alwayes borne towards me: grate me this last requeste, that although you were not contented that I should liue secretly and couerly with Guiscardo, yet at leefe, cause our bodies to bee openly buried togethers, where it pleaseth you to bestowe them." The anguishe and forowe would not suffer the Prince to aunswear one worde for weeping. And the Ladie perceiuing her ende approche, cleped and strained the dead hart harde to her stomacke, saying: "Farewell sweete harte in God, for I am going to him." And therewithall she closed her eyes, and loft her fenses, departing out of this dolorous life. In this manner forowefully ended the loue of Gifmonda and Guiscardo, as you haue hearde, whome the prince after he had wepte his fill, and taken to late repentance for his crueltie: caufed honorablie to be buried, and intombed both in one grawe, not without great forowe of all the people of Salerne.
THE FORTYETH NOUELL.

Mahomet one of the Turkishe Emperours, executeth cursed cruelty upon a Greeke maiden, whom hee tooke prifoner, at the wynning of Constantinople.

If you doe euer make any proffe of trial, to knowe of what trampe the Arrowses of Loue be, and what fruite they brynge to them, that doe we and practifie them: I am assured you shall be touched with some pitie when ye understande the beastlie crueltie of an Infidell louter towards his Ladie. He of whom I wyll declare the historie, is Mahomet, not the false Prophete, but the great grandfather of Soliman Otiman, Emperoure of the Turkes, whiche raigned at that tyme. He it is, that to the shame and eternall infamie of all Christian Princes of his tyme, did wynne Constantinople, and tooke awaye the Easte Empire from Constan-
tine, a Christian Emperour, the yeare of our Lord 1453. Maho-
met then having obtained so great victorie at Constantinople, amognes the spoyle of that riche Citie, there was founde a Greeke mayden, of suche rare and excellent beautie, as shee allured the eyes of euery wight, to wonder and beholde her, as a thing mirac-ulous, whose name was Hyerenee, of the age of fixtene or seuentene yeares: whom a Capitaine to gratifie his Lorde, did presente, a Lewell, (as hee thought) moste acceptable to him, aboue all things of the worlde. The Emperour Mahomet, young and wanton beyonde measure, after he had caste his eye upon the mayden, and had grauen her beautie in his harte, gane a straignt charge that shee shoulde bee kepte for hym, hopinge after the tumulte of the warre was ended, to beftowe convenien tyme vpon her. The retracete founded, and the affaires of the Empire reduced to fure estate, remembering him selue of the beautie of Hyerenee, whiche had made a breache and entrie into his harte, commanded that shee shoulde be brought foorth vnto him, and hauing viewed her at his pleasure, hee felt him selue so surprised with that newe flame, that hee conceived none other delight but to playe and
HYERENEE THE FAIRE GREEKE.

...dallie with her, in fuche forte as his spirites being in loues full posseffion, loue dealt with hym so cruellie, as he could take no reste daye nor night. Who yelded him selfe suche a praie to his darling Hyerenee, that he felt no other contentation in his mynde but that which he receiued of her. And this amorous passion indured the space of three continuall yeares, taking suche vigor and increafe by litle and litle, that he began to forget that which appertained to the ornament and honour of his Empire, leaueing the whole admistration of publique caufes to his Bas-chats, he him selfe being so negligent, as he repofed in them all matters concerning the flate of the Empire. During this disorder, the vulgar people began secretly to grudge, as well for the confusion and disorder of the Empire, as for the il gouernment of the fame, (and specially, because the Bajchats corrupted with avarice imployed them felues to their particular profit, and to inriche them felues with the spoile of the people.) The Ianiffaries on the other side, a warlike people, and brought vp in continuall exercife of Armes, began with open voyce, to detraete and flaunder their lorde, commonlie complaining howe hee confumed his life like an effeminate perfone, without inferring or doyng anye profit to the Empire. To bee shorte, the matter came to suche defolation, as it might rather haue bene called a sedition then a murmure: and yet there was none so hardie as durft atteempte to declare the fame to the Emperour, knowing him to be of nature terrible, cruell, and rigorous, that with a woorde woulde put him to death that went about to withdraue him from his defire. Therewithall he was so dronke with the beautie of the Greeke, that the lefte matter, wherewith they might gene occasion to withdraue him from his negligent life, was enough to drive him into rage and furie. This poore Emperour was so bewitched, as not onely hee confumed dayes and nightes with her, but he burned with continual ieloufe, whose beautie was so liuelie painted in the inward partes of his heart and minde, that he remained thus ouerwhelmed in beatly pleASURE, every man in particular and all in generall confpried agaunts him, with one determinate minde, to yelde no more obedience vnto him in time to come, and purposed to chose fome Emperour, that were more marciall and warlike,
through whose succour and counfaile they might not onely con-
ferue the thinges gotten, but also amplifier the boundes and limites of
their Empire. Mustapha which was brought vp with the
Emperour, a gentle personage, franke of talke, and so nere to his
maieftie that he might go into his chamber, although the Greeke
was present: when he perceived conuenient time, suche as he deired
to have, repaired to the Emperour vpon a daye, who liking well his
deuises, walked with him alone in his Gardeine, to whom after he had
made great reuerence, according to their custome, he sayde: “My
faureigne lorde and maifter, if I might speake freely, without
seruile feare, which staith mee, or if the terrour of your displeasure
might not abash me, I would willingly declare vnto your maieftie
that which concerneth not onely your securitie and faulfegarde,
but (which is more) the faulfetie of your whole Empire.” Whom
Mahomet aunswered with merie countenance in these worde.
“Cast away suche colde feare as staith thee, and speake hardly thy
minde: Shewe me what it is that toucheth me.” “I doubt, and it
shall please your maieftie, lefte I shall seeeme ouer presumptuous
and rash, if I discouer the secretes of my hart: but our auncient
education, the dutie of my conscience, with the experience that
you haue alwayes had of my fidelitie, haue so much forced mee,
as being no longer able to rule my selfe, (I am constrained, by
what vertuous provocation I know not) to manifeft thinges vnto
you, that both time and necessitie will make you thincke them
good and necessarie: although (it may so be) that now your eyes
be so bounde yppe, in the vaile of your disordinate affection, that
you cannot digeste, or take the fame in good part. The life (my
lorde) which you haue leded, fithens the taking of Constantinople,
and the excesse pleasures wherein you haue bin plunged these
three yeres, is occassion that not onely your Souldiours and the
rest of your popular people, but the most faithful Lords of your
Empire, do murmure, conspire, and coniure against you. And
pardon me (my lord) if I speake so vnreuerently, in thinges touching
your preferuation. For there is no man but doth very much
marueile of this great and newe alteration that appeareth in you,
which doth so abase you, and maketh you to degenerate from your
auncient generositie and valiaunce. Your owne selfe hath giuen
oyer your selse to be a spoile and praye to a simple woman: that you wholie depend vpon her flatteries and allurementes: reasone or counfaile can take no place in your passionate and afflicted hart. But I humblie befeech your maieftie to enter a little into your selse, and make a survey of your life, that you haue ledde these three yeares paffe. The glory of your auncesfours and predeceffours, acquired and wonne by sheading of so much bloud, kepte by so great prudence, conferred by so happy counfell, haue they no presentation, or shew before your face? The remembrance of theyr memorable victories, doth it not touche the depth of your conscience? The magnanimitie and valiaunce whereby they be immortalized, and their fame regeftred throughe the whole world, is it extinguished in you? Their Trophees and Monumentes grauen and aduaunced to all the corners of the earth, be they thrown downe and defaced from the siege of your remembrance? But where is now the ardent deffe which boile in you from your infancie, to make Italie tributarie vnto you, and to cause your selse to be crowned at Rome, Emperour afevel of Thorient, as of the Occidente? This is not the way to amplifie and inlarge your Empire, but rather to reftraine and diminish the same. This is not the meane to preferue it, but to dispoile it and make it leffe. If Ottoman the first tronke or ftocke of your gentle familie and kinred, had thus giuen himselle to be corrupted in idlenes, you had not now inherited the noble kingdom of Greece, nor gouerned the countries of Galatia and Bithinia, and many other provinces, which enuionne the greate fea. Semblablie his fonne Orcan (a liuely Image of his father and a folower of his valiaunte faétes) had not triumphed ouer Licaonia, Phrigia, Caria, nor dilated the boundes of his Empyre to Hellefponte. What shall I speake of Amurates, the sucedeour of Orcan, who was the first that inuaded Europa, conquered Thracia, Syria, Raffa and Bulgarie? And Baiazet likewyse, did not he cut of the head of the greate Tamburlain, which called himselle the scourge of God, and brought into the field foure hundred thousand Scithians a horfebacke, and fixe hundred thousand footmen? Shall I paffe ouer with silence the vertuous exploites of your grandfather Mahomet, who conquered Macedonia and made the Countries to feel the edge of his sword,
even to the sea Ionicum, lettinge passe many wonderfull expeditions
and iournes by him made against the Lidians and Scicilians? But
nowe I cannot recuie the memorie of your father Amurate, but
to my great foro and grieve, who by the space of x. yeres
made the Sea and earth to tremble and quake, and with the furie of
his stronge hand vsed such cruell reuengment over the Grekes, that
the memorie of the wounds do remaine at this present, even to the
mountaines of Thomao and Pindus: he subjugated the Phocians,
made tributarie Athenes, Beotia, Aetolia, Caramania, and all the
barbarous nations, from Morea to the straits of Corinthe. What
neede I here to bring in the cruel battell that he fought with the
Emperour Sigismunde and Philip Duke of Burgundia wherein he
ouerthrew the whole force of the Christians, toeke the Emperour
prisoner, and the Duke of Burgundie also, whom he sent to An-
drionopolis? or to remember other fierce armes which he sent
into Hungarie, wherof your maiefty is a faithfull witnes, your
selfe being stil there in your owne person. Judge, then, my Lord,
what diligence and intollerable trauell he vsed in his manifolde
glorious enterprifes and famous victories. Do you thinke that
if hee had bin idle in his palace, amonges the Ladyes, you had in-
herited your Empyre, or had nowe bin Lord of so many excellent
Prouinces: which he is not sufficient to rule, that cannot prouide
to confirme and eftablish the saime. There be many of your sub-
iectes and vassals at this day, which do obey and honour your
maiefty (more for feare then good love they beare you) that woulde
rebell against you, if Fortune would turne her backe. The Chris-
tians of longtime (as you know) have sworne your ruine and
destruction. Moreover they say that their high bishop the pope
of Rome hath conuocated all his prelates to vnite, and reconciled
the Princes and Monarches of Christendome together, to ouer run
you, and to take the Scepter out of your hands, and to difpoile
you of your Empire. But what know we whither they wil ioyne
their force with the power of the Persian Sophi, your capital
enemie, or with the Souldan or Aegipt, your auncient aduerfary:
which if they come to passe (as God forbid) your Empire wil be
confumed. Gather your wits then togethers from henceforth my
Lord, and call againe reafon, which so many yeres you haue banished
from you. Awake out of the deep sleepe which hath sealed vp your eyes: imitate and follow the trade of your aunccestors, which euery loued better one day of honour then a hundred liuing yeares of shame and reproch. Attend to the gouernment of your Empire: leaue of this effeminate life: receive againe the smell of your generosity and vertue: and if you cannot at one time cutte off and remoue all that amorous heate which vnder-mineth so your hart, moderate the fame by litle and litle, and giue some hope to your people, which thinke you to be vterlye lofte and desperate of recouerie. Or if so be the Greeke do delighte you so much, who shall let you to carye her with you in all your iourneis and expeditions? Why cannot you together both enjoy her beauty and vse the practise of armes? Mee thinke that your pleafure shalbe greater after you haue wonne some victory, and subdue some countrye to enioye her in your armes, then to remaine in a house with eternal infamie and continuall grudging of your subiectes. But proue I pray you, to separate your selfe certaine dayes from her and you shall certainly judge, how farre more paffing the pleasures be so differed, then those that be daily vsed. Yet one thinge more, and it please your Maiestie, there refeth to be faide, which is, that all the victories of your progenitours, or the conquestes which your selfe hath made be to small purpose, if you doe not kepe them and increase them, the keeping of a thing gotten being of no leffe glory and praise then the conquest. Be now then a conquerour of your selfe, humblie beseeching your Maiestie, that if I haue spoken any thing difagreable to your minde, according to your wonted clemencie to pardon the same, and to impute the faulte to my bounden duty and the care that I haue of your honour and safetye." Mahomet after he had heard the longe discouerse of his flaine, floode as full as a blocke, and fixing his eyes vpon the grounde, with somaine chaunge of colour, declared by outward signes, the agitations and vnquietnes of his minde in such wife, as the poore flaine Muftapha, feing in him those alterations, was in doubt of his life: whose wordes so pricked the Emperours harte, that he knew not what to do, or whereupon to be resolued, and feeling his conscience troubled with a furious battel: knowing evidently
that Muftapha had spoken the truth, and that he uttered the name like a truflie seruant to his maiter. But on the other side the beautie of the Greeke, was still before his eyes, and the minde he had to abandon her, gaue him suche alarme, that he seemed at that instante as though his hart had been torne out of his belly. And thus moved with divers tempestes, and disquieted with sundry thoughtes, hauing his eyes inflamed with great rage and furie, he saide vnto him. "Although thou haft spoken vnreuerently inough, yet our education together, and the fidelitie that I haue prooved in thee in time past, shalbe thy pardon for this time. To the purpole. Before the Sunne doth compaffe the Zodiacke, I will let it be knowne to thee and other, what puiffaunce and power I haue over my felfe: whether I am able to bridle mine affection or not. Take order in the mean time that all my noble men, the Babchats and the principall of my men of warre, be assembled together to morowe, in the middes of the greate halle of my palace." This determination finifhed, the Emperour went into the Greeke, with whom he reioyfed all that day and night, and made more of her than ever he did before. And the more to flatter her, he dined with her, and commandded that after dinner, she shoulde adorn her felfe with her most precious jewels, and decke her with the costliest apparell fhee had. Whereunto the poore wench obeyed, not knowinge that it was her funeral garments. On the other side, Muftapha vncertaine of the Emperour's minde, at the houre appointed causd all the nobilitie to be assembled in the halle, euerye of theym maruelling what moued the Emperour fo to do, fithens he had fo long time shut vp himfelfe, without fiewing his perfon abrode. Being thus assembled, and euerye man talking diuerflye of this matter, accorckinge as their affection ferued: beholde, the Emperour entred the halle, leading the Greeke by the hand, who being adorned otherwife then she was wont to be, was accompanied and garnished with beautie, fo rare and excellent as she resembled rather an heauenly Goddeffe then a humaine creature. The Turke being come into the halle, after that the Lords had made their reverence, according to their wonted maner, he holding still the faire Greeke by the left hande, and stooed still in the midde of the fame, looking furiously round
about him, he said unto them. "So farre as I understand, all ye do mutine and grudge, because I (being vanquished with Loue) cannot be devided nor yet content my selfe day nor night, from the presence of this Greeke. But I do know none of you all so continent and chaste in Loue, that if hee had in posseffion a thing so rare and precious, so amiable, indowed with beautie so excellent, but before he could forget her, and give her ouer, hee would three times be well aduised. What say you to the matter? Every of you shall have free liberty franckly to tel me your minde."

But they rapt with 'an incredible admiration, to see so faire a thing, sayde that he had with greate reason pased his time wyth her. Wherunto the barbarous cruel Prince aunswarende. "Well, now then I will make you to understand, that there is no earthlie thing that can bind vp, or captiuate my fences so much, but that from henceforth I will folow the glorie of mine auncetours, and immitate the vailliance of the Ottomans, which is so fixed in my breafte as nothinge but death is able to blotte it out of my remembrance." Those wordes finishe, incontinently with one of his handes, hee catched the Greeke by the heare of the head, and with his other hand he drew out his falchion from his side, and folding his handes about her golden lockes, at one blow hee strake of her head, to the great terour of them all. When he had so done, he said unto them: "Now ye know, whether your Emperour is able to repreffe and bridle his affections or not?" Within a while after, meaninge to discharge the rest of his cholere, he addresed a Campe of foure score, or an hundred thousand men: with whom percing Boufline, he besieged Belgrade, where Fortune was so contrary vnto him, that he was put to flight, and lofte there a notable bataille against the Cristians, under the conduit of John Huniades, surnamed le Blanck, who was father of the worthie and glorious king Mathie Coruin.
A Ladie falslie accused of adultrie, was condemned to be devoured of Lions: the maner of her deliuerie, and how (her innocencie being knowne) her accusef felt the paines for her prepared.

In the countrie of Aquitane, there was sometime a Lord, whose lands and lordships laye betweene Lismoine and Poictou, and for the antiquitye of his house was renowned both for bloude and wealth, amongst the chiefe of all the Countrie. Being allied in kindred wyth the beft, hee had full accesse and fauour as well in the houses of the aunciente Dukes of Guienne, and Countes of Poictou, as in the Royall Courtes of the French kinges. This Lorde (whom Bandello the author of this history affirmeth to be Signor de la Rocca Soarda, but the translatour and augmentor of the fame in French called Francois de Belle Forest, leaueth out his name, for good respect as he alleageth) kept a great Court and liberal household, and singularlie delighted (after the maner of the French nobilitie) in huntinge and hawking. His house also was had in greater admiracion (the rudenes and ignoraunce of that tyme was fuch) because he had gotten beastes of straunge countries, cheffie Lions, wherein he had great pleafure as well for the rareneffe of that beaft in Fraunce, as for a certaine generositie that he knew to be in the fame, which resembled the magnanimitie and courage of noble men, whose minds and spirites doe not esteeme things that be vaine and cannot be afraine in doing of deedes, whereunto honour is offred for reward. This Lord maried a Ladie, the daughter of one of his neighbours, a woman worthie for fuch a husbande: whose beautie was fo rare as there was none comparable vnto her: which the more increased for that shee was indued with perfiite vertue, and furnished with fo good behauior as right good mindes and wittes shoulde be occupied, naie rather put to their shiftes to decide, whether gifte were greatest, either the exquifite workemanshippe of her excelling beautie, or whether nature had imploied al her cunning, to frame
A LADIE FALSLIE ACCUSED.

a body to appeare before men miraculous, or els her honest
porte, her good grace, curtesie and graue mildnes, accompanied
with vertue, not vulgare or common to many men, which made
this Ladie to shine like the glisteringe Planet of Mars, amongst
other the wanderinge starres. In such wise as the very fuage
and brute were forced with splendour fame, to praisse her to be
such a woman whose equall they never knew to be in all their
Country, who made the house of her husband glorious and him
a contented man, to beholde such a starre to lie by his side,
which sufficed to illustrate and beautifie a whole countrie by her
only preence, and to nobilitate a race, although the blood of
aunceffours did faile, for the accomplishtmente of their perfection.
Such is the great force of vertue which not onely did aduance
her aboue other creatures, but also did confaine the enuiuous to
have her in admiration. But these admiratours and praifors of
vertue, doe not vfe like indeuour for the merites of vertue, rather
they impiope their onely induftrie to gather some proffite of vertue
and then (followinge the nature of the dogge) they retoure to
their vomite, and vomite forth their venime hidden in their
serpent’s brest. As it came to passe and was evident in a certaine
man, that was Stewarde of this nobleman’s house (truly a very
happye house, as well for the honest loue betwene the Lord and the
Lady, as for the vertue and clemency wherewith both the one
and the other were accompanied) who in the begininge, as
honneftie and dutie did require, was a louer of good maners and
commendable demeanour of his Lady and maiftresse, afterwardes
(forgetter the fidelitie which he did owe vnto his Lorde, the
nobilitie of his predeceffours, and the perill of his owne life)
began to loue her and servue her in harte, and to wishe for the
fairesst thing which outwardlye did appeare to be in her, where he
oughte not so much as with the loke of his eye, to giue any atteint
of liking, for the reuereence of him which was the right owner and
iuftu possessor of the fame. This maifter foole then, not mea-
suming his forces, and leffe followinge the instincte of reason,
became fo amourous of his Madame, as continually he imagined
by what meanes he mighte giue her to understand the paines and
languores wherein he liued for the loue of her. But (alas) these
deuifes vanished, like a little dispersfed cloude at the ryfinge of the Sunne: for thinking vpon the vertue of his maiſtreffe, his defires were foner removed from his hart, then he was able to impreffe them in the feat of his judgement, therby to take anye ceraine affuraunce. Notwithstanding his heade ceased not to builde Caftels in the ayre, and made a promife to himſelfe to enioye her whom he worſhipped in his hart. For he toke fuch paynes by his humble fervice, that in the ende he acquired some part of his Laydes good grace and fauour. And for that he durfte not be fo bolde to manifeſt vnto her the vehemence of his griefe, he was contented a long time to ſhew a counterfaict ioy, which raised vnto him a lively spring of forowes and displeaſures, which ordinarily did ſrette and boyle his minde fo mucho: as the force of his weping for vaine hope, was able to ſuffocate the remnant of life, that reſted in his tormented hart, which cauſed ceraine little breaks of teares to streame downe, affailling the minde of this foolifhe Louer. This faire and chaſte Ladie was fo resolute in the loue of her husſande, that she toke no regarde of the counuenances and foolifhe fashiones of this maiſter Louer. Who ſeing his mishappe to growe to diſpaire, and from thence fourthe no remedie, that whether by reioyſe, well hoping of better lucke, or for fodaine and miferable death, he determined to proue Fortune: and to ſee if the water of his hope coulde finde any paſſage, ſtedfaſtlye determined that if he were thrown downe hedlong into the bottome of Refufal, and contempned for his fervice, not to reſte againe, but rather further to plondge for the accelerating of the ruine of him felf, and his defires: for he thought it impoffible that his harte could endure more intollerable heate of that inſible fier, then it had felt alreadie, if he founde no meane for the smoke to haueſome vent and iſue. For whiche conferda- tion, cleane besides him felfe, bewitched with foolifh Loue, like a beaſt throughly transformed into a thing, that had no ſene of a a reaſonable man (ſuch as they be accustomed, that be inrolled in the muſter booke of Venus' ſonne) was purpoſed to open to the Ladie (when occasion ſerved) both the euill, and also the griefe that he ſustaine in bearing towarde her, fo great and extreme affection. Behold here one of the effects of humane folly: this
was the first act of the Tragedie, wherein loue maketh this brain-
less man to playe the first and principal parte vpon the Stage.
This poor gentlewoman (otherwise a good servaunt, and careful
for the profite and honoure of his maister) is nowe so voyde of
him selfe and blinde in understanding as hee maketh no con-
science to affaile her (to defraude her of her greatest vertue) the
simple name of whom ought to haue made him tremble for feare,
and to blufhe for shame, rather then for her beautie sake and
naturall curtesie, to dispoyle her of her honestie, and to attempte
a thing vncertaine to winne and also more daungerous to practife.
Nowe whiles he liued in the attente of his hoped occasion, it
chaunced that the Lady (thinking no malice at all) began to be-
holde the Stewarde with a better eie and looke more familiar,
then any of the gentlemen and domesticall servauntes of the
houfe, as well for the painted honestie of this Galant, as to se him
so prompте and readie to obey her: and therefore vpon a daуe as
she walked in the Gallerie she called him vnto her, and vere
familiarie communicated certaine affaires touching the profite of
the houfe. He that marched not but vpon one foote, and burned
with Loue, and whose harte leapt for joye, and daunced for glad-
nesse, thought that he had nowe obtained the toppe of his felicitie,
and the whole effect of his desire: sodainly he cast away the dis-
paire of his former conceiptes, obiecting him selfe to the daunger
wherin he was to bee ouerwhelmed, if the Ladie accepted not
his request with good digestion. In the end, recovering force, he
discoursed in minde this wicked opinion, wherwith foolish and
wilfull fleshly louers doe blafen and displace the honour and cha-
sitie of Ladies, when they make their vaunte that there is no
woman, be she neuer so chaste, continente, or honest, but in the
ende yeldeth, if she be throughly pursuе. O, the words and
opinion of a beast, rather then of a man knowing vertue. Is the
number of chaste women so diminished that their renowne at
this daуe is like a Boate in the middes of some tempestious sea,
whereunto the mariners do repair to faue them selues? It is the
only vertue of Ladies which doeth constraine them to vomite
foorth the their poyson, when they see them selues deceived, of their
fonde and vncomely demaundes. A man shall neuer heare those
woordes proceede, but from the mouthes of the mofte lasciuious, which delight in nothing els, but to corrupte the good names of Ladies, afterward to make them ridiculous to the worlde. Retourne we then to our purpose, this valiaunt fouldier of loue, willing to geue the first onfet vpon his swete enemie, began to waxe pale and to tremble like the Reede blowen with the wynde, and knoweth not in what part, or by what meanes, to beftowe the firfte strokes of his affault. At length with foltring tongue and trembling voyce, he speaketh to his Ladie in this wyfe. "Alas, madame, how happie were the course of our tranitorie life, if the common paffions received no increafe of troubles, by newe and divers accidents, which feme to take roote in vs, for the very great diminuion of that libertie, which every man doth fudie fo much to conferue. But truly that fudie is vain, and the paine thereof vnprouitable beftowed: for he inforceth him felfe to luye free from paffion, which in the middes of his inforcement, feeleth him felfe to be vio-
ently constrainede, and feeth the taking away of his libertie, to be a certaine impeachemente, which thereunto hee would geue. Alacke, I haue proued that mischiefe, and am yet in the greatefte excelle and pangues of my disease. I fele (alas) a diuerfity of anguiſhes, and a fea of troubles, which tormente my minde, and yet I dare not difcouver the caufe, feing that the thing, which is the foun-
taine of my grief, to be of suche desert as my fervice past, and all that is to come, is not able to geue the proofe, if one fpeciaall grace and fauour, do not inlarge, the litte power that is in mee, to counteruaile the greatneffe, and perfection of that which thus doth variat and alter bothe my thoughts and paffions. Pardon mee (madame) if I doe speake obscurelye, for the confusion of my minde maketh my woordes correspondant to the qualitie of the fame. Notwithstanding I wyll not kepe fylente from you that whiche I doe suffer, and muche leffe diſsemble what paffion I indure, beyng affured for your vertue and gentleenes, that you (moued with compaffion) will fuccour me fo muche as hall lie in you, for preferuacion of the life of him that is the best and moft obedient ferauaut amongst them all that do you humble fervice." The Lady which never thought of the wickedneffe which this in-
fenfate man began to imagine, aunfwered him verye curteously:
"I am forie trulye for your mishap, and do marueile what should be the effect of that passion which as you say, you feele with such diminucion of that which is perfect and accomplisshed in you: for I do see no cause that ought to moue you to so strange infirmitie, whereof you told mee, and wherewith I had alreadie found fault although you had faid nothing. I would to God I knew which way to helpe you, afwel for my lord my husbandes fake, whoe I am sure doth beeare you good will, as for the honestie which hethero I haue knowen to be in you, wherein I thinke all other refembling you, for vertue and good conditions doe deferue that accompt and consideracion." He that thought her already to be taken in his nettes, feing fo faire a waye open and cleare, to diclofe that which he had kept couerete fo long, in the depth of his hart, aunfwear. "Ah, madame, are ye ignoraunte of the forces of Loue, and how much his assaultes can debilitate the liuelihoode of the bodies and spirits of men? Knowe ye not that he is blinde and naked, not caring whither hee goeth, manifesting himselfe there, wher occasion is offred? Alas, madame, if you haue not pitie vpon mee, and doe not regard that, which I do suffer for the loue of you, I know not how I am able to auoyde death, which will approche fo foune to cutte of, and abridge my yeares, as I shal vnderstande a refuall of that which the extreme Loue I beeare you (madame) forceth mee to require: which is to receiue a new seruice of your auncient and faithfull seruice: who inflamed by the brighte beames of your divine face, knoweth not how to chaunge his affection, and much lesse to receiue helpe, but of the place where hee receiued the pricke. Excuse (madame I beeech you) my rathneffe, and pardon my follie: accuse rather, either your celeffiall beautie, or els that tyrant Loue who hath wounded me so luckelie, as I esteeme mine euill fortune, and my wounde happie: fitte by his meane my thoughtes and cogitations doe onelye tende to do you seruice, and to loue you in mine hart, which is the Phenix of the fairest and moste curteous Ladies within all our Prouince. Alas, that excellencie, which thus maketh me your seruaunt shal shall one daye be my ruine: if by your good grace (speaking it with weaping teares) you doe not fauour him, which liueth not, but to obey you, and which
lesing your good grace, will attempte to deprive him selfe of life, which being deprifed through your crueltie, will go to complaine of his bolde attempt, and also of your rigor amongst the ghostes and shadowes of them that bee already dead for like occasion.” The chaste Ladie was so wrapt of wittes for the straungenes of the cafe, and for the grieve whiche she conceiued, to see the vnfhame-faft hardinesse of the varlette, as she could not tell how to make him aunfwere: but in the ende breaking silence, and fetching a great sigh from the bottome of her harte, her face stayned with a frefte Vermilion rudde, which beautified her colour, by reafon of disdaine conceiued against this impudent Orator, she aunfwered him verie feuerely. “O God, who would have thought, that from a hart nobly brought vp, and derived from an honourable race, a vilanie fo greate could haue taken roote and spring vp with fuch deteftable fruite? What maifter Stewarde? have ye forgotten the dutie of a fervaunt towarde his Lorde and maifter? Haue ye forgotten I faye, the dutie of a vertuous gentleman, wel nourifhed and trayned vp towarde fuche and fo great a ladie as I am? Ah, Thefe and Traitour! Is this the venime which thou kepeft fo couert and fecrete, vnder the sweteneffe of thy counterfaïte vertue? A vaunte varlet, a vaunt: goe vther thy fluffe to them that be like thy self, whose honour and honestie is fo farre fpent, as thy loialtie is light and vayn. For if I heare thee speake any more of thefe follies be afured that I wil mortifie that raging flame, which burneth thy light beleuing harte, and wil make thee feele by effecte what manner of death that is, wherein thou repofeft the reft of thy travell.” As this deceived Orator was framing his excufe, and about to moderate the iuft wrath of his Ladie, difpleafed vpon good occaſion, she not able to abyde any more talke, sayde further. “And what signes of difhonestie haft thou feen in mee, that moue thee to periwade a thing fo wicked, and vncomely for mine eftate: yea and fo preuidiciall to me, to my frendes, and the house of thy maifter, my Lorde and fhoufe? I can not tell what it is that letteth me, from causinge thee to be cafte foorthe amonges the Lions (cruell and capittall enemies of adulterie, amonges themſelues) if the thy pretence is, by violating my chaflitie to dishonour the house, whereunto thou oweft no
leffe, then all the advancements thou hast: from the taste whereof thou hast abandoned Vertue, the best thing wherewith thou were affected. Auoyde nowe, therefore, let me heare no more of this, vppon paine of thy life, otherwys thou shalt feele the rewarde of thy temerite, and vnderlende the bitterneffe of the litle pleasure, whiche I haue conceiued of thy follies." So the good Ladie held her peace, referuing in her harte, that whiche shoule bee her helpe in time and place: howbeit she sayde nothing hereof vnto her husbande, awell for raising offence or flaunter, as for prouoking him against him whiche suffeined the punishment him selfe, fitte that this refuse, did more straungely pinche him, nerer at the harte then euuer the Egle of Caucafuls (whereof the Poetes haue talked so muche) did tier the mawe of the subtyle thefe Prometheus. And yet the vnhappy Stewarde not contented, with the mischiefe committed against the honour of his maister, seing that it was but loft time to continue his purfute, and that his gaine would bee no leffe then death, if she according to her promisid threats did therof aduertise her husband, being a cholericke man, and lighte of beliefe, and because the said Steward for such an enterprize had receiued a simple recompence, although he corresspontent to his defert, premeditated worse mischieues, more noisome then the firft. He was in doubt, whether it were better for him to tarie or to departe, sith two thinges in a maner, were intollerable for him to suffer. For he could not forfake the house where from his cradle he had been so finely brought vp, the lord wherof made so much of him, as of his owne person. On the other side, he knewe that so long as the Lady was alie, he could haue no maner of ioy or contentation. For that cause, converting extreme loue (which once he bare to the lady) into cruell hatred, vnseemly for a brutal beaste, and into an infaciable desire of revenge, he determined to addresse so strong an ambushe, trained with so great subteltie, that she was not able to escape without danger of her life and honour, whereof she declared herselfe to be so carefull. Alas, what blindnes is that, which captuath the wittes and spirite of him, that feedeth himselfe of nothing els, but vpon the rage of fantasctical despite and vpon the furie of diupare. Do wee not see, that after Reafon giueth
place to desired revenge of wrong thought to be received, man
difpoyleth himselfe of that, which appertayneth to the kinde of
man, to put on the fierce nature of the moste brute and cruell
beastes, to runne headlonge without reason toward the place wher
the disordinate appetite of affections, doth conduct him? whereof I
will not aduouche any other example, but of this traitour, who pas-
sonated not with Loue, but rather with rage and fury, ceafeth not
to efpie all the actions and behauour of his Ladie, to the intente he
mighte bringe to ende his defiled treafon against her, that thoughte
(perchaunce) no more of his follies, but honefifie to passe the time
with her deare and wel beloved hufbande. Truly, if this Lady
had been of the difpoftion of some women (that care not to
molefte their hufbands, for the first Flie that buzzeth before their
eyes, conceyuing a fruolous and fodaine opinion of their chafttie,
not so much affaile, or to sharply defended, chaunting glorious
Hymnnes and high prayfes of their victorie) certainly she had not
tombled herfelfe into the daunger, wherunto afterwards she fell.
Not for that I will blame them that do reveale to theyr hufbandes
the aflaults which they receive of importunate futers, that doe
affaile to deflower their Chafttie. Yet I will faye that Modellie
in the fame (as in every other humaine action) is greatly to be
required, fith that fuch a one, by thincking to extolle her honouer
and honeftie, and to make profe of her Chafttitye, rendreth the
fame fuspicious, and gineth occafion to talke to the people that is
more apt and redie to flaunder and defame, then by good report
to prayfe them, which by vertue do deferve commendation, bring-
ing the lyfe and fame of her hufband, to fuch extremeute, as it
had been better vertuouly to haue refifted the force of Loue, and
the flattering fute of fuch louers, then to manifeft that which might
have been kept fecret without preiudice of euyther. And truly
that woman deferueth greater glorie, which of herfelle defendeth
her honeftie, and quencheth the flames liuelye kindled in the
hartes of other, with the coldnes of continencie, by that meanes
vanquishing two, then she doth, which manifefting the vice of an
other, difclofeth as it were, a certaine apparaunce of her fraiitie,
and the little reaon wherwith she is indewed, to vanquish him
that confefsth to be her feruaunt, and whose wil dependeth at
her commandement. And when the whole matter shalbe rightlye judged, shee that reuealeth imperfection of a Suter, sheweth her opinion and minde to be more pliant to yelde, then indewed with reason to abandone pleasure and to reiect the insolencie of the same, 5th Reafon's force doth easely vanquish light affections of fen-

tual partes, whose fancies imprinted wyth sickenes, do make them so inconstant, as they perfwade themselves to be so puiffaunte and mightie, as all things be, and refit at their commandement. Retourning nowe then to our former ditscourfe, the Steward so laboured with might and maine, till he had found meanes to be reuenged of the received refufall, with fuch subtilyt and Diuelish inuention as was poiffible for man to deuife, which was this. Among the feruauntes of this greate Lorde there was one no leffe yonge of witte and vnderstanding, then of age. And albeit that he was fare and comely, yet soimple and foolifhe as hee had much a do to tell the number of fixe. This foole by reason of his folle and simplicite, was the onelye sporte and paftime of the Lord and Lady. The Lady many times toke pleasure, to talke with this maister foole, to bring him into a choler and chaufe, thereby to prouoke laughter. And therefore all the houshould vsed to call him in mockerie, my Ladyes darlinge. In whom the Lorde toke singular pleasure and delighte, esteeeming him so well as any of his other feruauntes. The malicious Steward, feing the familiaritie of the lady with the foole (like one that had already caught his pray within his fnares) began also to make much of that vonge Cockescome, in fuch wyse as he had brought him into fuch foolis paradise, as he mighte make him do and faye what he lifte. Who feing him diligent to his defire, one day toke him aside, and after he had whiftled him well, he sayd vnto him. "Dicke, I can tell thee a knacke, that thou shalt make my Lady laugh wel, but thou must say nothing, till she do perceiue it." The poore idiot glad to please his maistres, was defirous to knowe what it was, and promised to doe whatsoever he would bidde him. "Thou must (sayd the steward) in the eveninge before she go into her chamber, hyde thy selfe vnder her bedde, and tarry there till it be an hower or two before day, and then I wil tell thee what thou must doe beides." This plat deuised the foole the same eveneing
executed the deuife of hys diuelifi counfaylour, who feing his
desire to take effe&te, went to an olde gentleman, that was of great
honestie and vertue, for which he was of all men so wel known,
as they efteemed his word so true as the Gofpell. To that gentle-
man this craftie villaine, full of poison and malice, wholly bent
to michtie, told and reported the fa&te, not as it was in deede,
but to the great preindice and dishonour of the Lady, gewing him
to vnderstand how much she had forgotten herfelfe, how without
the feare of God, reuerence of her husband, and repect of her
owne honefty, she had filthely giuen herfelfe over to him which
was called her Dareling. The good gentleman hearing this
ftraung cafe, was aftenoned like one that had been stroken with a
flahe of lightening, then drawing nere to the accufer, he aunswered.
"Is it poiffible that such wickednes can lye hidden in the
breath of our Madame? I feare vnto thee by God, that if any
other had told it me beides you, I would not haue beleued it, and
truly yet I am in dout thereof." "No, no," said this wicked blas-
phemer, "I will make you fee that, which you cannot beleue:" and
hauning leffoned his foole, in his conceiued folliie, the next
day he procure the gentleman thyther, who feing the Ladies
minion, going out of her chamber (which many times lay feerally
from her husband) could not refraine weeping, lamenting the ill
fortune of his Lord, who thinkinge he had had an honeft wye, was
abused with an impudent and vniolamefaft whore. Then he
began to frame a long Oracion, against the incontinencie of
women, moued rather through the good will hee bare to his may-
ster, then to the truth of the matter, which vndiscretely he spake
against the order of women kynd. So ignorant was he of the trea-
fon and indevour of the Steward, who demaunded of him what was
to be done in that matter? "What," sayd the old gentleman,
"such wickednesse ought not to be vnpunished. My Lorde muft
be aduertised hereof, that the house may be purged of suche a
plague and infection, that he maye evidentlie vnderstande the
hypocrifye of her that so longe time hath kept close her incon-
tinencie, vnder the vaile of fayned chaffitie. But the righteous
God made openly to appeare before mens eyes the secrete finnes
of the wicked, to thintent greater flaunders shoule not increafe.
The steward very joyful that he had gotten so honest a man to be a witnesse of his accusations, approved his advice, for that it agreed well with his intent. So they two together went to the Lord, with countenancing fad and heavie, correspondent to their minde, and specially the Traitor, whose sense was so confounded with gladness, that thinking to begin his tale his words so stucke in his mouth as he was not able to utter a word. Whereat the Lord was wonderfully abash'd, marueyling what that timidite did meane, till he had heard the vnfaithfull Steward tell his tale, who sayde to him in this manner. "My Lord, I am fory that it is my lotte to declare vnto you a matter hitherto unknown and not marked or taken heed of by any, which wyl so much offend you, as any pleasure that euer till this day, did please and content you. And God knoweth what grieue it is to me (in your presence) to be an accuser of a person in the world, which I have esteemed nexte vnto you aboue any other creature that lyueth; but being in that place I am, I might (by good defere) be accused of treason and felonie if concealing such a detestable crime, I should leaue the dutie of fidelitie to an other, leffe defirous to do you service then I am. Who beleueth there is no secon person, that defireth better to acquite the goodnes and preferment which I haue receyued of your Lordship, then I do. This it is my Lord: my lady misprisynge her duty to your Lordship, and the honour of the house whereof shee came, hath not disdain'd to receiue into her chamber at inconveniency time, the foole that is called her Darelinge, and in the place into which none but your honour, ought to haue peaceable entrie: whereof this gentleman prefent (whom you know to be without comparifon) shalbe witnesse: touching my selfe the fayth and trufts, which always I haue vfed in all your affayres, and the little affection which I haue to things contrary to vertue, shal give true testimonie of that which I haue saide." The Lord hearing these pitiful newes, which pearced his harte more deeppe then anye two edged sword, at the first was so astonied, that he could not tell what to say or do, fauing the ardente furie of Cholere made him distill a certayne Melancholique humour into his eyes, which receyued the superfluous vapours of his braine. At length breakinge that forth, which troubled him with-
in, and grindinge his teethe for furie, with flutteringe and vncertaine voice, fetching fighes betwene, saide: "O God, what newes be these that I heare? Is it possible, that the fairest and chasteft Lady that liueth, hath in this wife defaced her honour: and so wickedly blemished my reputation? Alas, if it so be, that she hath in this wife disparaged her selfe, no trust is to be repose in any other, what soever she bee. Ah, God! vnder what Planet was I borne, that after so longe pleasure receiued with my beloued fere and companion, I should by her feele a displeasure, an hundred times worfe then death? Is there no remedie but that my house mufe receive and see an enterprife so vilanous, but her onely meane, which ought rather to haue been the ornament and beautie of the fame?" Then he chaufed vp and downe the chamber, without speakeing any more wordes, with his eyes rolling in his heade, making straunge countenaunces, which did well expresse the grieue that vexed and tormentid his minde. In the ende halfe pacifyed, he turnid his face toward the accufer, saying: "My frende, if this be true, which thou haft told mee, I sweare by God, that I will make her feele the smarte, of such greeuous punishmente, as shall be spoken of for euer. But if my wyfe be laundred, and accused wrongfully, assure thy selue that I will be reuenged vpon thee. I know the vertue of this gentleman very well (having had good profe thereof) and of thy fidelitie I am nothing at all in doubt. But, alas! the loue that I beare vnto my wife, and her former vertue, which maketh me to loue and esteeme her so much, doth throughlye pearce my hart, and much ado I haue to liue hearing this reporte: which doth deface and blotte all the honestie and vertue that euer remaied in mee." "And that was it my Lord, (anfweared the traitour) which did deceuie you. For the shewe of that painted vertue did so delude you, that you be almoste bewitched from vnderstanding the wronge, so manifeftlye perpetrated against you, and all your house. Now to thend, that you thincke not the accusacion to be false, I trust (if it please you to affift me) to let you see the thing, whereof wee haue giuen you intelligence." "I will do (sayd the Lord) what you will haue me, although it be to my great grieue and forow." "To morow morning then (anfweared the Traiour) one hower before day, I
will let you see the varlet going out of her chamber with so
great joy, as I do conceive heauines and griefe for the simple
remembrance of so great wickednes." When they were agreed
hereupon, this knaue most detestable, weaung the toile wher-
in he himselfe was caughte, wente to suborne the perfornage of his
foole, holy made and instruerted in his trumperie: leaung the
poore Lord with a hamer working in his head, that he was lyke to
runne out of his wittes. So great is the furious force of the poi-
fon of Ialofie, whych ones having disperfed the vemine ouer the
harte and intrayles of men, the wyse fte hauing loft the due dis-
cretion of their wittes. In the morning about the hower that the
amorous foole (ignoraunt wherfore he went in) shoulde issue out
of his maiitrefse chamber, the Stewarde rauished with inexplicable
ioye and gladnesse, like to the pleasure of hym that had attaynde
the summe of his desires, called hys Lorde to see that heauye and
dolourous fghte. The good gentleman, perceyuing the report to
be true, and thincking that the had vfed the foole to be her bed-
felowe, was like to haue dyed for forow, or els to haue torne in
pee ces that vnhappy fotte, innocent of the euill suspeect by the
Lorde, who durft not so much as thincke to do fuch a wicked fçce.
In the ende geuing place to reaflon, he caused the poore foole to be
apprehended, and put in the bottome of a dongsen, and beyonde
meaure was offended wyth his wyfe, for that he thought the sim-
plicitie of the imprisoned wretche, had not the face to demand
the queftion, and therefore did verely beleuee that it was the that
had induced him to do the deede to satifie her vnbrideled and
filthy luft, and therefore caused her to be shut vp, within a darke
and thincking prifon, not meaninge to fee her, or to heare her speake
for her iustification, ne yet woulde suffer that any man shoulde take
vppon hym to ftaund in her defence, to bring witnesse of her in-
ocency. "For" (sayd he, replete wyth wrath and anger): "I do
better beleue that which I haue seene, and knowen by myne owne
prence, then your wordes, vayne reafons, and complaints of no
good ground and eftecte as founden vppon her, that hath to muche
forgotten herselfe, and her duty towards mee." Moreouer vanquish-
ed with the Cholere (not without caufe truly) of a husband that
thought himselfe by her onely meanes deecyued and betrayed, sent
word to the poore captaine, that she shoule then provide for her soules health, sith he was determined the very same day to make her play a Tragedy, more cruell then that was pleafant, which she had already done wyth her beloued, in extruding her to be devoured of hys Lions, which were the minifters for the execution of the Iustice ordayed againft her, as though she had bin the moft laicitious and detestable woman that euer the earth brought forth. The fayre and innocent lady, knowing the humour and Cholere of her husband, and likewyle feing (contrary to right order of all Judgement) that she could not be heard or suffred to make aunfweare, paffed through the rigorous law of hym, that thoughte her to be an Adultrefle: and coulde not tell what to doe but to laminate her ill fortune, gushing forth teares in fuch abundance, as the moft part of her attyre were wet and bedewed with the fame, then fortefyng herfelfe in the hope of the mercifull hande of Almigh-tye God the father of all confolacion, who neuer forgetteith them, which with intire faith do call vppon hym, and appeale to the succour of the holy and precious name of his fonne Iefus Chrifte our faviour, fhe with compunction of hart, and sincere devotion, with joyned handes and knees vppon the grounde, addrefing her eyes to the heauens, prayed in this wyfe: "Alas, my God, I do knowe and confeffe, that the multitude of my finnes do furpaffe the fca fands, and am not ignoraunt, that this vnhappy time is chaunced vnto me, for the punishment of my forepaft offences. Notwithstandinge (Lord) accordingly to thy greate goodnes, have no refpekte vnto my demerites and wickednes (whereof my life is ful) but rather extende thy favour and mercy vppon thy poore creature, whose innocencie thou (which art the fearcher of mennes hartes) doeft well vnderftande and knowe, I do not defire prolongation of miferable lyfe, onely maye it pleafe thee (O God) for thy goodnes and iustice fake, to faue mine honour, and to graunt that my husband maye fee with what integritie I haue alwayes honoured the holy band of mariage, by thee ordayed, to thintent he may lieue from henceforth quiet of his fufpcion conceived of mee, and that my parentes may not fufaine the blot of ignominie, which will make theym blufhe, when they fhall heare reporte of my forepafted life." She beinge
in these contemplacions and holye prayers, preparinge herselfe to receyue death, her husband caufed her to be conueyed into the Parke of Lions, which being strange and terrible at the first sight, did marueylously affray her, but remembering how innocent she was, putting her hope in God, she went thither with such con-

stancie and courage, as if she had bin ledde to some joyous ban-

quet, and the people which neuer heard tell before of suche a

kinde of death, was assembled in great multitude, tarying to see the ende of that execution, and talking diuerfly of that sodaine

judgement, prayed all with one voyce, for the preservation of the Ladie, of whose chaflitie they were already right well affured. Now

as they attended for the time of execution, the Lady was placed in the mid of the Parke, not without teares and sighes of the Affil-

antes who murmured at the remembranunce of the horror of a fight so furious. The innocent Ladye kneeled downe vpon her knees, and both by gesture and mery countenaunce, showed how joyfull she went to suffer that which she had neuer deferued: then recom-

mending her soule to God, for whose saluation she stedfastly hoped, she pronounced this praier a loude: “O my Lorde God, whiche diddeft ones deliuer Daniell from a daunger like to this, wherunto the false accusation of the wicked, haue wrongfully caft me hed-

lond: and diddeft discharge Sufanna from the flaunder of the peruerfe and adulterous Judges, pleafeth the pitifully to behold thy poore creature. Pardon, O Lorde! forgive I humblie be-

feche thee, the simplicitie of my deare husband, who dealeth thus with mee, rather through the circumentioned of decepfull caul-

ling flaunderers, then by his owne malice and crueltie. Receiue, O my God, and mercifull father, receiue my soule betwene thy bleffed handes, which thou haft redeemed by the bloudhedding of thy fonne Iefus, vpon the Tree of the Croffe!” As she had ended these wordes, she sawe the Lions come forth ramping, and brifiting vp their heare, stretching forth their pawes with roaring voice, cruelly looking round about them, of whom the Lady thought to be the preuent pray. But the goodneffe of God, who is a iuft Iudge, and suffreth his owne elect to be proued to the extremitie, of purpofe to make their glorie the greater, and the ruine of the wicked more apparaunt, manifefted there an euident miracle. For
the Lions (being cruel of nature, and that time hungrie and gredie of pray) in lieu of tearing the Ladie in pieces, to gorge their ravening paunche, they fill to licking and fawning vpon her, making so much of her as if they had familiarly ben nourished with her own breasts. A thing no lesse pleaunt to the Ladye then merciful to all the people standing round about, who seing a chauncse so miraculous cried out, incontinent for the deliuerie of the Ladie, and for vengeance to be taken of him, which so wickedly had protruded her into that daunger: which for her vertue, ought to be extolled and praifed of the whole world. When the noble man was certified of this straunge adventure, he caufed his Steward to be apprehended and imprisoned, whose conscience forced great remorfe, yet not knowing the ende of the Tragedie, condemnped himselfe by his countenaunce. During his imprisonment the deposition of the beloued foole was taken, who faide: "That by the suggeftion of the malicious Steward, many times (ignoraunt to the Lady) he conueied himfelf in her chamber, not knowing wherunto the intent of him that caufed him fo to do did tende." The other gentleman made excufe (although he was blame worthy) that he was deceived by the fame faltie practife, that the Lorde himfelfe was. The Steward openly confefed the treafon, which he had defuised againft the Ladie, and the whole occafion thereof, and thinking to be reuenged of the refufall of loue by her denied, he framed this flaunder to make her losse her life. Which the Lord hearing could not abide that his death shou’d any longer be respected, but without other forme of Lawe, he was thrust out to the Lions, and was presently feaied vpon, and torne in pieces by those beaftes, which by God’s iuftie judgement, did abftein from the good ladie, for the punishment of the detestable finne of this varlet. In the meane time the chaffe and innocent Ladie, being brought before her husbande, after he had kifed and imbrafed her, with humble reuerence she fayde vnto him: "My Lorde, I render my humble thankes to God, for that through his holy grace, and inſcrutable Iuſtice, he hath let you to vnderſtande, twoo diuers affections, in two feuerall perſones of this worlde, which you loue fo well. In one, the treafon fo pernicious, which prouoked you to foile and imbue your handes (not without
cause till this daye proued contrarie) in the bloud of your faithfull and dere beloued wife. In that, a will and minde so good to obey you, and to perswist in continuation of that effecte, which maketh her generally to be prayfed, and worthy of your earnest loue, for so much as she is your very affectionate spouse. Notwithstanding, iustly may I make my complaint of you, for that without excuse for my discharge, or hearing any thing that might serve for my purgation, you condemned her, for whose honour and defence you ought to haue imploied both goodes and life. But God shalbe judge betwene your little discretion, and my righeteousnesse, betwene mine obedience and your crueltie, wherewith you haue abused the nobilitie, of the race whereof I came." The hufbande hearing this wife and iust complaint, on the one fide transporeted with ioye, leapt and rejoysed, to see his deare companion in libertie, and declared to be innocent, on the other part he blushed for shame, that hee had so lightly, and without better proffe and triall condemnpned her, whom God by his grace had preferued from the lions throates, and durfte not lift vp his head, by reafon his harte treted at the remembrance of his light credite and furie immoderate. Finallie embracing his wife, and kifing her louingly, said vnto her: "Madame, and deare beloued wife, I can not denye but foolishely I haue attempted to blemishe the honor of her, that whilome made me to shine and glister amongst the best and chief of all this countrey, but he that doth wel marke and beholde the galle and disdaine of a husband louing his wyfe, and then vnderstandyng her little care and greate forgetfulness whiche shee hath, bothe of his honour and glorie of his conforte, will easely excuse and pardon my fault, whiche I will not by any meanes colour and cloke, but rather crave pardon at your handes, affurer you that I will amende and requite the fame, so well and in suche wife as you and yours shall haue no caue but to be content and satisfied."

"It suffiseth me, sir, (quod she) that my giltelesse offence is knowen vnto you, and that I haue recovered place in your favourable acceptation: for I doe accompte mine aduerfitie well imploied, fith thereby you and your friendes may glorie, of the seuere iustice ministred against malefactors, and I rejoyce in resistaunce of
the assaultes of loue, and of death to guarde and kepe my chaftitie pure and inuioable: and may serue for example to euery honourable Ladie, being aaffailed with suche firong and mightie aduefaries, to kepe them selues honest. For the crowne is not due but to her that shall lawfully combate to the ende. After this the lorde by perfwafion of his wife, commaunded that the foole shoule should be avoided the houfe, that his presence might not grieue or torment her, ne yet renewe the memorie of a thing that neuer was thought or done. And not without caufe: for the Lorde, whiche reclined his care to euery trifling report, and credited the woordes of euery whiffling pikethanke, had much a do to escape from doing thinges unworthy his estate and calling. Of fo great force truely is the venime of such Serpentes, that feaing by little and little, the harte of him disposed to receiue it in furie, maketh it to be in effect like the nature of poyfon and drogues corrupt: whereof men ought to be no leffe, but rather more diligent and carefull then of meates, amonges perfones whom they suspeect and feare, fithens that maladies and infecions of minde, be farre more daungerous then outward passions which torment the body. Whereunto if the saide nobleman was not hedefull, he felt the dammage for penance of his inconsideration. Howbeit as thinges, both good and ill amonges men, bee not still durable and perpetuall. Certaine daies after, he began to solace hymselfe with his wife, and rode an huntinge abroade, visited his neighbours, and at home made great feafles and banquettes, whereunto his kindred and frends were invited, to congratulat[e] this newe allianc[e], indevouring thereby to fatifye the fault committed, and the better to gratifie and pleasure his wyfe, to make her know how much more hee esteemeed and regarded her then before: hee caufed the fuccesfe of his present historie to be ingrauen with great industrie, and maruellous cunning in Marble, which he placed ouer the gate of the first entrie into his Castell, afwell to immortalize the great chaftitie of this fayre and vertuous wife, as to set forth a Mirrour and example to euerye householde seruaunt, and to all other whatsoever they bee, to beware how they attempt any thing against the honour of Ladies. For many times it chaunceth, that he which diggeth a ditch, and setteth vp a Gallowes, is the first that doth
fall, or is stretched thereupon. As you may see by this present
discourse, which setteth before your eyes what ende the fonde
love of them ordinarily haue, which without reason, not measure-
ing their owne ability, doe suffer themselves to be guided and
led into their sensual lustes and appetites: for ill fuc-
ceffe faileth not in a beginning, the grounde where-
of abhorring reason, is planted and layed vpon
the sandie foundacion of pleasure, which
is shaken and overthrown, by the
least winde and tempest that For-
tune can bluster against
such building.
THE FORTY-SECOND NOUELL.

Didaco a Spaniarde, is in love with a poore maiden of Valencia, and secretly marrieth her; afterwardes lothinge his first mariage, because she was of base parentage, he marrieth an other of noble birth. His first wyfe, by secrete messenger prayeth his company, whose request he accomplisheth. Beinge a bedde, shee and her maide killeth him. She throweth him into the sreate: shee in desperate wife confesseth the fahte before the Maiefrates, and is put to death.

There is no man but doth knowe, that Valencia is at this day, the chiefe and onelye Rampar of Spaine, the true feate of Faith, Juftice and humanity. And amogges all the rare and excellent ornamentes, that Citie is wel furnisshed with so trimme Ladies and curteous gentlewomen, as they know how to baite and feede yong men with foolish dialaunce, and idle passeftime. So that if there be any beetlehead or groffe perfon, the better to allure and pro-voke him to those follies, they tell him by a common Prouerbe: That he must go to Valencia. In this citie there was in old time as it is at this day, a verye aunciente flocke and familie called Ventimiglia, oute of which be descended a great number of riche and honourable knightes. Amonges whom, not long time past, there was one named Didaco, verye famous and renowned to be the moft liberall and familiar gentleman of the City, who (for want of better businesse) walked vppe and downe the citie, and so consumed his youth in triumphes, maskes, and other expences, common and apte for such pilgrimes, addressing his loue indifferently to al women, without greater affection to one, then to an other, and continued that order, till vpon an holy daye, he espied a yonge maide of fimal yeares, but of very exquifite beauty: which maiden sodainlye caftinge her eye vpon him, so peared the knighte Didaco with her looke, that from that time forth shee entred more neare his hart than any other. And after he had well marked her dwelling place, he many times passed and repassed before the doore, to elpie if he might get some loke or other fauour of her, that began already to gouverne the bridle of his
thoughtes, and if it chaunced that the gentleman beheld her, she shewed her selfe curteous and amiable, indued with grace so good as he never departed ill contented out of the fireate. The gentle-
man continuing certaine time in those vanities, was desirous to
know a far of what she was, of what lineage and of what vocation.
And after he had curiously searched out all her original, he under-
stood by divers reportes, that she was a Goldsmithes daughter,
whose father was dead certaine yeares before, havinge no more
but her mother alio, and two brethren, both of their father's science.
Notwithstanding, of life she was chaste and honest, defamed with
none, although she was pursu'd of many. Her outward beautie
did not so much set her forth, as her grace and order of talke, who
although brought vp in a Citizen's house, yet no Lady or gentlewo-
man in the Citie, was comparable to her in vertue and behauiour.
For from her tender yeares, she was not onely giuen to her nedle
(a meeete exercife for mayds of her degre,) but alio was trayned vp
to write and reade, wherein she toke so greate pleasure, as ordi-
narilie shee caried a booke in her hande, which she never gaue
ouer, till she had gathered som fruit thereof. This knight having
receyued that first impression, of the valor and vertue of Violenta
(for that was her name) was further in loue then before: and that
which added more oile to the match, was the continuall lookes,
wherewith she knew how to delighte him: and wyth them shee
was so liberall, that so oft as he pass'd through the fireate she
shot them forth so cruelly, as his poore hart (feeling it selfe so tormented)
could not indure that new onet. By reason whereof, thincking
to quench the fire, that by little and little confum'd him, he at-
tempted her chastity, with giftes, letters, and meffengers, which he
continued the space of halfe a yeare or more. Whereunto Vi-
olenta gening no place, in the ende hee was constrain'd to affayle
her with his owne presence: and one daye finding her alone at
the doore, after he had made a verye humble reverence vnto her,
he sayde: "Maistrefse Violenta, considering your order and the
colde regard that you have to my letters and meffages, I do re-
member the subtilltye that is attributed to the Serpente, who with
his taile stoppeth his eares, because he will not heare the words,
which hath power to constraine him to do against his wil, which
hath made me to leane to write vnto you, and to defire specially to speake vnto you, that mine affecuous accentes, my forowful words and fervent sighes mighte certifie you better then paper, the rest of my paffion, beleuing verely, that if the heavy found of my greuous complaints, may come to your delicate cares, they will make you to vnderstand a part of that good and euill, which I feel continually in my harte, although the loue which I beare you, be such as I cannot giue such liuely experience outwardly, being but little in comparifion of them, which may be feene within.” And pronouncing thofe words, there followed so many teares, fobbes and sighes, as they gaue sufficient testimony, that his tongue was the true and faithfull messenger of his hart. Whereof Violenta some what ashamed, with a constante grace faid vnto him: “Senior Didaco, if you do yet remember your life past, and mine honesty (which peraduenture you haue thought either rude or cruel!) I doubt not, that you haue any caufe to maruaile of my presumption and to attribute that to vice, which is familiar with vertue. For although that you haue sollicitied mee to loue you, by an infinite number of letters and messages, yet it is so, that following the nature of maydes of my degree, I haue neither allowed them, nor yet condempned them, as wherunto accordingly I haue made no aunfwere: not for despite or contempt, but to let you know more certainly, that by fauouring your enterprifes, I should increafe your griefe, which can receiue none ende by the waye you pretende. For although that I haue made the firfte proved vpon my felfe, and therefore of reafon I ought to lamente them, whiche be in semblable paine, yet I will not let flippe the bridle in suche wife to my paffion, that mine honesty shall remain in an other man’s power, and (fo it may be) at the mercie and curtse of them, who not knowing howe dere it is to me, shall thinke they haue made a pretie conquest. And that I maye haue no caufe to repent to late, I haue stopped mine cares for feare, that I be not arrefited and flayed with the violence of your charmes, a thing as you say proper to Serpentes. But I haue fortefied my harte, and fo armed my inwarde minde, as if God continue that grace in me, which hitherto he hath done, I hope not to be surprifed. Although that I must needs conffe (to my shame) that I haue receiued maruellous
affaultes of loue, not onely for the common renowne of your vertues, and through the curtefe and gentlenesse dayly imparted to me by your letters, but specially by your presence, whiche hath yelded vnto me experience and affuraunce of that, whiche all the letters of the world could not do, nor all other messages were not able to conceiue. And to the ende that I may not be utterly ingrate, and that you doe not departe from me, altogether miscontent, I doe promisfe you nowe that from henceforth, you shall inioye the first place of my harte, whereunto another shall never enter: if so be you can be content with honest amitie, wherein you shall finde me in time to come so liberall, in all that whiche honestie shall permitte, that I am contente to forgoe the name of a presumptuous or cruell Damofell for your sake. But if you meane to abuse me, or hope for anye thing of me, contrarie to mine honour, you be meruailously deceiued. Wherefore if you thinke your worthineffe to great to carry away a recompence so small, you shall doe very wel both for me and yourselfe, in forgetting that is past, to cut of all hope in time to come.” And she thinking to prolonge a further discoure, the mother of Violenta which stil fode at the wyndowe al the time that Senior Didaco was with her daughter, came downe to the doore, interrupting their talke, faide to Didaco: “Sir, I suppose you take great pleasure in the follie of my daughter, because you tarie and abide here, rather to contribue your tyme, then for any other contentacion you can receiue. For she is so euill taught, and of suche rude behauiour, that her demeanour will rather trouble you, than geue you caufe of delight.” “Maistresse,” said Didaco, “although in the beginning I purposed not to tary so long, yet when I entered in more familiar acquantaunce and had well experienced her good graces, I confesse that I haue staied here longer then I thought. And were hee never so great a Lorde, that liueth at this daie, I dare auouche that he might thinke his tyme well spente, in hearing suche sober and honest talke, wherewith I thinke my selfe so well fatified and instructed, as all the daies of my life I wyll witnesse, that vertue, curtefe, and sober behauiour is to bee founde, as well in meane degrees and houfes, as in them that be right noble, amongst which meane families, although she be one (it maye so be) that
one more illustre and noble, can not bee more excellente, and accomplished with better manners, then she: whiche is nowe well manifesterd to me in this little discourse.” And after certaine other common talke, Didaco took his leave, and went home to his house, where hee lyued fourtene or fiftene monethes without any refle, affaying by all meanes to mortifie his desires, but it awayled not: For although he was ryche, a trymme Courtiar, and an eloquent gentleman, and had opportunitie to speake vnto her many times, and she gentle enough to heare him, and to vnderstande his errantes, and was assured by frendes that she for her part was also in loue, yet he was not able by humane arte and policie, to convertte her to his mynde. Wherewithall hee was long tyme molested, and at lengthe presed with griefe and annoyance, hee was aduertized to sende fixe hundred ducates to the mother, for a reliefe to the mariage of her daughter, promizing besides, that he would affigne her an honest dowrie, when she found a man worthy to be her husband: vppon condicion that she would yelde to him some comfort, to ease his affection. But shee whiche could not be wonne with loue, was not able to be recovered with money: and was offended that Senior Didaco had forgotten himselfe so farre as to thinke to gaine that for money, which with so great paine, teares and fighes, had bene denied him. And to make him vnderstande howe she was offended, shee fent woorde by him that brought her the money, that he should goe and proove hereafter to deceuie them that measured their honour with the price of profite, and not to sette trappes to deceuie other that would buye nothing hurtfull to vertue. And after Didaco was aduertized of her minde, and perceiued that he lost time in all his enterpryse, and was able no longer to susteyne his extreme paine and forowe, whiche daily augmented, and when he had debated in his minde all the successe of his love, he resolued in the end vpon that which he thought most profitable for his quiet, whiche was to marye her. And although she was of no suche house, and yet iffe indowed with subsence, as he deferred, yet her beautie and vertue, and other gifts of grace, wherewith she was inriched, made her worthie of a great lorde. And resolued vpon this, hee repaired to Violenta, to whom he said: “Maistrefte Violenta, if the true touch-
flone to knowe them that be perfecte louers (amonges other) is mariage, certainly you haue gotten a husbande of me, if it plea·
you to accepte me for suche one, whom in time you shall make to
vnderstande the difference betweene goodes and vertue, and be-
tweene honestie and riches." Violenta then rauished with ioye,
and incredible contentation, somewhat abashed, sayd vnto him:
"Senior Didaco, I knowe not whether you pretende by woordes
to proue my constancie, or els to bringe me into fooles paradife:
but of one thing I can assure you, that although I acknowledge my
selfe inferiour to you in merites, goodes and vertue, yet if that
come to passe which you promife, I will not gene place to you in
loue, truiting if God fende us life together, you shall well vnder-
stande one daye that you would not exchaunge my perfone for a
greater Ladie, what so euer she be." For confirmation whereof,
Didaco plucked from his finger an Emeralde of great value, which
(when he had kissed her) he gaue vnto her in the waye of mariage,
praying her that she would not disclose it for a certaine time, vntill
he him selfe had made all his frendes priuie vnto it. Notwith-
standing, he willed her to imparte the fame to her twoo brethren,
and to her mother, and he would get some Priefte of the countrie
to solempnize the mariage within their house: which was done in
a chamber, about fower of the clocke in the morning, being onely
present the mother, the brethren, the Priefte, and a servaunt of
the house, brought vp there from her youte, and his own man,
without making any other preparation of coste, requisite for suche
a matter. In this forte they spent the daye in great ioye and
mirthe (which they can conceive, that be of bafe birth, and exalted
to some highe degree of honour) till night was come, and then euery
man withdrew them selues, leauing the bride and her husband to
the mercie of loue, and order of the night. Who being alone re-
ceived equal ioye, and like contentation, which they fele that being
presied with ardent and greuous thirste, doe in the ende afterwardes
with liuelyioye, and all kinde of libertie, quenchethat cruell discom-
moditie. And continued in those pleasures till morning, that daye
began to appeare, to whome Violenta faide: "My honourable Lorde
and dere husbande, fithe that you be nowe in poefision of that
which you haue fo greatly defired, I humbly beseeche you, to con-
fider for the time to come, howe and what wyfe your pleurise is
that I shall vs my selfe. For if God graunt me the grace to be
so discrete in pleasing you, as I shalbe readye and desirous to obey
you, in all that you shal commaunde mee, there was neuer gentle-
man's seruant, that did more willingly pleafe his maister, then I
hope to doe you." Whereunto Didaco aunswered: "My sweete
and welbeloued wife, let vs leauue this humblenesse and seruice for
this time, to them whiche delight in them: for I promise you of
my faith, that I have you in no leffe reuerence and eftimation,
then if you had come of the greatest houfe in Cathalongne: as
I will make you vnderstande some other time, at more leasure.
But till I have giuen order to certaine of mine affaires, I praye
you to kepe our mariage secreete, and bee not offended if many
times I do reforde home to mine owne houfe, although ther shall
no day passe (by my wil) but at night I wil kepe you companie.
In the mean time to buye you necessaries, I will sende you a
thoufande, or twelue hundred Ducates, to impoyde not vpon
apparel, or other things requirte to your degree (for I will pro vide
the fame my selfe at an other time) but vpon small trifles, such as
be apt and conuenient for householde." And so departed Senior
Didaco from his wyues houfe: who did fo louingly interteigne
him as by the space of a yeare, there was no daye wherein he was
content without the view and sight of his wife. And vpon his
ofte reforde to their houfe, the neighbours began to suspect
that he kept the mayden, and rebuked her mother and brethren,
but specially Violenta, for suffering Didaco to vfe their houfe in
fuche secreete wife: and aboue all they lamented the ill happe of
Violenta, who being so wel brought vp till she was twentie yeares
of age, and maiden of such beantie, that there was none in all
the citie of Valencia but greatly did esteme her to be of singuler
honestie and reputation. Notwithstanding, degenerating from
her accustomed vertue, they judged her to be light of behauiour,
giuen to lascivious love: and albeit that verie many times, such
checkes and tauntes were obiecte, yet she made fmal accompte of
them, knowing that her conscience by anye meanes was not
charged with such reproch: hoping therwithall that one daye
she would make them to giue ouer that falsie opinion when her
mariage should be publifhed and known. But certaine times feeling her felse touched, and her honestie appaired, could not conteine but when the fawe time with her husband, she prayed him verie earnestlie to haue her home to his own hous, to auoyde flaunader and defamation of neighbours. But Sir Didaco knewe so well howe to vfe his wife by delais and promifes, as the agreed vnto him in all thinges, and had rather displeafe the whole world together then offende him alone. Being now so attached with the loue of the knight as she cared for nothing els, but to pleafe and content him in al things wherunto the fawe him disposed, and like as in the beginning she was harde and very Slacke in loue, nowe she became so fervent and earneft in her affection as she receiued no pleasure but in the sight of Didaco, or in that which might content and pleafe him beft. Which the knight did easely perceiue, and seing him felse in full posession of her harte, began by little and little to waxe cold, and to be grieued at that which before he comted deare and precious, perswading himself that he should do wrong to his reputation, if that mariiage vnworthy of his estate, were discouered and known in the citie: and to prouide for the fame, he more feldome tymes repaired to viſte his wife Violenta: yea and when foeuer he resorted to her, it was more to fatiffie his carnall pleasure, then for any loue he bare her. And thus forgetting both God and his own conscience, he frequented other companis in diuerfe places, to winne the good will of some other gentlewoman. In the ende by fundrie futes, diffimulations, and hypocrifies, he so behaued him self, as he recovered the good wil of the daughter of Senior Ramyrio Viglaracuta, one of the chiefeft knightes, and of moſte auncient hous of Valenta. And (as we haue declared before) because he was ritche and wealthe, and ifued of a noble race, her parentes did easely agree to the mariadge: and the father hauing assigned an honourable dowrie to his daughter, the Nupcials were celebrated publikely with greate pompe and solemnitie, to the singuler contentation of all men. The mariadge done and ended, Sir Didaco and his newe wife continued at the hous of his father in lawe, where he liued a certaine time in suche pleasure and deleſtation as they do that be newly maried. Wherof the mother and
brethren of Violenta being aduertised, conceiued like forowe, as
accustomably they doe, that see the honor of them that be issued
of their owne blood vninfluently and without cause to be diptoleed.
And these poore miserable creatures, not knowing to whom to
make their complainte, liued in straunge perplexitie, because they
knew not the priest which did solemnifie their mariage. On the
other side they had no sufficient proofe of the fame. And albeit
they were able to verifie in some pointes the first mariage of
Didaco, yet they durst not prosecute the lawe against two of the
greatest Lordes of their citie: and knowing the floute hart of Vio-
leta, they thought to conceal the fame from her for a time, but
it was in vain: for not long after she was certified thereof, not
only by the next neighbours, but by the common brute of the
Citie, which reported that in tenne yeresspace, there was not seen
in Valencia, a Mariage more honourable or royall, nor frequented
with a nobler companie of Gentlemen and Ladies, then the fame
was of the yong knight Didaco, with the daughter of Senior
Ramyrio. Wherewithall Violenta vexed beyonde meafure pressed
with yre and furie, withdrew herfelfe into her chamber alone,
and there began to scratche and teare her face and heare, like one
that was madde and out of her wittes, saying: "Alas, alas, what
payne and trouble, what vnmeasurable tormentes suffreth nowe
my poore afflicted mynde, without comfort or consolation of any
creature living? what dure and cruel penance doe I sufteine,
for none offence at all? Ah! fortune, fortune, the enemy of my
felicite and bliffe, thou haft fo depruned me of all remedie, as I
dare not fo muche as to make any man know or understand my
mishap that the fame might be revenged, which being doen would
render such content to my minde, that I should departe out of
this worlde the beftie satisfied mayden that euer died. Alas, that
the Goddes did not graunte me the benefite, that I might haue
come of noble kinde, to the inteinte I might haue caufed that tray-
terous ruffien, to feele the grieuous paine and bitter tormentes,
which my poore harte suffeineath. Ah wretcheed caitife that I am,
abandoned and forlorne of all good fortune: nowe I doe see that
with the eies of my minde, which with those of my body dafeled
and deceived I could not see or perceiue. Ah cruel enemy of all
pitie, doest thou not knowe and feele in thy minde, the heauie
and forowfull founde of my bitter plaintes? Vnderstandest not
thou my voyce that crieth vengeance vpon thee for thy misdeede?
Can not thy crueltie in nothing be diminished seing me dismem-
bred with the terrore of a thounfand furious martirdomes? Ah
ingrate wretch, is this nowe the rewarde of my loue, of my faith-
full service, and mine obedience?" And as she thus bitterly tor-
mented her selfe, her mother and brethren, and her maide, whiche
was brought vp with her from her tender yeres, went vp to the
chamber to Violenta, where they found her then so deformed with
rage and furie, that almooste she was out of their knowledge. And
when they went about to reduce her by al meanes possible from
thofe furious panges, and saw that it nothing availeth, they lefte
her in the keeping of the olde maiden, whom she loued aboue any
other. And after the maiden had vtted vpunto her particularly
many reasons, for the appeasing of her grieue, she told her that
if she would be quiet a little while, she would go and speake to the
knight Didaco, and make him to vnderstand his fault. And would
with discrete order fo deale with him, that he should come home
to her house, and therefore she prayed her to arme herselue
against this wickednes, and to difsemble the matter for a time,
that hereafter she might vfe vpon him iust reuenge. "No, no
Ianique" answerd Violenta, "that offence is very small and lighte,
where countaine is receiued: and albeit that I cannot chafe, but
defende thine aduise to be very mete, yet there wanteth in me
a minde to followe it: that if I did feele any part in me dis-
pofed to obeye the same, I would euen before thy face, separet
that minde from my wretched bodie: for I am so refolued in the
mallice and hatred of Didaco, as he cannot satiifie me without
life alone. And I beliue the gods did cause me to be borne with
mine owne hands to execute vengeance of their wrath and the
loffe of mine honour. Wherefore, Ianique, if from my
youth thou diddest euer loue me, shew now the same to me by
effect, in a matter whereunto thy helpe is moiste neceffary: for
I am so outraged in my mischiefe, as I do enuie the miferablest
creatures of the world, remaying no more in me to continue
life in wailing and continuall fighes, but the title of a vile and
abhominable whore. Thou art a stranger and liest here a beastly life, joined with continuall labour: I haue twelve hundred crownes with certaine iewelles, which that false traitour gaue me, which he predefinat with the heauens for none other purpose but to paiue them their hire, which shall do the vengeance vpon his disloyall perfone. I doe put the same money nowe into thy hands, if thou wilte helpe mee to make sacrifice with the bodye of poore Didaco: but if thou doest denie me thy helpe I will execute the same alone: and in case he do not die, as I do intende, he shalbe murdred as I may, for the first time that I shal see him with mine eyes, come of it what will, his life shalbe dispatched with these two trembling hands which thou feest.” Ianique seing her maistrefse in these termes, and knowinge her stoute nature, indued with a manly and invincible stomacke, after shee had debated manye thinges in her minde, she determined whole & to imploye her selfe for her maistres in that shee was able to doe. Mowed partly with pitie to see her maistres dishonored with a defamed mariage, and partly prouoked with couetousnes to gaine so great a summe of money, which her maistres did offer if she would condiscende to her enterprize (thinking after the facte committed, to flee into some other countrie.) And when shee was throughly resolued vpon the same, shee imbraced Violenta, and said vnto her: “Maistres, if you will be ruled by mee, and giue ouer the vehemencie of your wretche and displeasure, I haue found a way for you to be reuenged vpon Didaco, who hath so wickedly deceyued you: and albeit the same cannot be doen secretly, but in the end it must be known, yet I doubt not but the caufe declared before the judges, and they vnderstandinge the wronge he hath doen you, they wil haue compassion vpon your miferie: who know right well that alwayes you have been known and esteemed for a very honest and vertuous maiden: and to the ende that you be informed how this matter may be broughte to passe, first you must learne to dissemble your griefe openlye, and to faine your selfe in anye wife not to bee offended with the new mariage of the knight. Then you shall write vnto him a letter with your owne hande, letting him therby to vnderstande the paine that you suffer for the great loue you beare him, and ye shal
humble beseech him, some times to come and visit you. And if the that frowarde fortune will not suffice you to be his wife, yet that it would please him to vfe you as his louer, that you maye possesse the second place of his loue, fith by reafon of his new wife you cannot injoy the first. Thus the deceitour shalbe begiled by thinkinge to have you at his commaundment as he was wont to doe: and being come hither to lie with you, we will handle him in such wife, as I haue inuented, that in one nighte he shal lose his life, his wife, and her whom hee thinketh to haue for his louer: for when he is a bedde with you, and fallen into his first sleepe, we will fende him into another place where in a more fonder sleepe hee shalbe euerlaftinglie continue." Violeanta all this time which fed her bloudie and cruell harte with none other repast but with rage and disdaine, began to bee appeased, and founde the counfaile of Ianique fo good, as the wholy purpofed to follow the fame. And to begin her enterprife, she prayde Ianique for a time to withdrawe her felfe, vntill shee had written her letter, by the tenor whereof shee should vnderftande with what audacitie shee would prosecute the reste: and being alone in her chamber, takinge penne and paper, she wrote to Didaco, with fayned hart as followeth. "Senior Didaco I am perfwaded, that if you wil vouchsafe to read and peruse the contentes of these my forowful letters, you shalbe moued with some compafion and pitie, by beholding the true Image of my miferable life, pourtrayed and painted in the fame, which through your difloyaltie and breach of promise is confumed and fpent with fo many teares, fighes, tormentes and griefes, that diuers times I maruaile howe Nature can fo long support and defende the violente affaultes of fo cruell a martyrdome, and that the hath not many times torne my feeble spirite out of this cruell and mortall prifon: which maketh me to thinke and beleue by continuinge life, that death himselfe hath confpired my miferie, and is the companion of my affliction: considering that by no torment she is able to make diuision betwene my foule and body. Alas, how many tenne hundred thoufande times in a day haue I called for death, and yet I cannot make her to recline her eares vnto my cries. Alas, how many times am I vanquished with the sharpe tormentes of fowre, readie to take my
leave and left farewell of you, being arrived to the extreme panges of death. Behold Didaco mine ordinary delites, behold my pleasures, behold all my pastime. But yet this is but little in respect of that which chanceth in the night: for if it happen that my poore eyes doe fall a sleepe, weary with incessaunt drawing forth of well springes of teares, flombring dreames cease not then to vexe and affliect my minde, wyth the cruelleft tormentes that are possible to be deniied, represetning vnto me by their vglie and horrible visions, the ioye and contentacion of her, which inioyeth my place: wherby the greatest ioy which I conceiue is not inferior to cruel death. Thus my life maintayned with continuation of fowes and griefes, is perfecket in most miserable wise: now (as you know) I dailye passe my fowre, vnder painefull silence, thinkinge that your olde promises, confirmed with so many othes, and the affured proof which you still haue had of my faith and constancie, would haue brought you to some order, but now feing with mine eyes, the hard metall of your harte, and the crueltie of my fate, which wholie hath subdue mee to your obedience, for respect of mine honour: I am forced to complains of him that beateth me and thereby despoileth mee both of mine honour and life, not vouchsafing onely so much as ones to come vnto mee. And vnscertaine to whom I may make recourfe, or where to finde redresse, I appeale vnto you, to thende that feing in what leane and vglie flate I am, your cruelty maye altogether be satisfied, which beholdinge a fighete so pitifull, wherein the figure of my tormente is liuely expressed, it may be moted to some compassion. Come hither then thou cruel manne, come hither I faye, to visite her whom with some signe of humanitie, thou maiest flaye or at leaft wise mollifie and appeafe the vengeance which shee prepareth for thee: and if ever sparke of pitie did warme thy frofen hart, arme thy selfe with greater crueltie then euer thou was wont to doe, and come hither to make her fobbe her lafte and extreme sighes, whom thou haft wretchedly deceined: for in doing otherwise thou maiest peraduenture to late, bewaile my death and thy beastlye crueltie." And thinking to make a conclusion of her letter, the teares made her woords to die in her mouth, and woulde not suffer her to write any more:
DIDACO AND VIOLENTA.

wherefore she closed and sealed the same, and then calling Ianique vnto her she said: "Holde, gentle Ianique, carye these letters vnto him, and if thou canste so well play thy part as I haue done mine, I hope wee shall haue shortly at our commaundemente him that is the occasion of this my painfull life, more greuous vnto me then a thousand deathes together." Ianique hauing the letter, departed with diligence, and went to the house of the father in lawe of Didaco, where quietly shee waited till shee mighte speake with some of the house, which was within a while after: for one of the seruaunges of Didaco whom she knew right well, wente about certaine his maisters busines, and meeting Ianique was abashèd. Of whom shee demaunded if the Lord Didaco were within, and saide shee she would faine speake with him: but if it were possible she would talke with him secretly. Whereof Didaco aduerited, came forth to her into the fireate, to whom smilingly (hauing made to him a fayne f reverence) she saide: "Senior Didaco, I can neither write nor reade, but I dare laie my life, ther is fute made vnto you by these letters, which Madame Violenta hath sent vnto you. And in deede to say the truth, there is great injurie doen vnto her of your parte, not in respecte of your new mariage: (for I neuer thought that Violenta was a wife meete for you, considering the difference of your estates) but because you wil not vouchsafe to come vnto her, feeming that you make no more accompte of her and speciallye for that you prouide no mariage for her in som other place. And affure your selue she is so farre in louse with you, that she is redie to die as she goeth, in such wife that making her complaint vnto me this day weeping, she saide vnto me: 'Well, for so much then as I cannot haue him to be my husbande, I would to God he would mainteigne me for his frende, and certaine times in the weke to come to fee mee specially in the night, lest he should be espied of the neighbours.' And certainly if you would followe her minde herein, you shall do very well: for the cace standeth thus, you may make your asaunte that you be prouided of so faire a wife, and with so beautifull a frende as any gentleman in Valentia." And then Ianique deliuered him the letter, which he receiued and redde, and hauing well considere the tenor of the same he was incontinently fur-
prised with a sodaine passion: for hatred and pitie, lone and disdain (as within a Cloude be conteined hotte and colde, with many contrary winds) began to combate together, and to vexe his hart with contrary minds, then pawinge vpon anwerc, he said vnto her: "Ianie, my dere frende recommende mee to the good grace and fauour of thy maiftres, and say vnto her, that for this time I will make her no answere, but to morow at fower of the clocke in the morning I will be at her house, and kepe her companie all the daye and nighte, and then I will tell her what I haue doen sithens I departed laft from her, trufling shee shall haue no caufe to be offended with me." And then Ianie taking her leave, returned toward Violeenta, telling her what shee had doen. To whom Violenta anfwere: "Ianie, if thou haft made a good beginninge to our plotted enterprize, I likewise for my part haue not slept. For I haue deuised that wee must prouide for a stroenge roape, which wee will faffen to the beddes fide, and when shee shalbe a fleepe, I will caffe the other ende of the rope to thee, ouerthwart the bedde, that thou maieft plucke the fame with all thy mighte, and before thou beginnest to pull I will with a knife cutte his throate, wherefore thou muste prepare two great kniues, what foeuer they cofl, but I pray thee let me alone with doing of the faéte, that I may dispatche him of his life, which alone did make the first affault to the breach of mine honour." Ianie knew fo well how to prouide for all that was requifite for the execution of their enterprize, as there refted nothing but opportunitie, to fort their cruell purpofe to effect. The knight Sir Didaco, at the houre appointed, tode his new wife that he must go into the countrie, to take order for the state of his land, and that he could not retourne, til the next day in the morning. Which shee by and by beleued: and the better to couer his faéte, he caufed two horfe to be made redie, and rode forth when the clocke frake iii. And when he had ridden through a certain fthreat, he faid to his man, which was wonte to ferve his tourne in loue matters: "Carie my horfe to such a manour in the countrie, and tarrie there all this day, and to morowe morning come fecke mee in suche a place, when I am gone from the house of Violenta. In the meane time set my horfe in some Inne: for in any wife I will haue no
man know that I doe lie there." Which doen the maister and the
feruaunte wente two feuerall wayes. The knight being come to
the house of Violenta, he found Ianique tarying for him, with good
deuocion to vfe him according to his defert, and conueyed him to
the chamber of Violenta, and then she retourned about her
busines. The knighte killed Violenta and bad her good morowe,
asking her how she did? Whom Violenta aunfweared: "Sir
Didaco, you bid me good morrow in words, but in deede you go
about to prepare for me a heuie and forowfull life. I beleuee that
your minde beareth witnes, of the state of my welfare: for you
haue broughte me to fuch extremitie, that you fee right wel how
nothing els but my voice declareth me to be a woman, and there-
withall so feeble a creature, as I fll craue and call for death or
for pitie, although both of thone and of the other, I am not heard
at all: and yet thine f Didaco, that I am fo farre out of my
wittes to beleuee that the caufe of my writing the letter was for
hope, that (you remembring my bitter paines, and your owne
hainous crime) I coulde euer moue you to pitie: for I am per-
fwaded that you wil neuer ceafe to exhauste and fecke the bloud,
honor, and life of them that credite your trumperies and deceiptes,
as nowe by experience I know by my selfe, with fuch deadly
forow that I fll attende and loke for the forowful ende of my
life." Didaco feing her thus afflictect, fearing that her cholere
woulde further inflame, began to cull her, and to take her now
into his armes, telling her that his mariadge with the daughter of
Vigliaracuta, was concluded more by force then his owne will
and minde, because they pretended to haue a gift of all the lande
and goods he had in succedion after his father was dead, which
if they did obtain by law he should be a begger all the dayes of
his life, and that the fame was doen to prouide for the quiet state
of them both, and notwithstanding hee had maried an other wife,
yet hee purpofed to loue none but her, and meant in time to
poifon his wife, and to spend the rest of his life with her. And
thus seeming to remedie his former fault, by furmifed reports,
chauntinge vpon the cordes of his plefaunt tongue, hee thought
with Courtlike allurements, to appease her, which had her wittes
to well sharpened to be twife taken in one trap, howbeit for feare
of driving him away, and to loose the meane to accomplish that which she intended, she said vnto him with forced smiling: "Sir Didaco, although you have so ill used mee in time past, as I have no great cause to beleue your present wordes, yet the loue that I beare you, is so rooted in my harte, as the faulte must be verye great, which shoulde remove the same: in consideration whereof, I will constraine my selfe to beleue that your words be true, vpon condicion that you will sweare and promise to lie with me here ones or twyse a weeke. For me thinke that if I might at times inioye your presence, I should remaine in some part of your grace and favouer, and live the best contented woman a lye." Whereunto hee willingly agreed, with a great number of other like protestations, prompte and redy in them which meane deceit. But in the poore miserable woman had perced the same in the depth of her harte, and had credited all that he spake, no doubt he woulde haue chaunged his minde. Thus either partes spente the daye in cold and diſembled flatteries till darke nighte, with his accustomed silence, did deliver them the meane to exercise their cruell facte. So done as supper was done, Didaco and Viole ante walked vp and downe together, talking of certaine common matters, till the knight (preſfed with flepe) commandèd his bed to be made redie: it neded not then to inquire with what diligence Viole ante and Ianique obeyed his requeste: in whome onely as they thought consisſed the happe, or mishappe of their intent: to whom because Viole ante might shewe her selfe more affeќtionate, went first to bedde, and so done as they were layde, Ianique drewe the curteines and tooke away Didaco his fwoorde, and making as though she had a thing to do vnder the bedde, she fastened the rope and raked vp the fire which was in the chimney, carying a fiole to the beddes side, and layd vpon the same twoo great kechin knives, which done she put out the candle, and, fayning to goe out of the chamber, she shut the dore and went in againe. And then the poore infortunate knight, thinking that he was alone in the chamber with Viole ante, began to clepe and kisshe her, whereunto she made no refusall, but deferiouer to renew his old priuate toyes, she prayed him of al loue that he bare vnto her to kepe truce for twoo or three howeres, for that the
night was long enougb to satysfie his desires, affirming that it was
impossible for her to wake, because five or fiue dayes before by
reason of her grieues, she had not slept at all, notwithstanding, she
saw, that after her first sleepe she would willingly obey him:
wherunto the gentleman was easely perfwaded, afwell because he
hadde els where sufficiently faunche his thirst, as also for that
he was loth to displease her: and faining her selfe to sleepe, she
turned her face to the other side, and in that wyse continued, till
the poore gentleman was fallen into his found sype. Then Ia-
rique softly conueyed the rope ouer his bodye, and gawe it to Vio-
lena, and after she had placed it according to her minde, as they
together had deuised before, she deliuered thende to Ianieue, who
being at the beddes side fatte down vpwn the grounde, and folding
the rope about her armes, hoisted her twoo feete against the bedde
to pull with greater force when nede required. Not long after, Vio-
lena toke one of the great knives, and lifting her selfe vp softlye, she
proud with her hand, to lake a place most meete for her to stabbe
a hole into her enemies flesh. And inchauntwd with wrath, rage
and furie, like another Meadea, thrust the poincte of the knife with
fuche force into his throte as thee perced it through, and the poore
vnhappie man thinking to refitte the same, by gueng some repulcse againft that aduerse and heauie fortune, was appalled, who
feeling a new charge geuen vpon him againe, specially being in-
tricated with the roape, was not able to stature hande nor foot, and
through the excesfiue violence of the paine, his speache and power
to crie, was taken away: in such forte that after he had receiued
tenne or twelue mortall wondes one after an other, his poore
mauried soule departed from his forowfull body. Violenta hauing
ended her determined enterprife, commaunded Ianieue to light the
candle, and approching nere the knightes face, thee fawe by and by
that he was without life. Then not able to satysfie her bloudye
harte, ne yet to quenche her furious rage which boiled in her stom-
acke, she with the poincte of the knife tare out the eyes from his
head, crying out vpon them with hideous voice, as if they had ben
alioe: "Ah traiterous eyes, the messengers of a minde most
villanous that eyeuer seioerned within the bodie of man: come out
of your shamelesse siege for euer, for the spring of your fained
teares is now exhausted and dried vp." Then fhee played the
Bocher vpon those insenfible members, continuing still her rage,
and cruelly feazed vpon the tongue, which with her bloudy handes
she haled out of his mouth, and beholding the fame with a
murderous eie as she was cutting it of, fayd: "Oh abominable
and periured tongue, how many lies diddest thou frame in the
fame, before thou couldeft with the canon shot of this poifoned
member, make breache into my virginitie: whereof now being
depriued by thy meanes, I franckly accelerate my self to death,
wherunto thou prefently haft opened the way." And when fhee
had separated this little member from the refte of the body (infaci-
able of crueltie) with the knife ripped a violent hole into his
flomacke, and launching her cruel handes vpon his harte the tare
it from the place, and gashing the fame with many blowes, she
faid: "Ah, vile hart, harder then the Diamont whole andeuile
forged the unfortunate trappes of these my cruel deftenies! oh
that I could haue discoured thy cogitations in time paff, as I doe
now thy materiall subsance, that I might haue bene preferved
from thine abominable treafon, and detestable infidelitie." Then
fleashing her felfe vpon the dead body, as a hungry lion vpon his
praye, the lefte no parte of him vnwounded: and when fhee had
mangled his bodye all ouer, with an infinite number of gafhes, she
cried out: "O infected carrion, whilom an organ and instru-
mente of the moft vnfaithfull and trayerous minde that euer was
dnder the coape of heaven. Nowe thou art payed with deferte,
worthy of thy merites!" Then fhee fayd to Ianique (whiche
with great terrour, had all this whyle viewed her play this pa-
gant) "Ianique I feele my felfe now fo eafeed of payne that
come death when he will, he shal find me Strong and luftie to in-
dure his furious affault, which of long time I haue affiaed. Helpe
me then to traine this corps out of my father's houfe, wherein I
was firft defloured, then will I tell thee what thou shalt doe: for
like as mine honefte is stayned and published abrode, euin fo
will I the revenge to be manifeffe, crauing that his bodie may be
exponed to the viewe of all men." Whofe requeft Ianique
obeied: and then fhe and Violenta toke the body, and threwe it
out at one of the chamber wyndowes down vpon the paeumen of
therible, with all the partes which she had cut of. That done
she sayd to Ianique: "Take this casket with all the money
within the same, and shippe thy selfe at the next port thou shalt
come to, and get thee ouer into Africa to saue thy life so spedely
as thou canst, and never come into these partes again, nor to any
other wher thou art known." Which Ianique purposd to doe,
although Violenta had not consailed her thereunto: and ready to
departe, she gaue a forowefull farewell to her maiores, and betoke
her selfe to her good fortune: and from that tyme forth, no man
could tell whether she went, for all the perseute made after her. So
faine as daye appeared, the firste that passd by the fireate epied
the dead bodie, whiche by reason of the noisye and brute made
throughout the towne, caused many people to come and see it: but
no man knew what he was, being defguered as well by reason of
the eyes torn out of his head, as for other partes mutilated and
deformed. And about eight of the clocke in the morning, there
was suche a multitude of people assembled, as it was in manner
impossible to come nere it. The most parte thought that some
theues in the nighte had committed that murder: whiche opinion
seemed to be true, because he was in his shurte: other some were
of contrary opinion: and Violenta, whiche was at the wyndowe,
hearing their fundrie opinions came downe and with a bolde
courage and floute voyce, that euery man might heare, sayd:
"Sirs, you do content upon a thing whereof (if I were demaundd
the question of the magistrates of this citie) I am able to render
assured testimonie: and without great difficultie this murder can
not be discouered by any other but by me." Whiche wordes
the people did flote beleue, thinking that divers gentlemen ileous
of Violenta had made a fraye: for she had now loste her auncient
reputacion by meanses of Didaco, who (as the same and common
reporte was bruted) did keepe her. When she had spoken those
wordes, the Judges were incontinently aduertised as well of the
murder as of that whiche Violenta had said, and went thither with
Sergeauntes and Officers, where they founde Violenta, more floute
then any of the standers by: and inquired of her immediatlye
howe that murder came to passe, but shee without feare or appalle-
ment, made this aunswere: "Hee that you see here dead, is the
Lorde Didaco: and because it apperteyneth to many to understand the truth of his death (as his father in lawe, his wife and other kinsmen) I would in their presence, if it please you to cause them to be called hither declare what I knowe." The Magistrates amased to see so great a Lorde so cruelly slayne, committed her to warde til after dinner, and commanded that all the before named should bee summoned to appeare: who assembled in the palace, with suche a number of the people, as the judges could skant haue place: Violenta in the presence of them all, without any rage or passion, first of all recomted vnto them the chaft loue betwene Didaco and her, whiche hee continued the space of fourtene or fiftene monethes, without receiuing any fruite or commoditie thereof. Within a whyle after (he being vanquished with loue) married her secretly at her house, and solemnized the nuptialles by a Priest vnknowne: declaring moreover, how they had liued a yere together in householde, without any occasion of offence, on her part geuen vnto him. Then she rehearsed before them his seconde mariage with the daughter of such a man, being there present, adding for conclusion, that sith he had made her to lose her honeffie, shee had sought meanes to make him to loose his life: which she executed with the helpe of Ianique her mayde: who by her aduife being loth to liue any longer, had drowned her selfe. And after she had declared the true state of the matter, passed betwene them, shee sayd for conclusion, that all that she had rehearsed was not to incite or moue them to pitie or compassion, thereby to prolong her life, whereof shee judged her self vnworthy: "For if you (quoth she) do suffer me to escape your handes, thinking to save my body, you shalbe the caufe and whole ruine of my soule, for with these mine owne handes, which you see before you, I will desperatly cut of the thred of this my life." And with thofe wordes she held her peace: wherat the people amased, and mowed with pitie, let fall the luke warme teares from their dolouroufe eyes and lamented the misfortune of that poore creature: imputing the fault vpon the dead knight, which vnnder colour of marriage had deceiued her. The Magistrates determining further to deliberate vpon the matter, cauied the dead bodie to be buried, and committed Violenta againe to warde,
taking away from her kniues and other weapons, wherewith they thought shee might hurt her selfe. And vfed such diligent search and inquirie, that the Priest which maried them was found out, and the surname of Didaco that was present at the mariage of Violenta, being examined, depoed how by his maiter's com-
maundement he caried his horse into the countrie, and how he commanded him to come to him againe the nexte morning to the house of Violenta. And all things were so well brought to light, as nothing wanted for further inquestigation of the truthe, but onely the confession of him that was dead. And Violenta by the com-
mon opinion of the Judges was condenmpned to be beheaded: not only for that she had presumed to punifhe the knightes tromperie and offence, but for her excessive crueltie doen vpon the dead body. Thus infortuniate Violenta ended her life, her mother and brethren being acquited: and was executed in the presence of the duke of Calabria, the sonne of king Frederic of Aragon: which was that time the Viceroy there, and afterwardes died at Torry in Fraunce: who incontinentely after caufed this historie to be re-
giftred, with other thinges worthy of remembrance, chaunced in his time at Valencia. Bandell doth wryte, that the mayde Janique was put to death with her maitres: but Paludanus a Spaniard, a liue at that time, writeth an excellent
historie in Latine, wherin he certainly declareth that she was neuer apprehended, which opinion
(as most probable) I haue folowed.
THE FORTY-THIRD NOUELL.

Wantones and pleasaunt life being guides of insolencie, doth bring a miserable end to a faire ladie of Thurin, whom a noble man aduanced to high estate: as appereth by this historie, wherein he executeth great crueltie uppon his sayde ladie, taken in adulterie.

The auncient and generall custome of the gentlemen, and gentlewomen of Piedmonte, was daily to abandon famous cities and murmures of common wealthes to retyrre to their Castels in the countrie, and other places of pleasure, of purpose to beguile the troublesome turmoyles of life, with greatest rest and contentation. The troubles and griefes wherof they do feele, that intermedle with businesse of common wealth, which was with great care obserued before the warres had prepofterated the order of auncient gouernement, til which time a harde matter it had ben to finde an idle gentleman in a hole citie. Who rather did refort to their countrie houses with their families, which were so well gouerned and furnisht, that you shoude haue departed so well satisfied and instructed, from a simple gentleman's house as you shoude haue done from a great citie, were it neuer so wel ruled by some wise and prouident Senatour. But fithens the world began to waxe olde, it is come again to very infancie, in suche forte that the greatest number of citie are not peopled in these dayes but with a many of Carpet Squiers, that make their resiance and abode there, not to profite, but to continew their delicate life, and they do not onely corrupt themselues, but (which is worre) they infecte them that kepe them companie, whiche I will discouer somewhat more at large, for so much as the gentlewoman, of whome I describe this historie, was brought vp at the time of her youth, in one of the finest and most delicate cities of Piedmonte. And feeling as yet some sparke of her former bringing vp, she could not be reformed (being in the countrie with her husbande) but that in the ende she fell into great reproche and shame, as you hall vnderstande by the content of that whiche foloweth. In the time that Madame Margaret of Auffriche, daughter of Maximilian the
Emperour, went in progresse into Sauoie, towards her husbande: there was a great Lorde, a valiaunt and courteous gentleman, in a certaine countrie of Piedmonte, whose name I will not disclofe, awell for the reuerence of his nereft kynne, which doe yet liue, as for the immoderat cruell punishement, that he deuifed towards his wife, when he toke her in the fault. This great Lorde, although he had goodly revenues and Caftelles in Piedmonte, yet for the moft parte of his time, he followed the Courte, by commaundement of the Duke, that interteyned him next his owne persone, vning commonly his aduife in all his greateft affaires. This Lorde at that tyme maried a mayden in Thorin, of meane beautie, for his pleasure, not efteming the place from whence shee came. And because he was well nere fiftie yeares of age when he maried her, shee attired her selfe with fuch modeftie, as she was more like a wydow then a maried woman: and knewe fo well how to vfe her husbande, the space of a yere or two, as he thought him selfe the happieft man alioe, that he had founde out fo louing a wyfe. This woman being serued, and reuerenced with great honour, waxed were of to muche rest and quiet, and began to be inamoured of a Gentleman her neighbour, whom in a little tyme she knewe fo well to vfe by lookes, and other wanton toyes, as he did easely perceine it, notwithstanding for the honour of her husband, he would not feme to knowe it, but a farre of. Nowe this warme loue by litle and litle, afterwardes began to grow hot, for the yong woman wareie of fuch long delay, not able to content her self with lookes, vpon a day finding this yong gentleman in convenient place, as he was walking harde by her house, began to reafon with him of termes, and matters of loue: telling hym that he liued to solitarie, in respect of his yong yeares, and howe shee had alwayes bene brought vp in Townes, and places of great companie and reafon, in fuch wyfe as now being in the Countrie, shee could not easely digeste the incommoditie of being a lone, specially for the continuall abstinence of her husbande, who feare three monethes in a yeare remayned at home in his owne house. And fo falling from one matter to another, loue pricked them fo fore, as in fine they opened a waye to that which troubled them fo mutch, and specially the woman: who forgetting her
honor, which ordinarily dothe accompanie great Ladies, priuely she told hym the loue that she had borne hym of long tyme, whiche notwithstanding shee had dissemblwed, wayting when hee should haue geuen the fyrfte onfette, for that Gentlemen ought rather to demaunde, then to be requyred of Ladies. This Gentleman vnderfanding (by halfe a woorde) the cause of her disease, told her: “That although his loue was extreme, neuertheleffe, deming himself vnworthy of so high degree, he stil concealed his grief, which becaufe he thought it coulde not come to paffe, feare forced him to kepe it silent. But fithe it pleased her so much to abafe her selfe, and was disposed to doe him so much honour to accepte him for her feruaunte, he would imploye his indevour, to recompence that with humilitie and humble servyce, whiche fortune had denied hym in other thinges.” And haung framed this foundacion to their loue, for this tyme they vfed no other contentment one of an other but onely deviue. But they so prouyded for their affaires to come, that they neded not to vfe longer oration. For beyng neyghbours, and the husbande manye tymes absent, the hyghe waye was open to bryng their enterpryfes to defired afece. Which they full well acquiected, and yet vn-able wyfely to maifter and gouerne their passions, or to moderate theim felues by good difcretion, the feruauntes of the hous (by reaflon of the frequented communication of the Gentleman with the Gentlewoman) began to suspecke theim, and to conceiue finis-ter opinion of their maiftresse, although none of theim durfte speake of it, or make other semblance of knowledge. Loue holding in full posfeffion the hartes of thefe twoo louers, blynded theim so muche, as leauing the brydle to large for their honour, they vfed theimfelues priuely and a pertlye at all tymes one with an other, without anye reffece. And when vpon a tyme, the Lorde retournd home to his owne hous (from a certayne voyage, wherein he had bene in the Duke’s servyce) he found his wyfe to be more fine and gorgeous then shee was wont to be, whiche in the beginning dyd wonderfully astonne him. And perceiving her sometymes to vetter wanton woorde, and to applie her mynde on other thynge, when he spake vnto her, he began diligentely to ob-ferue her countenaunce and order, and being a man broughte vp
in courtlye trade, and of good experience, hee easly was permwaded that there was some ele vnder that stone, and to come to the trouthe of the matter, hee made a better countenaunce, then he was wonte to doe, which she knewe full well howe to requite and recom pense: and liuing in this simulation, either of them attempted to beguile the other, that the simpest and lest craftie of them both could not be discouered. The yong gentleman, neighbour of the Lord, grieued beyond meaure, for that he was come home, paffed and repaffed many tymes before his Caftell gate, thinking to get some looke of his Ladie's eye: but by any meanes she could not for feare of her hufbande, who was not so foolifhe, that after he sawe him goe before his gate so many tymes, without some occaion, but that he easly iudged there was a secret amitie betwene them. Certaine dayes after, the gentleman to infinuate himselfe into the Lord's fauour, and to haue access to his houfe, fent him a very excellent Tercelet of a Faucon, and at other times he presented him with Venfon, and vmbles of Dere, which he had killed in hunting. But the Lorde (which well knew that flatterie many times serued the torne of diuerfe, to beguile foolifh hufbands of their faire wiues) that he might not feme vngratful, fent him also certain straung things. And these curtesies con tinued so long, that the Lorde deſrous to lay a baite, fent to pray him to come to dyner: to which requefte the other accorded liberally, for the deuocion he had to the fainet of the Caftell. And when the table was taken vp, they went together to walk abroade in the fieldes. And that more frendly to welcome him, he prayed his wife to goe with them, whereunto she made no great deniall. And when they had debated of many things, the Lord faid vnto him: "Neighbour and frende, I am an old man and Melancholie, as you know, wherfore I had neede from henceforth to reioyce my self. I pray you hartely therefore to come hither many tymes, to visit vs and therewithal to participate fuch fare as God doth fend. Vfing the things of my houfe, as they were your owne." Whiche the other gratefully accepted, humblie praying that his Lordfhyp would commaunde him and that he had, when he pleafed, and to commaunde him as his very humble and obedient seruaunt. This Pantere layed, the yong gentleman ordinarily came ones a daye
to visit the Lorde and his wife. So long this pilgrimage continued, 
vntill the Lorde (vpon a time, faining himfelfe to be ficke) com- 
maunded that no man fhould come into his chamber, because all 
the night before he was ill at eafe, and could take no refte. Where- 
of the gentleman was incontinenty aduertifed by an old woman 
hire of purpofe for a common meffenger, of whom a none we 
purpofe to make remembrance. Being come to the Caftell, he 
demaunded how the Lord did, and whether he might go fee him, to 
whom auewer was made, that he could not, for that he was fallen 
into a fomber. Madame now was in the garden alone, roming 
vp and down for her pleafure, and was aduertifed that the Gentle- 
man was come. Who being brought into the gardeine, and cer- 
tified of the Lordes indifposition, began to renew his old daliaunce 
with the Ladie, and to kiffe her many times, eftfones putting his 
hand into her bofome, and vſing other prettie preparatifs of loue, 
which ought not to be permitted but only to the husband. In the 
meane time, while they twoo had ben there a good fpace, the hus- 
band fpelt not, but was departed out of his chamber, the fpace of 
two houres and more, and was gone vp to the highest place of all 
his Caftell, wher at a very little window, he might difcrive al that 
was done, within the compaffe of his house. And there feing al 
their curteous offers and proffers, hee waited but when the gentle- 
man fhould haue indenuored himfelf to procede further, that he 
might haue then difcharged his mortal malice vpon them both. 
But they fearing that their long abode in the gardein might ingen- 
der fome displeaure, returned into the Caftell, with purpofe in 
time to content their defires, fo fone as opportunitie ferved. The 
Lorde noting all the demeanour betwene them, returned to his 
chamber, and fo went againe to his bed, faining to be ficke, as he 
did all the daye before. Supper time come, the lady went to know 
his pleafure, whether he would fup in his chamber or in the hall: 
he anſwered (with a dignified cherefull face) that he began to 
feele himfelfe well, and that he had fpelt quietly fithens dinner, 
and was determined to fuppe beneth, fending that night for the 
gentleman, to beare him compagnie at supper: and could fo well 
difemble his iust anger, as neither his wife, nor the Gentleman per-
ceued it by any meanes. And fo the Lorde with his Lady still
continued, the space of fifteen days, or three weeks, making so much of her (as though it had been the first month that he married her) in such a forte, as when the poor miserable woman thought to have gotten victory over her husband and friend, it was the hour that fortune did weave the toyle and nette to intrappe her. The Lorde which no longer could abide this mischief, driven into an extreme choler, seeing that he was able to finde no meanes to take them (himselfe being at home) deliberated either none to die or to provide for the matter: and the better to execute his determination, he counterfaite a letter from the Duke of Sauoie, and bare it secretly to the post him selfe alone, and commannde him next daye to bring it to his Caftell, whereby he faine that the Duke had sent the same vnto him. Which matter the post did handle so well, as he brought the letter, when he was at supper, with botes on his legges all durtie and raied, as though he were newly lighted from his horse. And the better to maintain his wife in her error, after he had reade the letter, he gaue it to her to reade: which contained no other thing but that the Duke commaunded him presently with all diligence, himselfe and his traine to come vnto him, to be dispatched vpon ambaßage into Fraunce. That doen he faide vnto her: "Wife, you see how I am contrayned to depart with speede (to my great grief) bid my men therfore to be ready in the morning, that they may go before and wyte for me at Thurin, where my Lord the Duke is at this present. I my selfe will parte from hence to morow at night after supper, and will ride in post in the frese of the night." And the better to deceiue this poore vnhappy woman, he went into his Clofet, and took his caftette, wherein was the moste parte of his treasure, and delivering the same vnto her, sayde: "That fearing lefte he shoude tarie long in Fraunce, he would leave the same with her to help her when she wanted." And after all this traine was gone, he caused one of the yeomen of his chamber to tary beyonde, whose fidelitie he had at other times proud: and all that daye he ceased not to cherishe and make much of his wyfe. But the poore foule did not forsee, that they were the flatteries of the Crocodile, which reioyseth when he seeth one deceiued. When he had supped, he made a particular remembrance to his wife how the affairs of his house should be disposed in his absence; and
then toke his lease, givynge her a Judas kiffe. The lorde vnethes
had ridden twoo or thre miles, but that his wyf was fent the
olde woman to carye worde to her lourer, of the departure of her
husband, and that he might faufly come and lie with her in the
castell, for that all the seruauntes were ridden forth with their
maister, fauing one yeoman and her twoo maydes, whiche doe
doeuer ye to lie in her chamber. Vpon this glad newes the Gentle-
man thought no scorne to appeare vppon that warning, and the
old woman knew the way fo well, as she brought him ftraight
into the ladies chamber, whom loue inuegled in fuch wyfe, as they
lay together in the bedde where the lorde was wont to lye. And
the olde woman laye in an other bed in that chamber, and shut
the dore within. But while these twoo poore passionat loosers
thought they had attayned the toppe of all felicitie, and had
injoyed with full faile the favours of the litle God Cupide, Fortune
desirous to departe them, for the laft meffe of the feaft prepared
fo bitter Comfettes, as it cost them both their lues, with fuch cruell
death, as if they which make profefion of femblable things doe
take example, wyues will get them better names, and husbands
falbe leffe deceuied. The Lorde that night made no longer
tracte of time, but lighted from his horfe, at the keper of one
of his Caftles house, whom he knewe to be faythfull. To whome
in the presence of the yeoman of his chamber, he discouerfed the
loue betwene the gentleman and his wyfe, and commaunded
them with all fpede to arme themselues, and with a cafe of pifto-
lets to follow him, whom they obeyed. And beyng come to the
Caftell gate he faide to the keper of his caftell: "Knocke at the
gate, and fayne thy felfe to be alone, and faye that I paffing by
thy houfe did leaue a remembraunce with thee, to cary to my
ladie. And becaufc it is a matter of imporantas, and requireth
haft, thou were compelled to bring it this night." Knocking at the
gate somewhat foftely (for feare left they whiche were in the
chambers shold heare) a yeoman rofe whiche laye in the courte,
knowing the voyce of the keper (becauyc he was one, whome his
lorde and maister dyd greatly fanour) opened the gate, and the
fire thynge they did, they lyghted a torche, and vnete vp all three
to the Lordes chamber, not sufferyng anye man to cary newes to
the Ladie, of theyr approche. Being come to the chamber doore,
I quarter " forthwith, but preferre " vnfaithfull, thered fayle be I caflell, deteftable wife, example maunded by Lorde and the prefently So bande refte they the what could a fimple, of when the chamber the kept, (giuing her a blow with his foote vpon the stomacke) threwe her backward, where she laie more then a quarter of an houre, without speaking or mouing. And then they three entring the chamber in great rage, with their piftolets in their handes, found the two miferable louers flarke naked, who feing them felves furpryfed in that flate, were fo fore afhamed as Eve and Adam were, when their finne was manifested before God. And not knowing what to doe, repofed their refuge in lamenting and teares, but at the verie fame inftaunt, they bounde the armes and legges together, of the poore gentleman with the chollers of their horfe, which they brought with them of purpofe. And then the Lorde com­maundd that the twoo maydes, which were in the Caftell, and the refle of the feruantes, should be called to affiffe them, to take example of that faire fight. And all the meane people being gathered in this fort together, the lorde tourniing him self vnto his wife, faied vnto her: "Come hither thou vnfhamefaft, vile, and deteftable whore, like as thou haft had a harte fo traiterous and vnfaithfull, to bring this infamous ruffian in the night into my caftell, not only to robbe and dipfoide me of mine honour, which I preferre and efteme more then life: but alfo (whiche is more to be abhorred) to infringe and breake for euer, the holy and precious bande of mariage, wherewithall wee be vnited and knit together. So will I forthwith, that with these thyne owne handes, with whiche thou gaueft me the firfte testimonie of thy faith, that he presently shalbe hanged and fhalled in the prefence of all menne,
not knowing howe to devise anye other greater punishmente, to satisifie thyne offence, then to force thee to murder hym, whom thou hafte preferred before thy reputation, above myne honour, and esteemd more then thine owne life." And hauing pronounced this fatall judgement, he sent one to seeke for a greata naile of a Carte, which he cauased to be fastened to the beame of the chamber, and a ladder to be fetched, and then made her to tie a Coller of the order belonging to theewe and malefaictours, about the necke of her forowfull louver. And because she alone was not able to do that greuous and waightie charge, hee ordanyned that like as the olde woman had bin a faithfull minister of his wiuue's loue, so shee should put her hand in performing the vttermoost of that worke. And so these two wretched women, were by that meanes forced to suche extremitie, as with their owne handes, they strangled the infortunate Gentleman: with whose death the Lord not yet satisfiued, cauased the bedde, the clothes, and other furnitures (wherupon they had taken their pleasures past) to be burned. He commanded the other vtensiles of the chamber to be taken away, not suffring so much straw, as would serue the couche of two dogges, to be left vnconsumed. Then he said to his wife: "Thou wicked woman, amonge al other most detestable: for so much as thou haft had no respecte to that houourable state, whereunto fortune hath advaunted thee, being made by my meanes of a simple damosell, a greata Ladie, and because thou haft preferred the laucilious acquaintance of one of my subiects, before the chaft loue, that thou oughtest to haue borne me: my determination is, that from henceforth thou shalt kepe continuall company with him, to the vttermoost day of thy life: becaufe his putrified carcasse hath giuen occasion to ende thy wretched body." And then hee cauased all the windowes and doores to be murred, and closed vp in suche wyse, as it was impossible for her to go oue, leaung onely a little hole open, to giue her bread and water: appointing his Steward to the charge thereof. And so this poore miserable woman, remained in the mercie of that obfcure and darke prifon, without any other company, then the deade body of her louver. And when shee had continued a certaine space in that stinking Dongeon, without aire or comfort, overcome with sorrow and extreme paine, she yielded her soule to God.
THE FORTY-FOURTH NOUELL.

The loue of Alerane of Saxone, and of Adelasia the daughter of the Emperour Otho the thirde of that name. Their flight and departure into Italie, and how they were known againe, and what noble houses of Italie descended of their race.

The auncient hiftories of Princes (as wel vnder the name of kinge, as of the title of Duke, which in time past did gouerne the Countrie of Saxone) do reporte that Otho the feconde of that name, which was the firt Emperour that lawfullye raigned (after the Empe- rire ceafted in the stock of Charles the great) had of his wife Matilde daughter of the king of Saxone, one fonne which fucceeded him in the Imperial crowne, called Otho the third, who for his vertuous education and gentle disposition, acquired of all men the surname of The loue of the world. The fame Emperour was curteous and mercifull, and never (to any man's knowledge) gaue occasion of griefe to any perfon, he did good to euery man, and hurt none: likewife he thought that kingdome to be well gotten, and gotten to be better kept, where the king, Prince or Ruler therof, did studie and feekne to be beloued, rather then feared, fith loue ingen-dreth in it selfe a defire of obedience in the people. And contrary wife, that Prince which by tyrannie maketh himself to be feared, liueth not one houre at rest, haung his conscience tormented indifference, both with fufpition and feare, thinking til that a thoufand swords be hanging ouer his head, to kill and deffroye him. Otho then vnder his name of Emperour, couered his clemencie with a certaine sweete granite and Princely behaviour. Who notwithstanding declared an outward shew of curtefie, to make sweete the egrenes of displeasure, which they feele and tafte that be subiect to the obeyfaunce of any new Monarchie. Man being of his owne nature so louing of himfelfe, that an immoderate libertie feemeth vnto him sweeter, more iuft and indurable, than autho- rities rightly ordained, the establishment whereof feemeth to repre- fente the onely government of that firt kinge, which from his high throne, giueth being and mouing to al things. That good
Emperour then knowinge verye well the mallice of men, who although he was a good man of warre, hardye of his hands, and desirous of glorie, yet moderated so well the happie successe of his enterprises, as his grace and gentlenes principally appeared, when he had the upper hand, for that he cherished and well vsed those whom he had subdued vnder his obedience: his force and felicitie was declared when he corrected and chastised rebells, and obstinate persons, which wilfully would prove the greate force of a Prince of armes luftly displeased, and to others what favoure a king could vsende towards them, whom he knew to be loyal and faultfull: giving cause of repentaunce to them which at other times had done him displeasure. And to say the truth, he mighte be placed in the ranke of the moft happie princes that euer were, if the priuate affaires of his owne houshe had so happily succeeded, as the renowne which hee wanne in the science of warfare, and in the administration of the common wealth. But nothing being stable in the life of man, this emperour had in him, that which diminished the glorie of his wifedome, and (resembling an Octauius Augustus) the unhappie successe of his owne houshe did somewhat obscure the fame of his noble factes, and those inolent doinges ferued vnto him as a counterpoyse to prosperous fortune, which maye be eafely perceived, by the progresse and continuation of this historie. This good Prince had one daughter, in whom nature had distributed her giftes in such wife, as shee alone might haue vaunted her selfe to attaine the perfection of all them, which euer had any thing, worthy of admiration, were it in the singularitie of beauty, favoure and courtesie, or in her disposition and good bringing vp. The name of this fayre Princeff was Adelasie. And when this Ladie was very young, one of the children of the Duke of Saxone, came to the Emperour's seruice, whose kinsman he was. This yong Prince, besides that he was one of the fayrefte and comliest gentlemen of Almaigne, had therewithall, together with knowledge of armes, a passinge skil in good sciences, which mitigated in him the fericitie both of his warlike knowledge, and of the nature of his countrey. His name was Alerane, who seing himselfe the youngest of his houshe, and his inheritance very small, indenoued to conciliate every man's favoure and good will, to remoue his owne fortune, and
to bring himselfe in esteemtion with the Emperour, wherein all things hee imployed so well his induerour, as through his worthines he wanne commendation and report, to be the most valiaunte and stoutest gentleman in all the Emperour’s Court, which praise did greatly commend the tendernes of his yong yeares, and was therewithall so sober, and of so gentle spirite, that although he excelled his companions in all things, yet he auoyded caufe of offence (shewing himselfe familiar amongst all the Courtiers.) Every man (which is a great matter) praided him and loued him, and he thought himself most happie, that by any means could fashion himselfe to imitate the vertue that made Alerane’s name so renowned. And that which made him fuller of admiracion, and brought him into fauour with his Lord and maister was, that vpon a day the Emperour being in hunting alone in the middes of a launde, and in a desert place, it chaunced that a Beare iffuinge out of her caue, was affayled of Hunters: the fierce beaste, auoyding the toyles and flyinge the purfute of the dogges, came with greate vehemencie and speede from a mountaine, and was vpon the Emperour or he was ware, separated from his companie and without his sword. But Alerane by good fortune was at hand, who more careful for the safetie of his Prince than for his owne life, encountred the beare, and killed him in the prescence of the Emperour and many other. All which beholding (to their great astonishmente) the dexteritie and hardines of Alerane at those small yeares, (for then hee was not aboue the age of xviri.) the Emperour imbracing him, did highly commend him, tellinge them that were by, that his life was saued chiefly by God’s affiftaunce, and nexte by the prowesse of Alerane. The newes hereof was so bruted abroade, as there was no talke but of the valiaunce and stoutenes of this yong man of warre, which caused fair Adelasie (moued by naturall instigation, and with the opinion and reporte of the vertue toward in that yonge Prince) to feele a certaine thing (I cannot tell what) in her minde, which inflamed her fenfes and hart. And she had no sooner caft her eyes vpon Alerane, but loue, which had prepared the ambushe, fo pearfed her delicate breaste, as he toke full possession of her: in such wyse as the Princeffe was so straunge-lye in loue wyth the yonge Prince, that she never founde pleasure
and contentment but in that which was done or said by her lover, whom she accompted the chiefe of all the men of his time. In this burning heat, she felt the passions of love so vehement, and his pricks so sharpe, that she could not evaporate the clouds which darkened her spirites and continually tormented her minde. And albeit that the little occasion, which she saw, for their comminge together in time to come, did difswade her from pursuuing the thing which she most desired: yet the tyrant love shewed himself very extreame in that diuerfitie of thoughts, and variety of troubles which vexed the spirite of the Princeffe: for shee could not so well dissemble that, which honour and age commanded her to keepe secrete, but that Alerane which was (as we haue alreadie said) well expert and subtile, perceived the inwarde disease of Adelafia. Moreover there was betweene them a naturall conformity and likelyhode of conditions, which made them to agree in equall desires, to fee'de of like meates, their passionate mindes were martir'd with equall forowe and paine, departed as wel in the one as in the other. For Alerane by taking careful heede to the looks which the Princeffe continually did stealingly cast vpon him, saw the often and sodaine chaunces of colour, wherein sometymes appeared ioye, which by and by did ende with infinite number of sighes, and with a countenance agreeable to that, which the hart kept secrete and couert, whereby he assured himselfe unfainedly to be beloved, which caus'd him to do no lesse (for satisfaction of such like merite and desert done by Adelafia) but to beare vnto her like affection, forcinge her by all diligence and seruice to continue still that good will toward him, yielding himselfe a pray to the selfe fame love. Who ruling th'affections of the Princeffe, (as braue and pleasant as she was) made her forowfull and penitif, and altered her in such wise as she thought the companie wherein she was did impeach her ioy, which companie she imagined to conceiue the like pleasure that she did, when at libertie and alone shee revolued her troubles, and fansied her contentious in her minde. Alerane on the other fide flept not, but as though he had receiued the first wound by the handes of the blinde little archer Cupide, cafl'd not to thincke of her, whose image ordinairelye appeared before his eyes, as engrauen more liuely in his minde than anye
forme may be insculped vpon mettall or marble. And yet neither the one nor the other, suftrie discouer the leaft passion of a greate nomber which oppreffed their besieged hartes, and which suffered not to liue in anye refte this faire couple of loyall louers. The eyes alone did thoffice of the handes and tongue, as truffie secretaries, and faithful messengers of the effects of the minde. That which kindled the fier moft, was their frequente talke togethers, which was but of common matters, without vtteraunce of that which the hart knewe well enough, and whereof the eyes gau true testimonie. A passion truly moft intollerable for a yonge Princesse, as well because she neuer had experience of semblable forowes, as for her tender age, and yet more for a naturall abafhmente and shame, which with the vaile of honor doth ferue, or ought to ferue for a bridle, to every Ladie couetous' of fame, or like to be the ornament or beauty of her race. Adelafia then floting in the tempeftuous sea of her appetites, guided by a maifter which delighteth in the shipwracke of them he carieth, vanquished with an immoderate rage of loue, tormented with grief vnpeakeable, offended with her owne desires, beinge alone in her chamber, began to complaine her forowes, and faide: "Ah, what passion is it that is vnownen vnto me, that ingendreth an obliuion of that which was wont to delight and contente me? From whence commeth this new alteration, and defire vnaccustomed, for solitarie being alone, is the reste and argumente of my troubles? What diuerfities and chaunges be thefe that in this forte do poife and weigh my thought? Ah, Adelafia, what happie miferie doft thou finde in this free prifon, where pleafure hath no place till the enemies haue disquieted the life, with a Million of painefull and daungeroz trauailes? What is this to fay, but that against the nature of maidens of my yeres I will not, or cannot be quiet day nor night, but take my repaft and feeding vpon cares and thoughtes? Alacke, I thought then to finihe my forowes and griefes, when (being alone) I began to frame the plot of my tormentes and paines, with fo many formes and deuifes in my fanfie, as I do make wifes and requestes vpon the thing I loue and esteeme aboue all, vpon which all mine affections do depende and take their beginning. What is this to faye, but that my maydes do offende mee, when with
discrete wordes they go about to diuert me from my follies and pleasaunt noysome thoughtes? Wherefore shoule not I take in good part the care which they haue of my health, and the paine which they take to remember me of my torment? Alas, they know not wherein consisteth the force of mine euil, and much lesse is it in their power to remedie the same. Euen so I would haue none other plaister but him that hath giuen me the wound, nor none other meate but the hunger that drieth me vp, I craue none other comfort but the fire which burneth mee continually, the force wherof pearceth the sucke and marie within my bones. Ah Alerane, Alerane, the flooure and mirror of all prowesse and beautie: it is thou alone that liueffe in mee, of whom my minde conceyveth his hope, and the hart his nourishment. Alas: that thy worthines should be the ouerthrow of mine honour, and thy perfection the improperition of my life. Ah Loue, Loue, how diversely thou dealest with me. For seing mine Alerane, I am attached with heate in the middes of ife that is full colde. In thinking of him, I do both rest and travaile continually. Nowe I flee from him, and sodainly againe I desire him. In hearing him speake, the fuger and honie, that diisilileth from his mouth, is the contentemente of my minde, till such time as his words appeare to be different from my desyre. For then, ah Lord: my rest is converted into extreme travaile, thy honye into gall, and wormewoode more bitter than bitternes it selye, the hope of my minde is become dispayre so horrible, as the same onely wil breede vnto me, (if God haue not pittie vpon me) a short recource of death." After these wordes, shee rested a longe time without speaking, her armes a crosse, and her eyes eleuate on highe, which ranne downe like a Ryuer of teares, and seemed to be so rafished, as a man would haue judged her rather a thing withoute life, than a creature sensibille, and labouring for life, till, recovering her spirites againe, as comming from an extasie and founde, she beganne her plaintes againe in this fort: "What? muft fuch a Princeffe as I am, abase my selfe to loue her owne subiect, yea and her kinsman, and specially not knowing yet how his minde is disposed? Shall I be so vnshamefaft, and voyde of reason, to surrender my selfe to anye other but to him, whom God and fortune hath promis'd to be my espoufe? Rather death shall
cut of the threde of my yeres, than I wil contaminate my chastitie, or that any other enjoy the flour of my virginitie, than he to whom I shal be tied in mariage. Ah: I say and promis much, but there is a tormenter in my minde which dealth so rigorously with my reason, as I cannot tel wherupon wel to determine. I dare not thincke (which also I ought not to do) that Alerane is so foolish to despise the love of one, that is the chiefeste of the daughteres of the greatest Monarches of the world, and much less that hee should forget himselfe, in such wife to forfake mee, hauing once enjoyed the best and dearest thing that is in mee, and whereof I meane to make him the onelye and peaceable possessor. Truly the vertue, gentlenes, and good nuriture of Alerane, doe not promise suche treason in him, and that great beautie of his, cannot tell how to hyde suche rigor as hee will refuse one that is no deformed and ill favoured creature, and which loueth him with suche sinceritie, as wher she shall lose the meanes to enjoy him, there shee shall feele, evene forthwith, the miserable ende of her sorrowfull dayes."

And then againe she helde her peace, tossed and turmoiled with divers thoughtes fleetinge betwene hope and feare: by and by she purposed to deface from her hart the memorie of Loue, which alreadie had taken to faste footing, and would not be separated from the thing, which heauen himselfe seemed to have prepared, for the perfection and glory of his triumphe. Loue then constrainned her, to resolute vppon her laste determination. Then continuinge her talke, fighing without ceasing, she said: "Chaunce what may to the uttermost, I can but wander like a Vagabonde and fugitiue with mine owne Alerane (if hee will shew me so much pleasure to accept mee for his own): for sure I am, the Emperour wil neuer abide the mariage, which I haue promised: and sooner will I die, than another shal possesse that which Alerane alone deserueth: hauinge a long time vowed and dedicated the same vnto him. And afterwards let the vulgar fort blabbe what they liste of the bolde and foolish enterprises of Adelasia, when my harte is contented and desire satisfied, and Alerane enjoyeth her that loueth him more than her selfe. Loue verily is not liable to the fancie of the parentes, nor yet to the will euens of them that subjugate themselues to his lawes. And besides that I shal not
be alone amongst Princeffes, that haue forfaken parentes and countries, to follow their love into strange regions. Faire Helena the Greeke, did not she abandon Menelaus her husbande and the rich citie of Sparta, to follow the faire Troian, Alexander falling to Troie? Phedria and Ariadne, despised the delicats of Creta, left her father a very old man, to go with the Cecropian Thefeus. None forced Medea the wife furious lady (but love) to departe the ile of Colchos, her owne native countrey, wyth the Argonaute Iafon. O good God, who can reftif the force of love, to whom so many kinges, so many Monarches, so many wise men of al ages haue done their homage? Surely the same is the onely caufe that compelleth me (in makinge my selfe bolde) to forget my dutie towards my parentes, and specially mine honour, which I shall leave to be reasoned vpon by the ignoraunt which confidereth nothing but that which is exteriorly offered to the viewe of the sighte. Ah: how much I deceiue my selfe, and make a reckeninge of much without mine hofe: and what know I if Alerane (although hee do love me) will loofe the good grace of the Empour, and forfacke his goods, and (fo it maye bee) to hazard his life, to take so poore and miferable a woman as I am? Notwithstanding I wil prove fortune, death is the worst that can chaunce, which I wil accelerate rather than my desire shal loufe his effecte." Thus the fayre and wife Princeffe concluded her vnhappie flate: and all this time her best frende Alerane, remained in greate affliction, and felt such fear as cannot be expresse with wordes, onely true louers know the force, altogether like to that whereof the yong Prince had experience, and durft not discouer his euill to her, that was able to guie him her allegaunce, much leffe to difclofe it to any deare frende of his, into whose secrecie he was wont to committ the moft parte of his cares, which was the caufe that made him feele his hart to burne like a little fier in the middes of a cleare riuuer, and saw him selfe ouerwhelmed within the waters, hotter than thofe that be intermixed with Sulphure, and do evaporate and fende forth ardente smokes in an Æthna hill or Vefuue mountains. The Princeffe impacient to endure so long, could no longer keepe secrete the flames hidden within her, without telling and utteringe them to some, whom her minde liked best, and there to
render them when she thought they take their offense and beinge, casting away all shame and fear, which accustomed doth associat Ladies of her estate and age. One day, she toke secretly aside, one that was her gouernesse named Radegonde, a gentlewoman, so vertuous, wife and fober, as anye other that was in the Emperour's Court, who for her approved manners and chaste life, had the charge of the bringing yppe and nourishing of Adelasia, from her infancie. To this gentlewoman then the amorous princesse deliberat to communicate her secretes, and to let her understande her passion, that shee might find some remeide. And for that purpose they two retired alone within a closet, the poore louer tremblinge like a leaf (at the blaste of the western winde, when the Sunne beginneth to spread his beames) sighinge so strangely, as if her bodye and soule would have departed, said thus: "The trust which euer I haue found in that naturall goodnes that appeareth to be in you, my mother and welbeloued Ladie, joyned with discretion and fidelitie, wherwith all your actes and affayres be recommended, do presently affure me, and make me bolde in this my trouble, to participate vnto you my secretes, which be of greater importance without comparison, than anye that euer I tolde you, periwading my selfe that the thing which I shall tell you, whatsoeuer it be (be it good or ill) you will accept it in suche wyse, as your wyfedome requireth, and to keepe it so close as the secretes of such a Ladie as I am doth deserre. And that I maye not holde you longe in doubte what it is, know ye, that of late the valor, proweste, beautye, and curtse, of Senior Alerane of Saxon, hath founde such place in my heart, as (in despite of my self) I am so in love with him, that my life is not deare vnto me but for his sake, my hart taketh no pleasure but in his glorie and vertue, hauing choosen him so vertuous a Prince for my frend, and one day (by God's sufferaunce) for my lawfull spouse and husband. I haue affaid a thousand meanes, and so many wise, to cast him of and to blot him out of my remembrance: but, alas! unhappie caytise, fortune is so froward and so vnmercifull to my endeouer, as the more I labour and go about to extinguishe in me, the memorie of his name and commendable vertues, so much the more I do enlarge and augmente them, the flames of which love do take
such increafe, as I do little or nothinge esteme my life without the 
enioyinge the effecte of my desire, and the taste of suche licour, 
which nourishing my hope in pleasure, may quench the fier that 
doeth consume me; otherwife I see no meanes possible but that I 
am conraayned, either to lose my good wittes (whereof already I 
feele some alienation) or to ende my dayes with extreme anguifhe, 
and insupportable hartes forowe. Alas, I know well that I shall 
loose my time, if I attempt to pray the Emperour my father to 
give me Alerane to husbande, Sith he doth already practive a ma-
riage betwene the king of Hungarie and me: and alfo that Alerane 
(although he be a Prince of so noble bloud and honourable house, 
as the Saxon is) yet he is to bafe to be fonne in lawe to an Empe-
rouer. In these my diftrefes, it is of you alone, of whom I looke 
for ayde and counfaile, beinge certaine of your prudence and good 
judgement: and therefore I pray you to haue pitie vpon mee, and 
haue remorfe vpon this immoderate paftion that doth tormente 
mee beyonde meafure.” Radegonde hearing Adelafia disclofe this 
talke, wherof she would nouer haue thought, was fo confounded 
and aftroned, that of long time she could not speake a word, 
holding her head downe, reuelinge a thousand divers matters in 
her minde, knewe not well what to aunfwer the Princeffe. Finally 
gatheringe her spirites vnto her, shee aunfwered her with teares 
in her eyes, sauing: “Alas, madame, what is that you faye? Is it 
possible that the wifeft, vertuous, and moft curteous Princeffe of 
Europa could suffer herfelfe in this fort (through her onely aduife) 
to be tranfported to her owne affections and fenfuall appetites? 
Is it well done that you feing in me, a diferetion and modeftie, doe 
not imitate the purtie thereof? Be thefe the godly admonicions 
which heretofore I have giuen you, that you will fo lightly defile 
your father’s house with the blot of infamie, and your felf with 
eternal reproch? Would you, Madame, that vpon the ende of my 
yeares I should begin to betraye my Lord the Emperour, who hath 
committed to my hands the moft precious iewell of his house? 
Shal I be fo vnconfant in mine old dayes to become an vnname-
faft minifter of your fonde and foolifhe loue, a thing which I 
neuer did in the ardent time of youth? Alas, madame, forget I 
befeech you this foolifh order, cast vnder your feete this determi-
nation wickedly begonne, such as to the blemisshinge of the honourable brightnes of your fame, maye cause the ruine of vs all. Follow the counsell of your deare nourice Radegonde, whoe loueth you better than her owne soule. Quench these noisome and parchinge flames which haue kindled, and thrown forth their sparkes into your chaffe and tender harte. Take heede, I befeech you, that a vaine hope doe not deceiue you, and a foolish desire abuse you. Alas, thincke that it is the parte of a fage and prudente minde, to refraine the first motions of euerye passion, and to refite the rage that riseth in our wills, and the same very oft by succession of time, bringeth to it selfe to late and noysome repentance. This your thought procedeth not of loue: for hee that thincketh to suflain himselfe with venim fugred with that drogue, in the ende he feeth himselfe fo desperately impoyfoned, as onely death is the remedie for suche disease: a louer truly may be called the flau of a tyrant most violent, cruel, and bloudie that may be found, whose yoke once put on, can not be put of, but with painful sorrowe and vnspakeable displeasure. Do you not know Madame, that loue and follie be two paffions fo like one an other, that they engender like effectes in the minds of those that do possesse them: in such wise as the affection of the paciente cannot be concealed? Alas, what shall become of you and him that you loue so well, if the Empeour do know and perceiue your light and fond determinations. Shew Madame, for God's sake, what you be. Let the ripe fruits of your prudence so long time tilled, appeare abrode to the world: expell from you this vnruled loue, which if you suffer frankly to enter into your hart, affure your selfe he wil take such holdeaste of the place, that when you thincke to extrude the enemie out, it is he that will drue away that small portion of force and reason that resteth in you: and then the comfort of your miseries, wil be the lamentation of your losses, and a folowing repentance for that which cannot be by any meanes recovered." Adefasia burning in loue and fretting with anger, not able to abide contrarie replie to her minde, began to loke furiouslie vpon the Ladie that gave her suche holome admonicen, to whom she said with more than womanly stoutnes, these words: "And what are you, good gentiewoman, that dare so hardly pre-
scribe lawes to Loue that is not subiect or tied vnsto the fantaisie of men? Who hath giuen you commissio[n] to take the matter so hote against that I have determined to doe, say you what you can? No, no, I loue Alerane and wil loue him whatfoever come of it: and if I can haue none other helpe at your handes, or meete counsell for mine eafe and comfort: be assured that I will endeauour to finde it in my selfe: and likewise to prouide so well as I can for mine affaires, that eschewing the alliaunce which the Emperour prepareth, I will liue at hartes eafe with him, whom (in vaine) you go about to put out of my remembranace: and if to be I chaunce to fayle of my purpofe, I have a medicine for my calamities which is death, the lafte refuge of all miſeries: which will be right pleafaunt vnsto me, ending my life, in the contemplation and memorie of the sincer and perfecte loue that I beare to mine Alerane." Radegonde no leffe abafhed, than surprised with feare, hearinge the resolution of the Princeffe, could not at the firt make any aunfwere, but to make her recourfe to teares, the moſt familiar weapons that women haue. Then feing by the countenaunces of Adelafia, that the passion had fet in feote to deepe for any to attempt to plucke oute the rootes, from that time forth shee wiped her eyes, not without euident demonstration (for all that) of her great grieue conceyued, with infinite fighes, turning her face to the Ladie, shee faid to her with pleafaunter countenaunce than before: "Madame, fith your mishap is such as withoute Alerane you cannot bee quiet or pacified in minde, appeafe your plaintes, wipe awaye your teares, shew your countenaunce joyful, and fetting afide all care, put on good corage, and repofe in mee all your anguishe and trouble. For I doe promife you and fware by the fayth that I do owe you Madame, come whatfoever fhall vnsto me, I will deuife in pra[c]ticing your refl to beginne mine owne forow. And then you fhall fee how much I am your frend, and that the words which I haue spoken do not procee[de] els where, but from the desire that I haue to doe you fervice, seeking al wayes poſsible your advauement." Adelafia at thefe laſt words felt fuch a motion in her minde, as much a doe she had for the exceeding great joy and pleafure she conceiued, to ftaie her soule from leapinge forth of that corporall
prison (like the spirit of that Romaine Ladie which once lefte the bodye to descend into the Elifien fields, to vs the perfection of her ioy with the blessed soules there, when she saw her sonne retorne safe and founde from the battaile of Thrastmene besides the lake of Perufe, where the Confull Flaminius was overcomne by Hanniball): but in the ende, the hope to haue that which Radegonde had promised, made her to receive hart againe, and to clepe her counseler, sayinge: "God forbid, deare mother, that the thing you do for me should rebound to your mishap or discontentmente, fithe the affection which you haue confissteth in the onely pitie and conferuation of a poore afflicted maiden. And your desire tendeth to the deliuerance of the most passionate Princeffe that euer was borne of mother: and beleuee that fortune will bee so fauourable, that what mishiefe eoeuer chaunce, you remayninge without paine, I shal be shee that alone shall beare the penaunce: wherefore once againe I befeech you, (sayd shee embracinge Radegonde) to bringe that to passe whereof you glie asfured hope." "Care not you Madame," sayde Radegonde "I trufte within a while to make you proue the effecte of my promife: and will cause you to speake vnto hym whom you desir be suche: onely be meere and forgette these strange fashions, in tormentinge your selfe so muche before your maides, to the intente that, which hither to hath bin kepte secrete, maye not be reweyled to your great shame and hinderaunce, and to the uttre ruine and ouerthrow of me." During all this time, Alerane liued in despaire, and hardly cowardise, for although he saw the amorous geshes of Adelafia, yet he durft fixe no certain judgement of his owne satisfacion, although his harte tolde him, that he was her onely fauoured friend, and promised him that, which almoost he feared to thinke, which he was to haue her one day for friend, if the name of spouse were refused. Thus tormented with ioye and difleafure, wandering betwene doubt and assurance of that he hoped, the selfe fame daye that Adelafia practifed with Radegonde, for the obtaining of her ioye, and secrete ministerie of her loue, he entred alone into a garden, into whiche the Princeffe chamber had prospect, and after he had walked there a good space in an Alley, viewing diligently the order of the fruitful trees of so
divers fortes, as there be varietie of colours, within a faire meade, during the verdure of the spring time, and of so good and favourours taste as the harte of man could wyhte: he repaired vnder a Laurel tree so well spred and adorned with leaues, about which tree you might have seene an infinite number of Myrtle trees of smell odoriferous and sweete, of Oringe trees laden with vniripe fruit, of pliable Maickes and tender Tamerikes: and there he fetched his walkes a long the thycke and greene herbes, beholding the varietie of florues, whiche decked and beautified the place, with their lively and naturall colours. He then rauished in this contemplation, remembrring her which was the pleafure and torment of his minde, in fighing wife began to faye: “O that the heauens be not propitious and fauourable to my iudgours: fithe that in the middes of my iolities, I fele a new pleafant difpleafure, which doth adnihilate all other folace, but that which I receive through the Image painted in my harte, of that divine beautie, which is more varieted in perfection of pleafures, than this paradise and delicious place, in varietie of enamel and painting, although that nature and art of man, haue workemanlye travailed to declare and fet forth their knowledge and diligence.

Ah, Adelasia, the fairest Lady of al faire and most excellent Princeffe of the earth: is it not possiblle for me to fee deede so well of the vieue and contemplation of thy heauenly and angelicall face, as I doe of the fight of these faire and sundry coloured florues? may it not be brought to paffe that I may smell that sweet breath which respireth through thy delicate mouth, being none other thing than Baulme, Muke, and aumbre, yea and that which is more precious, and for the raritie and valour hath no name, even as I do smell the Roses, Pincks, and Violets, hanging ouer my head, frankly offering them selfes into my handes? Ah, infortunate Alerane, there is no floure that ought to be so handled, nor fauor, the sweetnesse whereof ought not to bee fented without desert merited before. Ah! Loue, Loue, that thou haft fixed my minde vpon so high things: alas I feare an offence so daungerous, which in the ende will breede my death: and yet I can not withdrawe my harte from that fincke of Loue, although I would force my selfe to expell it from me: alas, I haue red of him so many times, and
haue heard talke of his force, as I am afraide to boorde him, and yet feare I shall not ecape his gulfe. Alas, I knowe well it is he, of whom is engendred a little mirth and laughing, after whiche doth followe a thousand teares and weapinges, which for a pleasure that paffeth away so fone as the whirlewinde, doth giue vs ouer to great repentance, the forowe whereof endureth a long time, and sometimes his bitterneffe accompanieth vs euon to the graue. The pacientes that be taintd with that amorous feuer, although continually they dye, yet they can not wholly fee and perceiue the default and lacke of their life, albeit they do wyfhe and defire it still. But, alas, what mifhap is this that I doe fee the poyson whiche caufeth my mifchiefe, and doe knowe the waie to remedye the same, and yet newertheless I can not or will not recouer the helpe: did euery man heare a thing so straunge as a sicke man feking helpe and fynding recouerie, shoulde yet reiecte it?" Saying so, he wepte and fyghed so piteously as a little chylde threatted by his mother the nourice. Then roming vp and downe vppon the grasse, he seemed rather to be a man straught and bounde with chaines, than like one that had his wittes and vnderstanding. Afterwardes being come againe to himfelfe, hee returned to his first talke, saying: "But what? am I more wyfe, more constant and perfecte, than so many Emperours, kynges, Princes, and greate lordes, who notwithstanding their force, wifedome, or riches, haue bene tributarie to loue? The tamer and subduer of monsters and tyrants, Hercules (vanquished by the fnares of loue), did not he handle the distaffe in stead of his mightie mace? The strong and invincible Achilles, was not he sacrificd to the shadowe of Hector vnder the colour of loue, to celebrate holy mariage with Polixena, daughter to king Priamus? The great dictator Iulius Cæsar, the Conquerour of so many people, Armies, Captaines, and Kings, was ouercome with the beautie and good grace of Cleopatra, Queene of Egypt. Augustus his succesour, attired lyke a woman, by a yoeman of his chamber, did he not take away Liuia from him that was first maried vnto her? and that common enemy of man and of all curtesie, Claudius Nero, appeased yet some of his furie for the loue of his Ladie? What straunge things did the learned, wyfe, and vertuous Monarche Marcus Aurelius inde of his
well beloved Faustine? and that great Captain Marcus Antonius
the very terror of the Romaine people and the feare of straung
and barbarous nations did homage to the child Cupido for the
beautie of Queen Cleopatra, which afterwaerdes was the cause of
his utter overthrow. But what meane I to allledge and remember
the number of louers, being so infinite as they be? Wherefore have
the poete in time past fained in their learned and deuine booke
the loues of Jupiter, Apollo, and Mars, but that euery man may
knowe the force of loue to be so puiiflaunt as the Gods them-
selues have felt his force to be inuincible and inevitabile? Ah: if
sometimes a gentleman be excused for abaffing himself to loue a
woman of base birth and bloud, why should I bee accused or
 apprehended for louing the daughter of the chiefest Prince of
Europe? Is it for the greatnesse of her house and antiquitie of her
race? Why, that is all one betwene vs twoo, and toke his original
of the place, whereof at this daye, my father is the chief and prin-
cipall. And admitte that Adelasia be the daughter of an empe-
rour: ah, loue hath no regarde to perfeftions, houfes, or riches, rather
is he of greater commendation whose enterpryfes are moift famous
and haute geftes extende their flight farre of. Now resteth then
to devife meanes how to make her understand my payne: for I
am assured that she loueth me, fauing that her honour and yong
yeres doe let her to make it appeare more manifeft: but it is my
propre dutie to make requeste for the fame, confidering her merites
and my small defertes in respect of her perfeftions. Ah: Alerane,
thou must vnlofe the tongue which so long time hath been tied vp,
through to much fonde and faerful flame. Set aside the feare of
perill, whatfoeuer it be, for thou canst not employe thy selfe more
gloriously than upon the pursiut of suche a treasur that semeth
to be referred for the fame of thy mind so highly placed, which
can not attaine greater perfeftions, except the heauens do frame
in their impressions a second Adelasia (of whom I think dame
nature her selfe hath broken the moulde) who can not shake of
Alerane from the chiefest place, in whom he hath laid the foun-
dation of his ioye that he hopeth to finde in Loue." During these
complaintes, Radegonde, that sawe him rauiished in that extasie,
coniecuturing the caufe of his being alone, caufed him to be called
by a page: who hearing that, was surprisfd with a new feare intermixt with a secrete pleasure, knowing very well, that she being the gouernesse of his lady, vnderftode the greatest priuities of her harte, hoping also that she brought him gladfome newes, and setting a good chere vpon his face all mated and confused for troubles past, hee repayred to the lady messanger, who was no lesse ashamed, for the tale that she muft tell, than he was afeard and dombe, by fight of her whom he thought did bring the areste and determination, either of ioye or of dipleasure. After curtesie and welcoms done betwene them, the lady preambled a certayne short discourse touching the matter, to do the Saxone Prince to vnderstande the good will and harty loue of Adelasia towarde him, praying him that the same might not be discouered, Sith the honor of his lady did confifie in the secrecie thereof, affuring him, that he was fo in fauour with the Princeffe as any true and faithfull louver could defire to be for his content. I leaue to your consideracion, in what sodayne ioye Alerane was, hearing suche gladfome newes whiche he loked not for, and thought he was not able to render sufficient thankes to the messanger, and much lesse to extolle the beautie and curtesie of his Lady, who without any of his merites done before, (as he thought) had him in fo good remembrancc. Befeching moreouer Radegonde, that she would in his name do humble commendations to his Lady, and therewith to confirme her in the afurance of his perfect good will, and immutabile desife, everlaftingly at her commandement, onely praying her that he might faye vnto Adelasia three wordes in secrete, to thintent shee might perceiue his harte, and see the affection wherewith he defiere to obey her al the daies of his life. The messanger assurred him of al that he required, and instructed him what he had to doe for the accomplishe ment of that he loked for, which was, that the next day at night she would cause him to come into her warderobe, which was adioyning to the Chamber of his Lady, to the ende that when her maydes were a bed, he might repair to the place where he might eafely vifite his maiftrefse, and fay vnto her what he thought good. The compact thus made, the Lady returned to the Princeffe, that wayted with good deuotion for the newes of her beloued. And hearing the reporte of Radegonde,
fhee was not contente that she should make repeticion of the same, twise or thrice but a Million of times and euen till nighte, that she slept vpon that thought with the greatest rest, that she had receiued in long time before. The morrowe at the houre that Alerane shoule doubt, Adelafia faying her self to be ill at eafe, caused her maydes to goe to bed, making her alone to tarie with her that was the meffanger of her lone, who a little while after went to seeke Alerane, which was a building of Caffels in the ayre, fantasfying a thoufand deuises in his minde: what might befall of that enterprife he went about: notwithstanding he was fo blinded in folly, as without meafuring the fault which he committed, he thought vpon nothing but vpon the prefent pleafure, which femed to him fo great as the chambre wherein hee was, feemed not sufficient to comprehend the glory of his good houre. But the Princeffe on the other part, felle a maruellous troublle in her minde, and almofte repented that she had fo hardely made Alerane to come into a place vndecent for her honour, and at a time fo inconuenient. Howbeit feing that the stone was thrown, fhee purpofed not to pretermitte the occafion, which being balfe can not eafefully been gotten againe if she once let flip. And whiles the trauelled in these meditations and discoursed vpon that fhee had to doe, Radegonde came in, leading Alerane by the hande, whom fhee prefented to the Princeffe, faying to her with a verie good grace: "Madame, I deliuer you this pryfoner, whom euen nowe I founde here, betwene your chambre and that wherein your maydes lye: now confider what you haue to doe." Alerane in the meane tyme, was fallen downe vpon his knees before his fainct, wholly bent to contemplate her excellent beautie and good grace, which made him as dumbe as an Image. Shee lykewyfe beholding hym that made her thus to erre in her honeftie, forced through shame and loue, could not forbeare to beholde him, the power of her mynde wholy transferred into her eyes, that then yielded contentation of her harte whiche fhee fo long defired. In the ende Alerane holding the handes of Adelafia many tymes did kiffe them, then receiuing courage, he brake of that long silence and began to faye thus: "I neuer thought (madame) that the fight of a thing fo long defired, had bene of fuch effect, as it
would have rauished both the mynde and bodye of their propre duties and naturall actions, if nowe I had not proued it in beholding the diuinitie of your beautie moste excellent. And truely madame Radegonde dyd rightely terme this place here, my pryfon, considering that of long tyme I haue partly lofte this my libertie, of the whiche I feele nowe an intire alienation: of one thing sure I am, that being your pryfoner as I am in deede, I may make my vaunt and boaste, that I am lodged in the fairest and pleasauntest pryfon that a man can wyfe and defire. For which cauе Madame, be wel aduised how you do vse and entreate your captive and flawe, that humbly maketh petition vnto you, to haue pitie vpon his weakenesse, which he will accept as a grace vnspakeable, if of your accustomed goodnesse it may please you to receive him for your owne, for that henceforth bee voweth and confecrateth his life, goodes, and honour, to your commandemente and seruice.” And saying so, his flamke panted with continuall fighes and from his eyes distilled a ryuer of teares, the better to expresse and declare the secrect force, that made hym to vte these woordes. Which was the cause that Adelafia embrasing hym very louingly made aunfwere thus: “I knowe not (Lorde Alerane) what pryfon that is, where the prifoner is in better cafe, than the pryfon of whom he termeth himselfe to be the flawe, considering that I fele in me such a losse of my felfe, as I can not tell whether to go, or where to retire, but euon to him that craueth the fame fredome, whereof I my felfe doe make requesse. Alas, my welbeloued Alerane, into what extremity am I brought: the very great loue that I beare you, forceth me to forget my dutie, and the ligneage wherof I come, yea and mine honor, which is more to bee estemed than all the refte. But I repose in you such affiance, as you will not deceiue so simple a Ladie as I am, vterrorly voyde of guyle and deceit. Who, if you be tormented, liueth not without grieue and forrowe altogether like vnto yours. If you doe fighe, I am wholly spent and confumed in teares. Do you defire refte? Alas: I wifhe and craue the fame vnto vs both, that be now sundred and deuided, whiche can not be aquired except they be united which before were wholly separatet.” Radegonde interrupting their talke, smilingly said: “And how
can this separation be combined, where the parties them felues do liue in such disfunctions?" "You say true, madame," faide Alerane, "for the perfection of vertue consisteth in the knitting of that which is separated. Wherfore madame (fayd he to Adelasía) I humbly befech you, awfel for your comfort as my reft, not to suffer this diuision to be to long, fith the outward bound shall combine the fame fo inwardly, as very death shall not bee able hereafter to deface or diminish the fame." "If I may affure my felfe," fayde she, "of your fidelitie, it fo may come to paffe, as I wold giue you a very great libertie, but hearing tell fo many times of the inconstancie and fickle truft of men, I will be contented with my first fault, without adding any further aggrauation, to faften and binde that, which I do specially esteeme." "Alas, madame," fayd Alerane, "doe you thinke that the prouf of my fidelitie may receive greater perfection, by enjoying the pleafure, that I hope for than it doth already? No, no, madame, and therefore be fure of my harte and ftedfaftneffe: for foner shall my body fayle, than defaulte in me to ferve and honor you, if not according to the worthineffe of your estate, yet by al meanes, fo farre as my power shal firetch. And can you finde in your hart to conceive, that your Alerane would play the traitour with her, for whose service he feareth not to adventure a thousand liues if God had geuen him fo many?" Adelasía be fprent all with teares, was in an extafty or traunce. Which Alerane perceiuing and faw that Radegonde was gone into the warderobe, to fuffer them to talke their fill, he began to take poffeifion of her mouthe, redoubling kiffe vpon kiffe, sometimes washed with teares, sometime dried vp, with frequent vfe thereof, leaving neither eye nor cheke vnkiffe: and feing the pacience of his Ladye, he feased vpon her white, harde, and round breathes, whose pappes with fighes moued and remoued, yielding a certaine defire of Alerane to paffe further. Which Adelasía perceiuing, difembling a swete anger and fuch a chafe as did rather accende the flames of the amorous Prince, than with moiffe licour extinguifhe the fame, and making him to geue ouer the enterprie, fhe fiercely fayd unto him: "How now, (Sir Alerane) how dare you thus malapertly abuse this my fecret frendfhip, in suffering you to come fo frankly into my chamber. Thinke not that although I
Alerane and Adelasia.

269

haue vfed you thus familiarly, that I can be able to suffer you to attempt any further: for (if God be fauourable to conferue me in my right wittes) neuer man shal haue that aduaunage to gather the floure of my virginitie, but he with whom I shal be ioyned in mariage. Otherwyfe I shal bee unworthy, bothe of my honourable state, and alfo of that man what foever he be, worthy of estimation and preferrement." "So I thynke to Madame," aunswered Alerane: for if it woulde pleafe you to doe me that honour, to receiue me for your fauithfull and loyall espoufe, I sweare vnto you by him that feeth and heareth all thynges, that neuer any other shal bee maiftresse of Alerane's harte, but the fayre Princeffe Adelasie." She that asked no better, after mutche talke betwene them, in the ende confedenced that Alerane shoulde geue his faith to marrie her, and to conuey her out of the Courte, till the Emperour were appeased for their committed fault. Thus had the Saxon Prince, the full poffeffion of his desires, and carried away the pray fo long time fought for. Radegonde was she, that receiued the othes of their espoufalles, and capitulated the articles of their secrete marrige. And after the determination made of their flying awaye, and a daye thereunto appointed, the two louers entred the campe, to make proufe by combate of their hardinesse and aßayfe of their traauyle in time to come, wherein they thought for euer to perfeuere and continue. Beyng a bedde then together, they did confumate the bande that strayghtly doth bynde the harte of louers together, intiring the vnion diuided, whiche before they thought imperfect and could not be accomplifhed but by inward affections of the minde. And God knoweth howe this new married couple vfed their mutuall contentation: but sure it is, that they continued together vntil the morning had vncouered from the night her darkenes, even to the point of day, that Alerane was somoned by Radegonde to depart, who to conclude his former ioye, very louingly kisef his newe wife, and fayd vnto her: "Madame, the felicitie that I fele nowe, by enjoying that which vniteth me fo nerely being indiffoluble and neuer hereafter to be broken, femeth fo great that no perill whatfoever doth happen, can make me forget the leaft part of my ioye. So it is that feing the flate of our preuent affaires, and fearing the daunger that may chaunce, I will for this time take my leaue of you,
and goe about to put the fame in order, that no negligence may
flacke your ioye and defired pleasure." "Ah, sir," (faith he)
"that my harte forethinketh both the beft and worffe of our in-
tended enterprife. But to the intent we may proove our fortune, by
whole conduction we must passe, I doe submitte my felfe to the
wifedome of your mynde, and to the good successe that hetherto
hath accompanied all your indeuours." And then they kissed
and embraced again, drinking vp one another's teares, which dis-
tilled from them in fuch aboundaunce. Thus Alerane departed
from his Ladies chamber, and went home to his owne houfe, where
he solde all his goodes at small price, making men to vnderstand,
that he would employ the money otherwife in things whereof he
hoped to recover greater gaine. With that money he bought pre-
cious stones, and pretie Iewels, that he might not be burdened with
carriage of to much gold, or other money, and then he put his males
and bougets in readinesse to go with his wife, either of them in the
habite and apparell of pilgrimes, faire and softly a foot, that they
might not be discouered: which was done in the night. The Prin-
cesse faining her felfe to be fiscke, made her maydes to withdrawe
themfelues into their chamber, and then she went into the garden
where Alerane firft made his plaintes, as you have heard before:
in whiche place her hufbande taried for her. God knoweth whe-
ther they renewed their pastime begun the daye of their mariage,
butfearing to be taken, they began to playe the comedie, the actes
whereof were very long, and the scrolle of their miseries to prolix
to carie, before they came to the cataftrope and ende of their co-
micall action. For leaning their sumptuous and riche apparell,
they clothed themselues with pilgrims attire, taking the skallop
shell and staffe, like to them that make their pilgrimage to S. Iames
in Gallifia. The Princesse toke the perfonage of a yong wench,
ruffling her heare whiche she had in time past so carefully kempt,
curled, and trimmed with gold and Iewels of infellimable value,
wherein confifteth the chiefeft grace of the beautie and ornament
of the woman. Who is able to deny, but that this naturall humour
and passion, borne fo fone as we, whiche they call Loue, is not a
certayne effence and being, the force and vigor whereof, not able
to abide comparifon? Is it no small matter, that by the only
infinction of loue's force, the daughter of fo great a Prince, as
the Emperour of the Romaines was, shoulde wander like a vagabonde in disemmbled tire, and poorely cladde, to experiment and proue the long travaile of journeyes, the intemperature of the ayre, the hazarde to meete with so many theeues and murderers, which wayte in all places for poore passengers, and moreover, to feele the bitterneffe of travayle, neuer tafted before, the rage of hunger, the intollerable alteration of thirst, the heate of hotte Sommer, the coldeneffe of wynter’s yce, subiecef to rainses, and stormy blasts: doth it not plainely demonstrate that loue hath either a greater perfection, than other paffions, or els that they which feele that alteration, be out of the number of reasonable men, endued with the brightneffe of that noble qualitie. This fayre Lady recovering the fields with her husband, with determination to take their flight into Italie, was more ioyfull, frewe, and lufty, than when she liued at eafe amonges the delicates and pleasures, which she tafted in her father’s court. See howe fortune and loue are content to be blinde, closing vp the eyes of them, that followe their trace, and subdue themselues to their edictes, and vnstable difpositions. And truely this rage of loue was the only meane to dulcorete and make fweete the bitter gal of griefe whereof those twoo louers felte, defatigated almofte with tedious travaile, judgning their wearineffe a pastime and pleasure, being guided by that vnconstantate captaine, whiche maketh dolts and fooles wyfe men, emboldeneth the weake hearted and cowardes, fortiseth the feeble, and to be shorte, vntieth the pursues and bagges of couetous Carles and miserable Mifers. Nowe whyles our faire pilgrimes, without any vowed denocion, were abrode at their pleasures (beyng wery with the waye they had traueyled all nighte) the morowe after their departure, all the Emperour’s house was in a great hurly burly and frirre for the absence of Aderasia. The wayting maydes cried out, and raged without measure, with such shrichinges, that the Emperour moued with pitie, although his griefe and anger was great, yet he cauased euery place there aboutes to be searched and fought, but all that labour was in vaine. In the ende, perceiving the absence of Alerane, suspefed that it was he that had stolen away his fayre daughter, whiche he brought him into such paffion and frenzie, as he was like to runne out of his wyttes and
tranfgreme the bondes of reafon. "Ah, traytour," sayd the good Prince, "is this the guerdon of good turnes, bestowed vpon thee, and of the honour thou haft receiued in my company? Do not thinke to escape scot free thus without the rigorous iustice of a father, defuered by disobedience, and of a Prince, againft whom his subie& hath committed villany. If God geue me lyfe, I wyll take fuch order, as the pofteritie fhall take example by that iuſte vengeaunce whiche I hope to take of thee (arrant thee, and de-fooyler of my honor and conflation.) And thou vnkynde daughter fhalte fmarlely feele the wrong done to thy kynde, and wellybowed father, who thought to prouide for thee, more honourably than thy diſloyaltye and incontinentie, fo farre as I fee, doe merite and de-ferue, fythe that without my leave, and refpe& of thy vocation, thou haft gotten thee a husband worthy of thy folly, with whom I hope to make thee vnderftand thy fault, and my difpleaſure whiche I receive through thy shamefull acte, fo reprochfull, fpe-cially in her which is the daughter of fuch a father as I am, de-scended of the moſte royall race within the circuit of Europe." Many other things the Emperour sayd, in great rage and furie: and in thend commanded, that one fhould go into Saxone, to knowe if Alerane had conueied his ftole daughter thither; but he could bring no newes at all from thence. He affaied then if he could learne any tidinges of them by other meanes, cauſing by sound of Trumpet to be cried in all the townes confining that if any perfone could bring him worde, or do him to vnnderstande certaine and sure newes of thofe twoo fugitives, he would geue them that, wherewith they fhould be contented all the daies of their life. But he wan fo much by this thirde ferche, as he did by the firſte twoo. Whiche thing the Maieſtie of God, femed to permit anduffer as wel for the happie succeſſe that chaunced afterwardes, as for the punishing of the raſhe enterprife of two louers, whiche liued not very long in prosperitie and ioy, but that they felte the hande of God, who sometime suffereth the faithfull to fall, to make him acknowledge his imbeſillitie, to the ende he may confeſſe, that all health, furnaence, refte, and comfort, is to be attended and looked for at the handes of God. When Alerane and his Lady were gone out of a citie with in the Emperour's lande called Hifpoure
being come into a certaine wilde and desert place, they fell into
the lapye of certaine theues, whiche strippid Alerane into his shirte,
and had done as mutch to the poore princesse, if certaine Mar-
chauntes had not come betwene, which forced the theues to flye.
Alerane was succoured with some clothes to couer his bodie, and
releued with a little summe of money, which being spent, those
twoo kinges children were constrained to begge, and ake for God's
fake relieve to sustaine their infortuniate life. Whiche distress was
so difficulte for Alerane to digge, as he was like (standing vpon his feete) to die for sorowe and want, not so mutch for the
aduerstie whereunto he was brought through his owne fault, as
the pitie that he toke vpon his deare beloued Lady, whom he fawe
in so lamentable state, and knew that she might attaine her aun-
cient dignitie and honour againe, if she lifted to preferre rewarde
or prize before his life, for which she spared not the very laft drop
of her bloud. She knowing the dolor and angui fie that her hus-
band endured, comforted him very wifely with joyfull counte-
naunce, sayinge: "Howe now, deare husband, thinke you that for-
tune is or ought to be still fauourable to Princes and greate Lordes?
Do you not knowe that great bulkes and shippes do foner perifie
and drowne in maine seas and riveres amiddes the raging waues and
surges, than in narrow floudes and brookes, where the water is
still and calme? Doe you not see great trees, whose toppes doe
rife aloft, above high hilles and stepe mountaines, foner shaken
and toffed with blustering windie blastes, than those that be plant-
ed, in fertile dales and low valleis? Haue you forgotten so many
histories, by you perused and read with so great delight, when you
were in the Emperour's Court? Doe not they describe the chaunce of
Monarchs, the ruine of houfes, the deftruction of one realme ac-
quired, by the establishing and raigne of an other? What Prince,
Monarch or Captaine was euer so happy, as hath not felt some
grieue and mifffortune?: Alas, sweete heart, thinke that God doth
chaftife vs with his roddes of tribulation, to make vs to know
him: but in the meane time, he kepeth for vs a better fortune
that wee looke not for. Moreover he neuer forfaketh them
which with a good heart do go vnto him, hauing their affiance
in his great goodnesse and infinite mercie." Alerane hearing the
wife talke of his wife, could not forbear weeping, and fighing aun-
wered her in this maner: "Ah, Lady, in beautie and wifedom in-
comparablie, it is not the preuent fortune that caufeth my minde
to wander and ftraye from the fiege of conftantie, knowing well
the qualities and number of fortune's fnares, and how ielous she is
of humaine ioye and felicitie. I am not ignorant that she layeth
her ambushes, and doeth befe the endeouors, foner of perfonages
that bee noble and of highe parentage, than of thofe whole hearts
be base and vnoble, and their victories not able to attain any iote
of honour and fame. But, good God, (faide he, embracing his
dear beloved fhouette) it is for you, madame, that I endure tor-
mente, hauing made you to abandon the pompe of your eftate,
and bereued from you a king to be your hufband, caufing you
thus to feele an horrible and new kinde of punifhmente, hunger and
famine (I meane) in the middes of the deferts and wilde places,
and therewithall hauing ioyned you in companie with an infornate
felowhippe, who in stead of comfort and folace, miniftreth teares
and fighes. O God, moft high and puiffant, howe profonde and
darke are thy iudgementes, and howe righteous is thy iuflice. I
acknowledge mine offence to be the caufe of thyne anger, and the
originall of our trespaflfe, and that thi faine chaunceth to vs for
our finnes, which haue fo wickedly betrayed the beft Prince of
the world, and forfaken the companie of him, at whose bountifull
handes I haué receiued better entertainement and greater honour,
than I deferued. Ah, Emperor Otho, that thou art fo well re-
vended nowe, with cowardly fraude and deceipt committed againft
thee by Alerane of Saxone, taking away her from thee, which was
the staffe and future fwayne of thy reuerend age." And as he was
perfeuering in this talke, Adelafia (feeing him in that contempla-
ion) plucked him by the arme, faying: "Sir, it is time to con-
fider our owne affaires: we haue trauailed I can not tell howe farre
without reft, me think (our fortune being no better) that we ought
to remaine in fome place attending for the grace and mercy of
God, who (I hope) wil not forfake vs. They were then in Ligui-
r ia in the defarts, betweene Aft and Sauonne, a countrie in
that time well peopled, and furnifhes with huge and darke
forefetes, garnifhes with many trees, great and highe. By the
aduise then of Adelafia, the Saxone Prince forced by necessitie (the maiestrefe of all arte) retired into those fores where he practisde the occupation of a Collier, and some said that nature taught him the order howe to cutte his woode, to make readie his pittes, and to knowe the season and tyme when his coales were burned enough. Great paines he suftaineed about his busynesse, and went himself to fell his coales, which he bare vpon his shouldres, to the next market townes, tyll he had gayned so mutche as bought him an affe, wherewith he dayly travailed to vitter his coales, and other deuises which neede had forced him to leare. In this time Adelafia was delivered of a goodly child, whom they named William. And afterwards, by succesion of time, the bare fixe fonnes more. For they dwelt almoft xviii. or xx. yeares in that poore and miferable life, and had dress’d vp a little lodging within a caue, that was faire and brode, wherein verye trimly and well they had bestowed themselues. When the eldest of their fonnes was grown to the stature of a pretie stripling, the father sent him sometyme to Sauonner, and sometyme to Afl, to sell their little merchandize, for reliefe of their houshold. But the boy, whose bloud could not conceale and hide the nobilitie of his birth, hauing one day feld certaine burdens and loads of woode and coale: bought with that money a faire yong hauke, which he caried vnto his father. The good man gently rebuked his sonne, and saide, that suche game belonged not to men of their degree, and that they had muche a do to line, without employing their money vpon such trifles. Long time after, William being arrived to the age of xvi yeares, went to Sauonner, to sell certaine ware by his father’s commandement, and with the money he bought a very fayre sword, which when his father saw, with teares in his eyes, he went aside and said to himselfe: “Ah vnfortunate ladde, that thy hard lucke should do thee this great wrong: truely neither the povertie of thy parents, nor the place of thy bringinge vp, can deface in thee the secrete shining brightnes of thine auncetors vertue, nor the prediction of thy courage and manhode in time to come, if God giue the grace to aduaunce thee, to the seruice of some noble Prince.” Notwithstanding for that time he ceass’d not sharply to rebuke and threaten his sonne, in such wye as the yong man hauing a
harte greater than his force, determined secretely to depart from his parentes. Now fortune chaunced so wel and apt for his purpose as then and at the verye fame time, the Hongarians were entred Italye to spoile and robbe the countrie, against whom the Empe- rour marched in greate expedicion, with an huge and goodly armie, of purpose to force them to leaue his lande in peace. William hauinge knowledge hereof, proceeded toward the Emperour's campe, where hee shewed in deede great hope (being of so fmal yeares) of his future valiaunce and prowefle, by the deedes of armes that hee did, during that warre. Which ended and the enemie put to flighte, the Emperour wente into Prouance, to put in order his affaires in his realme of Arles, which then was subie{c}te to the Em- pire. Afterwards he retired into Italy with deliberation to feiorne at Sauonne for a certaine time, which displeased William nothing at all, because he should remaine harde by his parentes, who were very carefull for his well doing, vttuely ignoraunt where he was become. And notwithstanding a hope (what I knowe not) made them expec{t} of their sonne som good fortune in time to come, who was now grown great and of goodly perfe{c}tion, one of the mo{f}t valiaunte fouldiours that were in the wages and servise of his Maie{f}tie. Which very brauely he declared in a combate, that he fought man to man with an Almaine fouldiour, that was hardy, big made, and feared of all men, whom neuerthele{f}e he overcame in the presence of the Emperor his grandfather. Who, I know not by what natural inclination, daily fixt his eye vpon that yong champion, and began to bear him more good will than anye other in his courte, which was an occasio{n}, that an auncient gentleman, serving in the Princes Courte, stedfa{f}ly beholding the face, behavioure and countenaunce of William, seemed to see a picture of the Empe- rour when he was of his age, which was more exac{t}lye viewed by diuers other, that were broughte vp in their youth with Otho. Wherof being aduertisef{d}, he cauze{d} the yong man to be called forth, of whom he demanded the names of his parentes, and the place where hee was borne. William that was no le{f}t curteous, humble and welmanered, than wise, valiant and hardie, kneeled before the Emperour with a foute countenaunce, resemblinge the nobilitie of his auncestours, an{swer}ed: "Mo{f}t sacred and re-
nownmed Emperour, I haue nothinge whereof to render thanckes to fortune, but for the honour that your Maiestie hath done vnto me, to receiue mee into your noble service. For the fortune and condition of my parentes, be so base, that I bluhte for shame to declare them vnto you. Howbeit being your humble seruaunte, and hauing receiued favour of your maiestie, not commonly employed, your commaundement to tell you what I am, I will accomplish as well for my bounden dutie, wherewith I am tied to your maiestie, and to satifie that which it pleaseth you to commaund me. Be it known therefore vnto your maiestie, that I am the fonne of two poore Almaines, who flying their owne countrie, withdrew themselues into the defarts of Sauonne, where (to beguile their hard fortune) they make coals, and sel them, to sustaine and relieue their miserable life: In which exercise I spent all my childhod, although it were to my great forowe. For my hart thought (Sir) that a state so vile, was vnworthy of my coragious minde, which dailye aspired to greater things, and leaving my father and mother, I am come to your seruice, to learne chialtry and vs of armes, and (mine obedience fauended to your maiestie) to find a way to ilustrate the base and obscure education, wherein my parents haue brought me vp." The Emperour feinge the courteous behauour of the yonge man, by this wife aunswere, remembring the similitude of his face, which almoft resembled them both, suspected that he was the sonne of Alerane and his daughter Adelasia, whose for feare to be knownen, made themselves citizens of those deserts, albeit that William had told him other names, and not the proper appellations of his father and mother. For which cause his hart began to throbbe, and felt a desire to see his daughter, and to cherishe her with like affection, as though he had euuer conceiued offence and displeasure. He caused then to be called vnto him a gentleman, the nere kinsmanne of Alerane, to whom he said with merie countenaunce and joyful cheere: "You do know as I thincke, the wrong and displeasure that your cosin Alerane hath done me, by the rape and robberie committed vpon the person of my daughter: you are not ignoraunt also of the reproch wherewith he hath defiled all your house, committed a felonie so abominable in my courte, and againste mine owne person, which am his fo-
ueraigne Lorde. Notwithstanding, sith it is the force of Loue, that made me forget him till this time, rather than desire of displeasure, I am very defirous to see him, and to accepte him for my sonne in lawe, and good kinsman, verye willing to aduaunce him to that estate in my house, which his degree and bloud do deserve. I tell you not this without speciall purpose. For this yonge souliour, which this daye so valiantely and with such dexteritie vanquished hys aduerfary, by the contente of all men, which haue knowne me from my youth, doth reprefente so well my figure and lineaments of face, which I had when I was of his age, as I am perfuaded, and do stedfaftly beleue, that he is my newe, the sonne of your cofn Alerane and my daughter Adelasia. And therefore I will haue you to goe with this yonge man, into the place where hee shall bring you, and to see them that be his parents, because I purpofe to do them good, if they be other than those whom I take them. But if they be those two that I so greatly desire to see, doe mee so much pleure as I may fatifie my hart with that contentation, swearing vnto you by the crowne of my Empire, that I will do no worfe to them, nor otherwise vie them, than mine own proper perfon." The gentleman hearing the louing and gentle tearmes of the Emperour, faide vnto him: "Ah, Sir, I render humble thankes vnto your maiestie, for the pitie that you haue, vpon our dishonor" race and lineage of Saxone, dedecorated and blemished through Alerane's trepasse against you. I pray to God to recompence it (we being vnable) and to giue you the ioye that you desire, and to mee the grace that I may do some agreeable seruice both in this and in all other things. I am readie (Sir) not onely to go seeke my cofn (if it be he that you thinke it is) to carie vnto him those beneficiall newes which your maiestie hath promified by word, but rather to render him into your hands, that you may take requengement vpon him for the inuiere that he hath done to the whole Empire." "No, no," said the Emperour, "the desired time of requenge is past, and my mallice against Alerane hath vomited his gall. If in time past I haue thirsted to pursue the ruine and ouerthrowe of those two offenders, nowe I goe about to forfee and seeke their aduauncement and quiet, concerning the longe penaunce they haue taken for their fault, and
the fruite that I see before mine eyes, which is such that it maye
by the smell and fragrant odour thereof, supporte the weaknesse
and debilitie of my olde yeares, and constraineth mee (by the ver-
tue thereof) to haue pittie vpon his parents, which (through their
owne overthrowe) haue almost utterly consumed me.” Those
words ended the good Prince gauue euident testimonie of desire to
see his onely daughter, by the liuely colour that rofe in his face,
and by certaine teares running downe along his hoare and frothic
beard. Then he caufed William to come before him, and com-
manded him to conduct the gentleman to that part of the forest
where his father dwelled. Whereunto the yonge man readily
and with all his harte obeyed. Thus the Lorde Gunforde (for so
was Alerane’s cofin called) accompanied with his litle cofin, and
manye other gentlemen, went toward the place, wher the collier
princes remained. And when they were neere the cragge caue,
the lodging of Alerane, the whole companie lighted of their horfe,
and espied him bufe about the lading of his coales to tende to
Aft. For the arriuall of the Emperour to Sauonne, staied Alerane
from going thither himelfe, by reafon his conscience still grudged
for his fault committed against him. Alerane feing this goodly
companie, was abashed, as though hornes had fodenly flarted out
of his head, and yet the fghte of his fonne richly furnifhed, and
in the company of Gunfort his cofin, did more aftronne him. For
he suspected incontinentlye that hee was discouered, and that the
Emperour had fente for him to be reuenged of the faulte so long
time paffe committed. And as he had imagined diuers things
vppon his harde fortune within his fance, his fonne came to em-
brace him vppon his knees, and to kiffe his hands, with an honest
and humble reuerence, saying to Gunfort: “Sir, this is he of
whom I told the Emperour, and of him I toke my being: This is
my father.” All this while the good father embraced his fonne
very hard, and weeping for extreme ioy, saide vnto him: “Alas,
my fonne, if thy comming be fo happie vnto mee as it is ioyfull,
if thy newes be good and prosperous, which thou bringest: thou
doest reuiue thy father halfe deade, and from lamentable despaire
thou doest replenie the and fill him with suche hope, as one day shal
be the state of his age, and the recovery of his greateft losse.”
The sonne not able to abide the discourse of his parents affairs, could not comprehend anything at that pitiful meting: but stode still so astonned, as though he had bin fallen from the clouds. Now during this time, that the father and the sonne thus welcomed one an other: Gunfort toke heed to all the countenance and gestures of Alerane. There was no part of the collier's bodie that he forgot to view: and yet remembering the voice of his cousin, and feing a wound that he had in his face, was sure that it was hee. And then with his armes stretched forth he came to clepe Alerane about the necke, whom he made to loke redde with his warme teares, saying: "Ah: Alerane, the present torment now, but in time past, the pleasance rest, of oure race. What eclipse hath so longe obscured the shining sunne of thy valiaunt prowess? why haffe thou concealed so longe time, thy place of retire from him, which desired so much thine aduauancement? Haft thou the harte to fee the teares of thy cousin Gunfort running downe from his eies vpon thy necke, and his armes embracinge thee with such loue and amitie, as he cannot receive the like, except he be something moued by thee, in feing thy louing entertainment? Wilt thou denye that, which I knowe, by a certaine instinct and naturall agreement, which is, that thou art Alerane the sonne of the Duke of Saxone, and so renowned throughout all Germany? Doeft thou pretende (throughe thine owne miffortune so rooted in thy harte by liuinge in thefe wilderneffe) to depreie thy sonne of the honor, which the heavens and his good fortune have prepared for him? Ah cruel and pitileffe father, to suffer thy progenie to be buried in the tombe of obliuion, with eternall reproche. O vnkinde kinfman toward thy kindred, of whom thou makeft so small accompte, that wilt not vouchsafe to speake to thy cousin Gunfort, that is comhiter for thy comfort, and the aduauancement of thy familie." Alerane for ashamed, as well for the remembrance of his auncient fault, as to fee himselfe in so poore estate before the emperours gallants, answered Gunfort, saying: "My Lord and cousin, I be-seech you to beleue, that want of desire to make my complaint vnto you, and lacke of curtesie to entertaine you, haue not made me to forget my dutie towards you, being as well my neare kinfman, as such one to whom I haue done wrong and very great in-
iurie by offending the Emperour. But you do knowe of what puissance the prickes of conscience bee, and with what worme she gnaweth the harte of them, which feele themselves culpable of crime. I am (as you faide) the present mischapp of our house, for the opinion that the Emperour hath conceiued of my folly, and shal be the rest (if you wil do me so much pleasure to rid me out of this miserable life) both of you and of the minde of a father iuftly displeased against his daughter, and the quiet of a Prince offended with his subiecte: for I sweare vnto you by my fayth, that I neuer doe much defired life, as I nowe do couect death, for that I am affurred, that I being deade, my poore companion and welbeloued wife, shall live at her eafe, enjoyinge the presence and good grace of her father.” “What meane you fo to faye,” anwered Gunfort, “the Emperour is fo well pleased and appeased, as he hath fworne vnto mee to receiue you as his fonne in law, and my Lady your wife as his deare beloued daughter, whom I pray you to caufe to come before vs, or to signifie vnto vs where shee is, that I may doe reverence unto her as to my Princeffe and soueraigne Ladie.” William was all amafed, and almoft beides himfelfe, hearing this discourse, and thought hee was either in a dreame or els inchaunted, till that Alerane called his wife by her proper name, who was fo appalled to hear the word of Adelaffa, that her hart was sodainly attached with terror and feare, when she faw fo great a company about her husband: and then her fonne came to doe his dutie, not as to his mother onely, but as to the daughter of an Emperour, and the wife of a Prince of Saxon. She againe embraced and kifed him, although shee was furprised with feare and shame, and fo mowed with that sodain feighte, as she had much a doe to keepe herfelfe from fainting and falling downe betweene the armes of her fonne, and thought that she had paffed the place where Gunfort was, who going towarde her, after his reverence and deute done, made her understand the charge hee had, and the good will of the Emperour, which determined to receiue her againe with fo good order and entertainement as might be feuised. Which earnefte words made them to refolue vpon the proufe of fortune, and to credite the promifes that Gunfort made them in the Emperour’s behalfe,
Thus they forsoke the Caue, their Coales and fornaces, to reenter their former delightes and pleasures. That nighte they lodged at a village not farre from the foreste, where they tarried certaine dayes, to make apparell for thes straunge Princes, and so wel as they could to adorne and furnisht Adelasia, (who being of the age almoft of xxxv. or xxxv. yeares, yet manifested some part of the perfection of that deuine beautie, and modest grauitie, which once made her maruellous and singuler above all them that lived in her dayes.) In the time that this royle company had furnisht and prepared themselfes in readinesse, Gunfort fente a gentleman of that troupe toward the Emperour, to adwertifie him of the succeffe of their journey. Wherof he was exceeding joyful, and attended for the comming of his children, with purpose to entretaine them in loving and honourable wife. When all things were in readinesse and the traine of Adelasia in good order, according to the worthines of the house whereof the came, they rode toward Sauonne, which journey seemed to them but a sport, for the pleasure mixte with compacion that eche man conceiued, in the discouerse that Alerane made vpon his misfortunes and chaunces, as well in his iourneis, as of his abode and continuaunce in the defarts. Which William calling to remembraunce, praifed God, and yelded him thankes for that it had pleased him to inspere into his minde, the forsking of his parentes, considering that the same onely fault, was the caufe of their restitution, and of his aduauncement and glorie, being the fonne of such a father, and the neuew of so great a Monarche. The fame of whose name made all men quake and tremble, and who then had commaunded all the troupe of the Gentlemen of his Court, to go and feeke the forlorne louers, so long time loft and vnknownen. To be short, their entrie into Sauonne, was so royal and triumphant, as if the Emperour himselfe would haue receiued the honour of such estate, and pompe. Which he commaunded to be done as well for the ioy that he had recovered the thing, which he accompted loft, as to declare and acknowledge to euery wight, that vertue cannot make herfelfe better knowne: than at that time, when the actions and deeds of great personages be semblable in raritie and excellencie to their nobilitie. For a Prince is of greater dignitie and admiration than he commonly
sheweth himselfe, which can never enter into the head of the popular fort, who waie the affections of other with the balance of their owne rude and beastly fantasies. As the Greeke poet Euripides in his tragedie of Medea, doth say:

I'll luck and chaunce thou must of force endure,
Fortune's fickle fay needs thou must sustaine:
To grudge therat it tootheth not at all,
Before it come the witty wife be sure:
By wisdom's lore, and counsel not in vaine,
To shun and eke auoyde. The whirling ball,
Of fortune's threats, the sage may well rebound
By good foresight, before it light on ground.

The Emperour then having forgotten, or wisely dissembling that which he could not amend, met his daughter and sonne in lawe at the Palace gate, with so pleasaunt cheere and joyfull countenance, as the like long time before he did not vs. Where Alerane and Adelafia being light of from their horfe, came to kisse his handes (and both vpon their knees) began to frame an oration for excuse of their fault, and to pray pardon of his maieftie. The good Prince rauished with joy, and satisfied with repentance, stopped their mouthes with sweete kisses and hard embracings. "O happie ill time (said he) and forowful ioy, which now bringeth to me a pleasure more great than euer was my heavy displeasure. From whence commeth this my pleasaunt ioye? O wel deuised flight, by the which I gaine that (by preferuinge my loffe once made and committed) which I never had: if I may say so, considering the ornament of my house, and quietnesse of my life." And saying so, hee kisshed and embraced his little neuues, and was loth that Adelafia should make reherfall of other talke but of mirthe and pleasure. "For (said he) it sufficeth me that I have ouerpasséd and spent the greatest part of my life in heauinesse, utterly vnwilling to renewe olde sores and wounds." Thus the mariage began, vnknowne and against the Emperours will, was confummate and celebrated with great pompe and magnificence, by his owne commandement, in the Citie of Sauonne, where he made fir William knight, with his
owne hand. Many goodly faictes at the tourney and tilte were done and atchieued, whereat William almoft every day bare away the prife and victorie, to the great pleafure of his father and contentacion of his grandfather, who then made him marques of Monferrat. To the second fonne of Alerane, he gaue the Marquisat of Sauonne, with all the appurtenances and iurisdìcions adioyning, of whom be descended the Marquefes of Caretto. The third he made Marques of Saluce, the race of whom is to this daye of good fame and nobilitie. Of the fourth fonne sprang out the original of the house of Cera. The fijfte was Marques of Incife, whose name and progeny Hueth to this daye. The fixt fonne did gouerne Pouzon. The feuenth was eslablifhed Senior of Bofco, vnder the name and title of Marques. And Alerane was made and conftituted ouerfeer of the goods and dominions of his children, and the Emperor's Lieutenaunt of his poffeions which he had in Liguria. Thus the emperoure by moderatinge his passion vanquifhed himsfelfe, and gaue example to the posteritie to pursue the offence before it do take roote: but when the thinge cannot be corrected, to vs modeftie and mercie which maketh kinges to live in peace, and their Empire in affuraunce. Hauinge taken order with all his affayres in Italye, hee tooke leaue of his doughter and children, and retired into Almaine. And Alerane liued honourably amonges his people, was beloved of his father in lawe, and in good reputacion and fame, arried to old yeares, still remembring that aduerfitie oughte not to bring us to dispaire, nor properitie to infolencie or ill behauiour, and contempt of things that feeme small and base, fitte there is nothing vnder the heavens that is stable and sure. For he that of late was great and made all men to lțoupe before him, is become altogether such a one as though he had never beene, and the poore humble man aduanced to that eftate, from whence the firfte did fall and was depofed, makinge lawes sometimes for him, vnder whom he liued a subiect. And behold of what force the prouidence of God is, and what poife his balance doth containe, and how blame worthy they be that refferre the effectes of that deuine counfel to

the inconstant and mutable revolucion of fortune that is blinde and vncertaine.
THE FORTY-FIFTH NOUELL.

The Duchesse of Sauoie, being the kinge of England's sister, was in the Duke her husbandes absence, vnusuylie accused of adulterie, by a noble man, his Lieutenaunte: and shoulde haue beene put to death, if by the proueffe and valiaunt combate of Don Iohn di Mendoza, (a gentleman of Spaine) she had not beene deliuered.

With a discourse of marvelous accidentes, touchinge the fame, to the singuler praire and commendation of chaste and honest Ladies.

Love commonly is counted the greatest passion amongst all the most greuous, that ordinarily do assault the sprites of men, which after it hath once taken hold of anye gentle subieçte, followeth the nature of the corrupt humour, in those that haue a feauer, which taking his beginning at the harte, despereth it selfe incurablye, through all the other sensibler partes of the bodie: whereof this present historie giueth vs ampie to vnderstand, being no leffe marvelous than true. Those that haue read the aunciente histories and chronicles of Spaine, haue fene in divers places the occasion of the cruell ennimite which raigned by the space of xl. yeares, betweene the houses of Mendoza and Tolledo, families not onely righte noble and aunciente, but also most aboundante in riches, subieçtes and feignories of all the whole realme. It happened one day that their armies being redie to ioyne in battaile, the Lord Iohn of Mendoza chief of his armie, a man much commend-ed by al histories, had a widow to his sister, a very devout Lady, who after she vnderstode the heauie newes of that battaile, falling downe vpon her knees, praised God incessantly, that it would please him to reconcile the two families together, and to make an ende of so manye mischieues. And as she vnderstode that they were in the chiefest of the conflicte, and that there were a greate number slaine on both partes, she made a vow to God, that if her brother retorned victorius from that enterprife, she would make a voyage to Rome on foote. The ouerthrowe fell (after much bloudishead vpon them of Tolledo. Mendoza brought away the victorie, with the leffe losse of his people. Whereof Isabell aduertised, declared vnto her brother the vow that she had made.
Which seemed very straung vnto him, specially how she durst enterprize so longe a voyage on foote, and thought to turne her purpose, howbeit she was so importunate vppon him, as in the ende hee gauue her leave, with charge that she should go well accompanied and by small iourneis, for respect of her health. The Ladie Ifabell being departed from Spaine, hauing trauersed the mountaines Pirenees, pass'd by Fraunce, went ouer the Alpes, and came to Thurin, where the Duke of Sauoye had then for wyfe, a sister of the kinge of Englande, whoe was bruted to be the fairest creature of the weste partes of the world. For thiscause the Lady Ifabel desired greatly in passing by to see her, to know whether truth did aunfwere the great renowne of her beauty. Wherein she had fortune so fauourable, that entring into Thurin, she found the Duchesse vpon her Coche, goinge abroade to take the ayre of the fields: which the Lady Ifabell vnderstandinge, stayde to behold her, being by fortune at that pretent at the doore of her Coche. And then with great admiration, considering the wonderfull beautie of that princeffe, iudging her the chiefest of beautie of al those that she had euer seene, she spake somewhat loute in the Spanishe tongue, to those of her companie, in this maner: "If God woulde haue permitted that my brother and this Princeffe might haue married together, euery man might well haue saide, that there had bin mette the moste excellente couple for perfection of beautie, that were to be found in all Europa." And her wordes in deede were true: for the Lord Mendoza was euene one of the fairest knightes that in his time was to be found in all Spaine. The Duchesse whoe vnderstoode the Spanishe tongue very well, passing forth, behelde all that companie: and sayninge as though shee had not vnderstande those wordes, thoughte that shee surely was some greate Lady. Wherefore when shee was a little passe her, she faide to one of her pages: "Marke whether that ladye and her companye go to their lodging, and say vnto her, that I desire her, (at my returne) to come and see mee at my Castell." Which the page did. So the Duchesse walking a long the riuier of Poo, mused vpon the words spoken by the Spanishe Ladye, which made her not longe to tarie there, but toke the waye backe againe to her Castell, where being arriued, she founde the Lady Ifabell,
who at the Duchesse request, attended her with her company: and after dutiful reverence, the Duchesse with like gratulacion, received her very courteoufie, taking her a part, and demanding her of what province of Spaine she was, of what house, and what fortune had brought her into that place. And then the Lady Isabell made her to vnderstand, from the begininge, the occasion of her long voyage, and of what house she was: the duchesse understanding her nobilitie, excused her selfe, for that shee had not done her that honour which shee deserved, imputinge the faulte vpon the ignorance of her estate. And after divers other curteous communications the Duchesse press'd her to know whereunto the wordes tended that shee had spoken of her, and of the beautie of her brother. The Spaniflie lady somewhat abaffed, faide vnto her: "Madame, if I had knowen so much of your skil in our tongue, as now I do, I would have beene better aduised before I had doe exalted the beautie of my brother, whose praise had beene more commendable in the mouth of another: yet thus much I dare affirme (without affection be it spoken), as they that know him can report, that hee is one of the comliest Gentlemen that Spaine hath bredde these twenty yeares. But of that which I haue faide touching your beautie, if I haue offended, muche a doe shal I haue to get the same pardoned, because I cannot repent mee, nor say otherwise, except I should speake contrary to truth. And that durste I enterprize to be verified by your selfe, if it were possible that nature for one quarter of one houre onelye had transported into some other that which with right great wonder she sheweth to be in you." Wherunto the Duchesse to the ende shee woulde seeme to excuse her prayfe, answered with a little bashfulnes, which beautified much her liuely colour, saying: "Madame if you continue in these terms, you will contraine me to thincke, that by chaunging of place you have also chaunged your judgemente: for I am one of the leafle to be commended for beauty of all this lande, or els I will beleeue that you haue the beautie and valour of my Lorde your brother doe printed in your minde, as all that which prefenteth it selfe vnto you, hauinge anye apparaunce of beautie, you measure by the perfection of his." And at that instante the Ladie Isabell, whoe
thoughte that the duchesse had taken in euill parte the compa-
rifon that she had made betweene her brother and her, somwhat
in choler and heate, saide vnto her: "Madame, you shall pardon
mee for that I haue so much forgotten my selfe, to presume to
compare your beautie to his: whereof if he be to be commended,
yet I maye well be blamed, being his sister, to publishe the fame
in an vnKNOWN place: notwithstanding, I am wel assured, that
when you shall speake, euain with his enemies, that yet besides
his beautie, they will well assure him to be one of the gentl
and best condicioned gentlemen that liueth." The Duchesse fe-
inge her in these alterations, and so affected to the praife of her
brother, toke great pleasure in her speach, and willingly woulde
haue had her to passe further, had it not bin for feare to offende
her, and to put her in a choler. And to thintent to turne her
from that matter, she commaunded the table to be covered for
supper, where she caused her to be serued honourably of all the
most delicate and moost exquifite meates that were possible to be
gotten. Supper done, and the tables uncouvered, after they had
a little talked together, and that it was time to withdrawe them
selfes, the Duchesse the more to honor her, would that she shoul
lodge in her chamber with her, where the pilgrime (weared with
the way) toke very good rest. But the Duchesse pricked with the
strange talke of the Lady Ifabel, hauing a hammer working in
her hand, could not sleepe. And had so wel the beauty of the
unknown knight graued in the bottome of her hart, as thinking
to close her eyes, she thought that he flew continuallie before her
like a certaine fantasie or shadowe. In sorte, that to know further
what he was, she would gladly haue made greater inquirie. Then
soldainlye after a little flamme and feare intermingled with a cer-
tain womanhoodte longe obserued by her, and therewithall the
fidelitie which she bare to the Duke her husbande, presentinge
it selfe before her, thee buried altogether her first counsell which
died and tooke ende, even so one almoaste as it was borne. And
so tosse with an infinite number of diuers thoughtes passe the
night, vntil the daye beginning to lighten the world with his
burning lampe, contraine Her to ryse. And then the Lady Ifabel,
ready to departe, went to take leave of the Duchesse, who willingly
would have wished that she had never seen her, for the new flame that she felt at her harte. Neuerthelesse, dissemblings her euill, not able to holde her any longer, made her to promise by othe, at her retourne from her voyage, to repasse by Thurin, and after she had made her a very liberall offer of her goodes, taking her leave, she left her to the tuicion of God. Certaine dayes after the departing of the Spanysh lady, the Ducheffe thinking to quenche this new fier, the fame began further to flame, and the more that hope failed her, the more did desire encreafe in her. And after an infinite number of fundrie cogitacions, Loue got the victorie. And she resolued with her selfe in the ende, whatsoever might come thereof, to communicate her cause to one of her beloued damfels called Emilia, and to haue her aduise, in whom she wonted to repose her truft in all her secrete affaires, and causing her to be called for secretele, she saide vnto her: "Emilia, I beleue that if thou haft taken any good heed to my auncient maner of behauior, euer since I departed from England, thou haft knowne me to be the very ramper and refuge of all afflieted persons. But now my deffenes be turned contrarie. For I haue nowe more neede of counsel than any other liuing creature, and hauing no perfon about me worthy to be priuie of my misfortune, but thou, my first and last refuge is to thee alone: of whom I hope to receiue confolation in a matter whiche toucheth me no leffe than my life and honour." And then the Ducheffe declared vnto her priuily, how since the departing of the Lady Isabell she had had no refte in her minde, and how she was enamoured of a knight whome she neuer sawe, whose beautie and good grace had touched her so nere, as being altogether vnable any longer to resiste her mishap, she knew not to whom to haue recourse, but to the fidelitie of her counsell: adding thereunto for conclusion, that she loued him not dishonestly, or for hope she had to satisfies any lasciuious appetite, but onely to haue a fight of him: whiche (as shee thought) would bring unto her such contentation, as ther by her grief should take ende. Emilia who euer loued her maistrefe as she did her owne heart, had great compassion vpon her, when she understode the light foundation of her straunge loue: neuerthelesse desiring to plesse her euon to the last point of her life,
she said vnto her: “Madame if it wil pleafe you to recreate your selfe from these your sorrowes, and to respite me onely twoo dayes, I hope to prouide by some good meanes that you shal shortly fee him who vndeferuedly doth worke you all this euill.” The Duchesse nourished with this hope, defired her effectually to thinke vpon it; promifing vnto her, that if her woordes came to good effect, she would make her such recom pense as she her self should confesse she had not done pleasure to an ingrate or vnthankefull woman. Emilia which had the brute to be one of the mofte subtile and sharpe witted dames of all Thurin, fept not during the time of her prescriflion. But after she had searched an infinite number of meanes to come to that which she defird, there was one that semed mofte expedient for that purpose, and of leaft perill aboue other. And her time of delaye expired, thee went to Madame the Duchesse, and sayd: “Madame, God knoweth howe many troubles my minde hath sustayned, and how much I haue strued with mine own conscience to fatiffe your commandement, neuerthelesse, after I had debated thinges fo substantially as was poiffible, I coulde deuife nothing more worthy your contente, than that whiche I wyll nowe declare vnto you, if it wyll pleafe you to heare mee. Whiche to be short is, that for the execution of this our enterpryfe, it behoueth you to fayne your selfe to be ficke, and to suffer your selfe to be trayned into fuche maladies as there shall rather appeare in you token of death, than hope of lyfe. And being brought into fuch extremitie, you shall make a vowe (your health recovered) to go within a certayne time to Saint Iames on pilgrimage, which thing you may easely obtayne of the Duke your husbande. And then may you make your voyage liberally with the Ladye Ifabell, who will passe this waye vpon her retourne, without discovering your affection vnto her, and wyll not fayle by reknowledging the curtefie that you haue vied towards her in these partes, to conduce you by her brother’s house, wher you may fee him at your eafe, that maketh you to suffer this great torment. And I will aduerfife you furthermore of one thing, which till this time I haue kept clofe, whiche is: that for as mutch as we two togethers cannot without great difficultie accomplifhe our businesse, it hath seemed good vnto me to know of you, if
you would that a third perfone shalbe called hereunto, who is
so much at my commaundement as I dare comit my truft vnto
him. It is maiiler Fraunces Appian the Millanor, your phifitian,
who (to fay the very truth vnto you) hath bene so affectioned to
mee this yeare or two, as he hath not ceaflfed by al meanes po-
ffible, to wynne me (but to honest loue) for be pretendeth to
marry me. And because that hetherto I haue made small ac-
compt of him, and haue not vfed any fauour towards him, nor
hitherto any good entertainement, I affure my self feing the
great amitie that he beareth me, that if I did but fauorably behold
him fие or fixe times with pleafaunt lookes, adding therunto a
few kifles, he would hazard a thousand liues for my fake if he
had them, to content me. And for as much as I know him to be
a diligent man, learned, and of great reputation, and one that
may fande vs to great flead in this busines, I thought good not
to conceale or kepe from your knowledge my aduife herein.”

The Ducheffe vnderftanding all this pretie discouerfe, fo apt for
her affections (rauished with great ioye) embraced hard Emilia,
and faide vnto her: “Emilia my deare friend, if thou diddest
knowe in what wife I do esteme thee, and what I meane in time
to come, to beftowe vpon thee, I am well affured, albeit thou haft
hetherto sufficiently shewed thy good will, yet thou wilt hereafter
doe me greater pleafure promifing thee, by the faihte of a Prince,
that if our enterprife doe well succeede, I will not vfe thee as a
feruaunt, but as my kinfwoman and the beft beloued frend I
haue. For I holde my felse fo fatisffed with that thou haft fayd vnto
me, as if fortune be on our fide, I see no maner of impediment
that may let our enterprife. Goe thy way then, and entertaine
thy Phifitian, as thou thinkest beft, for it is very expedient that
he be a partie, and for the refte let me alone: for neuer was there
any Lazar that better couldie difefemble his impotencye, than I
knowe how to counterfeit to be ficke.” The Ducheffe being de-
parted from Emilia, began to plaine her felle bitterly, faining
sometime to fele a certain paine in her stomack, sometime to haue
a difafe in her head, in fuch fort, as after diuers womanly plaintes
(propre to thofe that feele themfelves fickle) she was in the end
confrayned to laye her felf downe, and knew fo well bowe to
diffemblbe her fickness, as (after she had certaine dayes kept her bedde) there was murch doubt of her health. And during this time Emilia had layed so many amorous baytes to feede her Phisitian, that he whiche knewe very well the mofte happy remedies for the body, could not now finde out any that was able to heale the maladies of his owne minde. Emilia having nofeled maister Appian with amorous toyes, began to make him vnderstande the originall of the Duchesse fickenesse, the effectes of her passion, the order that she had vfed during the furious course of the same: adding thereunto for conclusion, that if he would kepe the matter secrete, and ayde them with his counsell, she would by and by promife hym mariage by woordes, for the present tyme, and that from thenceforth she would never denie him any fauour or priuittie. That onely referred which no man can honestly demaunde, till the mariage be solemnized in the face of the church. In witnesse wherof she kissed him with great affeccion. The Phisitian more eased there withall, than if he had fene his Hippocrates or Galen, rayfed againe from death, promised rather to lofe his life than she should want his helpe. And for the better beginning of this enterprize, they wente presentlye to visite the Duchesse: in whom they found her pulfe fo to beate, the tongue fo charged, the flomacke fo weakened bycontinuall suffocation of the matrice, that the pacient was in very great perill of death. Whereunto euery man did easely geue credite for the reputation and great experience of the Phisitian: and maister Appian hauing commauuded all the chamber to be voyded, made the Duchesse to vnderstande in fewe woordes, how it behaued her to gouerne her selfe. And the better to cloke her caufe, he brought her at that instant a little perfume, by receiuing the fauour wherof she should often times fal into certaine little foundinges, and by vſing the perfume it woulde diminifhe her colour for a time, and make her looke as though she had keppe her bed halfe a yeare before: neuerthelesse it should doe her no other displeasure, and that in three or foure dayes, with certaine other drugges, hee would restore her colour so frehe as ever it was. Whiche counsell the Duchesse liked best of any thing in the world. And they three together played their partes fo wel, as the common brute throughout all
the citie was, that the Ducchesse was in great daunger of death.
The duke being aduertised of these thinges, caufed all the phili-
tians of Thurin to aseembe, to prouide for the health of the
Ducchesse: who being come together, with the Duke into her bedde
chamber, a litle after she had receiued Maifter Appian's perfumes:
and feeing her to fowne diuers times before them, were in great
difpaire of her health. And after they had somewhat debated the
matter with Maifter Appian, not knowing wherupon to resolue, they
fai'd vnto the Duke, that it behoued him to prouide for her foule,
for that they faw in her the ordinarie tokens and meflangers of
death. The poore Duke being forowfull beyond meafure, for that
he loued the Ducchesse entierly, fent for the Suffragane of the Bifhop
of Thurin, a man of very holy life, to thintent he might geue her
ghoftly counsell. To whom the confeffed her felf with a voyce
fo feeble, that it feemed to be more than halfe dead. Her talke
was not long, but yet she made him beleue that nature failed her,
and that by litle and litle she drewe towards her ende: defiring
him to haue her and her poore foule in remembrance when he
made his orifons and praiers. The Suffragan being gone, the Duke
and others, with a great number of Gentlemen and Ladies, went into
the chamber. But she began then to enter into fo great rauing,
as euery body was afeard of her. And after that she had tooled
her felfe in her bed like a fenneffle creature, her fpeach fayled
her. Whereat thofe prefent, stricken with no smal wonder, think-
ing the foule would straigt wayes haue departed the body, fome
of them cryed vpon her, Madame remembre Iefus, fome other
S. Barbara. But wilie Emilia more priuie of her counfell than
the ref, taking her tenderly by the arme, cryed upon her with a
loude voyce: "Madame call vpon S. Iames, who hath fo often
fuccoured you in youre aduerfities. And with that the Ducchesse
awaked as it wer out of a heany sleepe, and rowling her eyes to
and fro, with a ftrauinge trembling of all her members, began to
prounce with an interrupted voyce: "O glorious Apoftle, in
whome from my tender youth, I haue euer had my ftedfaft truft
and hope, be now mine interceffor in this cruel aflault of death, to
Iefus Chrift. And I make a vowe nowe vnto thee, that if I may
recouer health, I will my felfe in perfon, go honor thy facred body,
THE DUCHESSE OF SAUOIE.

in the proper place where it repofeth.” And hauing ended her fayne prayer, she counterfaieted a sleepe, and so continued the fpace of twoor three houres, whiche caufed all the companie to withrawe themfelves, excepte the poore Duke, who would not depart from her vntil fhe waked, and in the meane time ceafted not to praye to God for the health of his loyall fpoife. After fhee had fo well plaied this pageant by the fpace of an houre or twoo, faining then to awake, fhe began to ftretche forth her armes and legges with fuche force, as whofoeuer had heard the noyfe, would caufely have judged that fhe had bene deliuered from fome great torment. And beholding the Duke her husband, with a pitifull eye (who had leaned his head nere her’s in the bed) fhe caft her fretched armes negligently vpon his neck, and kifling him fayed: “Now may I fafely kiffe you my Lorde, that within these three houres was in fuch pitifull plight, as I thought my felf for euer depruied of that benefite. Thankes be geuen to God and that good Sainct to whom I made my vow I am preffently fo well eafed, as if I fele myfelf no worfe, I will yet deteine you (husband) a while from an other mariage.” But the poore Duke altogether rauifhed with ioye, hauing his white beard all tempered with teares, knew not what anfwer to make, but behelde her with fuch admiration, as he feemed to be besides himfelf. And in the meane time certayn whiche wer at the dore, hearing them speake, entred the chamber, who finding the Duchefle fomwhat better then fhe was, publiſhed her recouerie incontinently throw al the citie, whereof the citizens being aduertifed (because they loued her dearly) made proceffions and other thankesgeuing to God, as in cafes like are accustomed. Within a whyle after, the Duchefle began by little and litle to tafte her meates, and to viue fuche diet as fhee recouered her former health. Except the newe plague which lynched her tender harte for the Lorde Mendoza, whiche fhe could not cure, but by the presence of him that bare the oyntment boxe for that fore. And fo long fhe continued in the amorous thoughtes, till the Lady Ifabell retourned from her pilgrimage, who came to the caſtell according to her promife. And after friendly gretinges one of an other, the Duchefle made her to vnderſtande how since her departure fhe had neuer almost
commen out of her bed, for that she had been afflicted with a moite grievous fickenesse. Neuerthelesse by the helpe of God, and the interceffion of good S. Iames (to whom she had vowed her felfe) she had recovered health. And if she could obtaine leave of the Duke her husband, she would thinke her felfe happy to make a voyage thither in her companie. Which the Spanishe Lady persuaded by all meanes possible, thewing vnto her many commodities, she shold finde in Spayne, and the honorable company of Gentlemen and Ladies, who at her arriuall there (if it would please her to doe them so muche honor as to vifite them in paffing by) would leaue nothing vndone for the best manner of entertainement that possibely might be denifed. And by this meane the Ladye Ifabell thought to pricke her forward, who was in dede but to quicke of the fpurre already, and thinking euery houre vii. determined one morning thereof to moue the Duke her husbande, to whom she fayd: "My Lorde, I beleue that you doe sufficiently well remember my trouble paife, and the extreme martyredome that I suffred in my late fickenesse, and namely of the vowe whiche I made for recovery of my health. Nowe finding my felfe whole and strong, my desire is that with your licence I might accomplifhe my voyage, specially with so good opportunitie: for the noble woman of Spayne of whom I have heretofore told you, is returned, and it shoulde be a great eafe to vs both to go in companie together. And for so much as it is a matter of necessitie, and that early or late, I must aduenture to paye my vowed debte, it is best both for my commoditie and also for my honour, to goe in her companie." Whereunto the good Duke did willingly accorde: who neuer had any manner of fuipicion that fuch a treafon was lodgd in the harté of fo great a Princesse. And hauing giuen order for all things requisite for her departing, she tooke a certaine number of Gentlemen and damfels, amongst which, Maifter Appian and Emilia were not forgotten, and being all appareld in pilgrimes weedes, by long travaile and weary iourneis, after they had paffed the cold Alpes, they came into the countie of Rosfllion, and entred into Spayne: and then the Duchesse feling her felfe to approche the place where her harte of long tyme had taken hold,
desired the Lady Isabell and her company earnestly, not to make it knowne to any perffone what she was. And so trauelling by small iourneyes, and deuing of diuerfe matters, they arriued within two litle dayes iourney to the place where the Lorde of Mendoza kept his ordinarie houfholde. For which caufe the Spanifhe lady entreated the Ducheffe not to be offended, if she sent some one of her men before to geue aduertifement of their comming, which the Ducheffe graunted. And the messenger finding the Lord of Mendoza readie to receiue them, and having done him to vnderstand of the coming of the Ducheffe, of the first talke betwene her and his fyster, of the great entertainment that she had geuen them, of the finguiler beautie with the which she was adorned: he was not fo groffe but that he knewe by and by, that the Ducheffe at thofe yeares, had not bene fo liberall of her labour, to make fuch a voyaige one foote, without some other reffect: and diffebling what he thought, caufed thirty or fortie of his gentlemen incontinently to make them ready. To whome mak- ing as though hee would goe hunte the Hare, he went to meete the Ducheffe: and hauing difcouered them a farre of in a fielde, the Lady Isabelle did forthwith knowe theim. Who aduertised the Ducheffe that he which ridde vpon the whyte Ienet of Spayne, was the Lorde of Mendoza her brother, and that the other were his fervauntes. The Prince then after he had made his horfe to vaute three or foure times aloft in the ayre, with an excellent grace and maruëlous dexterity lighted from his horfe, and kifing her hand, faydes vnto her: "Madame, I beleue that if the wandering knightes of olde tyme, who haue eternized their memorie, by an infinite number of renowned victories, had haue muche good lucke, as many tymes in their aduentures to meete with fuch pilgrimes as you be, they woulde willingly haue abandoned the Launce and Murrion, to take the Staffe and Scrippe." The Ducheffe then beyng comparable with anye ladye of her tyme, for her educa- tion and comely talke, affayled with ioye, feare, and shame, that no lacke of dutie might be founde in her, faydes vnto hym: "And in deede my Lorde like as if the knightes of whom you speake, had tafted of some good hap (as you terme it) by meting with fuch pilgrimes: fo alfo we hope that the Saint to whome we be
vowed, in the honor of whom we have enterprisèd this perillous voyage, will receive vs in good parte: otherwyse our payne were altogether lost, and our iourney euil imploied." And after they had geuen this first amorous atteint, the Lord of Mendozza taking her by the arme, conduited her vnto his castell, deuing of pleasaunt matters. And he was greatly astouned, to see so rare a beautie, as appeared in the Princeffe: whiche neither the wornesse of the waye, nor the parching beames of the Sunne, coulde in any wyse so appaire, but that there restèd ynough, to drawe vnto her the very harte of the mooste colde and frozen men of the world. And albeit the Lorde of Mendozza tooke great pleasure and admiration in beholding her, yet was it nothing in respect of the Duchesse: who after she had aduised and well marked the beautie, excellency, and other good gifts of grace, in the Lorde of Mendoza, she confessed that al that which she had heard of his sifter, was but a dreame in comparision of the proufe, which discovered it selfe vpon the first viewe: seeming vnto her by good judgement, that all the beauties of the worlde were but paintinges, in respect of the perfection of that whiche shee sawe with her eyes. Wherin she was not deceived, albeit that her feruent loue might have bewitched her sensés. For all the histories in Latine, Spaine, and Italien, the whiche make mention of Mendoza, geue vnto him the firste place in beautie of all the Princes and Lordes that were in his tyme. The poore Duchesse, after she had maniféstèd by outwarde gestures, and countenaunces, to the Lord of Mendoza, that which was in the inward part of her harte, without receiuing the full satiuation of his fight, whiche she desired, determíned (hauing soiourned three dayes in his castell) to departe the nexte morning (wnwares to the knight), to performe her voyage. And so soone as the light of the daye began to appeare, she went to the chamber of the Lady Isabell, whom she thanked affectuously, aswell for her good companye, as for the great courtesie and humanitie, that she had receiued in her house. And hauing taken leave of her, departed with her traine. The knight Mendoza, about an houre or two after her departure, aduertised thereof, was greatly troubled, what the matter might be that she was gone without taking leave of him. And after that he had a
little thought therupon, he easely perceiued, that all the fault ther-
of was in him selfe: and that this great Princeffe had abandoned
her countrie, of purpose by all judgement to visite him, and that
he had shewed himself very flacke for her satisfaction, in that he
had not offered her his service: wherat being iuftly greued, she did
not vouchsafe to geue him a farewell. And so accusyng himselfe,
he determined to followe after her, accompanied onelye with twoo
pages. And beyng on horsebacke, it was not long before he espyed
her in the hyghe waye to Saint James, where lighting, heewalked
twoo myles with her, reafonyng the matter without inter-
mission: desyryng her amonges other thynges, to let hym vnder-
stand what displeasure shee had conceyued in his house, that caused
her so spedy and secret a departure: adding thereunto, that if
her pleasure were, he would accomanye her to the place whether
she was vowed, and would also reconduet her in his owne perfone
to Thurin, in so honourable forte, as shee should finde cause to be
contented. Then paffing further, with fighes sayd vnto her:
"Madame, fortune had done me a great beneftite, if when my fister
made her vowe to go to Rome, I had left the battaye againft
mine enemies, and that her vowe had bene without effect. For it
might haue bene that I shoulde haue remained quiet by the losse
of some of my people. But alas, I feel now, since your comming
into this countrie, a battaye so cruel, and affault so furious in my
harte, as not being able any longer to refite it, I finde my selfe
vanquished, and caught captuie, in such forte as I know not to
whom to complaine, but to you, which is the motion of all my dis-
quietneffe: and yet, which grieueth me most, you diffemblle as
though you did not understand it. And to bringe me to my laft
end, you are departed this day out of my house, not daining to fee
me, or to appease me with one farewell, which hath fo further in-
flamed my paffion, as I die a thousand times a day. Befeching
you for the time to come, to entreate me more fauourably, or you
shall see me, in that state, wherein you would be loth to fee your
eyemy: which is, most cruel death." And in dede, he showed
sufficiently, how great the grief was that pressured him, and how
well the paffion that he felt, was agreeable to the wordes which he
spake: for in pronouncing his wordes he sighede so in his tale, and
changed his colour so often, and had his face so besprent with tears, as it fumed his foule attached with superfluous sorrowe, would at that very instant haue abandoned his bodye. Which the Princeffe perceiuinge, touching at the quicke the very spring of all his euill, fayd vnto him: "Seignior Mendoza, I know not what you wold that I should do more for you, nor for what occasion you do pretend, that I should be the cause of your death: for if the occasion thereof shoulde happen through my default, my life by stengthe or abilitie, could not endure one houre after, for the sorrowe I shoulde conceiue thereof. Thinke me to be yours, and be not offended, I befech you, if openly I doe no longer talke with you: for I would not to winne al the goods in the world, that any of this traine which doth accompany me, shoulde perceiue any one spake of the great kindled fire, wherin my harte burneth day and night for you, being assured that if you had felt one houre of my payne, in place to accuse me of crueltie, your selfe complaining, wold pitie the griefe which I haue suftained for your long abence: for without the continual presence of your perfone, representing it selfe in the eyes of mine understanding, with a firme hope once to haue seen you: it had bene impossible for me, to resift the long and hard affaulte, wherwith loue hath euery houre affailed me. But one thing I must nedes confesse vnto you, that by reason of the cold welcome which you made me in the beginning, I thought it proceded of some euill opinion conceived of me or peraduenture that you had thought me ouer liberall of mine honour, to haue left the countrie where I commaunde, to render my selfe subiect to your good grace, which caused me without leave to depart your house. But now that I do know by your countenaunce and teares, the contrarie, I acknowledge my fault, and desire you to forget it. With full promise that vpon my retourne from my voyage of S. Iames, I will make you amendas, in the very same place, wher I committed the fault: and remaining your prisoner for a certaine time, I wil not depart from you, vntill I haue satisfied, by sufficient penance the greatnes of my trespas. In the meanes time you shal content your selfe with my good will: and without passing any further retourne againe home to your castell, for feare leaft some fulpicious perfone in my company should con-
ceiue that in me, which all the dayes of my life I neuer gaue oc-
casion so much as once to thinke." To whome the Lorde of
Mendozza obeied, more to content her than otherwife, for hee had
the beauties and good behauiours of the Princeffe, fo imprinted
in the moft pleasant place of his harte, as he would haue defired
neuer to haue departed her companie. But like as they deter-
mined iocondly, to imploy and fatisrie their defire, at her retorne
from her voyage, even fo fortune in the meane while did beft
the fame, and fo fully brake the threde of their enterprifes, as the
issue had not fo good succeffe, as was their prefixed hope. Now
leave we the Duchesse to perfoure her voyage, and the Lord of
Mendozza to entertain his amorous paffions, and let vs digrefte to
the duke, who about x. or xii. dayes after the Duchesse his wife
was departed, began to fele her abfence, which not being able
to fuftaine for the great loue he bare vnfo her, and spacially
knowing the great fault that he had committed (being the fifter
of a king and wife of fuch a Prince) fo to let her go like an un-
feathered shaft, in fo long a voyage: determined with him felfe
(for feare leaft if any mifffortune happening vnfo her, the fame
shoulde touch his honour) to call together his counfel, and to
prouide fome remedie. The counfel affembled, and the caufe
proponed, euerie of them told the Duke that he had ouer lightly
confented to the will of the Duchesse, and that if hee should
chaunce to incur any inconuenience, all men would impute it to
his reproch wherof they would haue aduertifed him at the begin-
ning, fauing for feare they had to displease him: adding for
conclusion, that it was moft expedient the Duke shoulde put
himfelfe on the fea to goe feeke her in Galifia. Which he did,
and imbarked him felfe with a great companie of gentlemen,
to whome the winde was fo fauourable, as he ariued at S. Jame
before her; and hauing made enquirie for her, vnderftode she
was not come. Neuerthelesse he was aduertifed by certaine pil-
grims, that it could not be long before she would be there, for
that they had left her not paffe three or foure dayes journey
from thence, traueiling with her trayne, by fmall iourneys: wherof
the Duke was excading glad, and fent certaine of his gentlemen
to mete her vpon the way, as she came, who rode not farre before
they met the Duchess with her companie, and did her to vnderstand of the Duke’s arriuall, and of the cause of his comming from Thurin. Which tidinges was not very joyfull to her, and by her will would have wished that he had not taken so much paynes: neuerthelesse, preferring honor before affectiion, she made the more hafe to see him, and at her arriuall seemed to bee glad of his comming, and to lament the payne that he had taken by committing himselfe in so many daungers for her fake. Afterwardes they entred into the churche with great deuotion, where when the Ducheſſe had made certaine particulur praieres, ſhee began to perceive that God had withſhanded her lacriuous wil, and pitying the good Duke her hufband, would not permit him to be deceived in ſuchе diſloyal fort, repentantly bewayling her forepaſſed faulte. And feling herſelfe preſſed euın at the very foule with a certaine remorſe of conſciencе, ſhe was so viscerious over her affectiions, as she determined wholly to forget Mendozza and his beautie: praying God neuertheleſſe that it had pleaſed him to graunt her the grace so well to diſpoſe her matters, that her affectiions had not exceeded the bondes of honor: determining from thenceforth, not onely to put Mendozza in vtter obliuion, but alſo for euer clerely to cut of his amorous praſtife, and therefor ſo much as bid him once farewell, nor yet to let him in any wise vnderſtand thoſe newes. And ſo fettled in this deliberation, solicited her hufbande very inſtantly to departe, whiche he did, and all thinges prepared to the ſea, they toke againe their courſe to Thurin, and had the wynde fo prosperous, as from thence in fewe dayes after, they arrived at Marfellis; and weaye of the Seas, he caufed horſes to be prepared to ryde from thence to Thurin by land, wher he and his wife lided together in right great ioy and amitie. The Lorde of Mendozza greatly payned with the long absence of the Ducheſſe, fent a gentleman of purpoſe to Galifa to know the caufe of her long tarying. Who brought certain newes that the Duke was comen in perfone to fetche his wife, and that he caried her awaye with him by Sea; wherewithal he was maruellous out of patience, determining neuertheleſſe one daye when his affaires were in good order, to go viſite her at Thurin. During the time that theſe things
remained in this estate, as well of the one side, as of the other: the Almaines prepared a great army, and entred into Fraunce, where they wafled and burned al the countrey as they passed.

The king being aduertised hereof, sent for the Duke of Savoie, to goe mete them with the men of armes of Fraunce. But before his departure from Thurin, he lefte for his Lieutenant generall, the Earle of Pancalier, by the aduise and counsell of whome he intended that all the affaires of the Duche shoule be ruled and governed in his absence, and that he should in so ample wyse be honoured and obeyed, as his owne perfone. This Earle of Pancalier was a nobleman, verie prudent in his doings, and knewe right well how to gourene the common wealth, who feing that hee had the whole countrey at his commanadement, and hym selfe many tymes in preffence of the Duche, viewing her fo fayre and comelie, could not so well rule his affections, but that by little and little he fell into loue with her, in such wyse as hee for-gat hym selfe, making no confidence to offer hym service vnto her. But the Princeffe, who was resolue to lyue a good woman, abhorred all his lasciuious orations, requiring hym to bee better aduyted another tyme, before he presumde to vttet fuches talke, excepte to fuch that were his equals. Telling hym that a man ought not to bee fo vnshamfast to offer his seruice to anye great Ladie, or to make other fute vnto her, before hee hadde fyrfte knowne by her geftrue or woordes, some lykelyhoode of loue: which he could not deeme in her, for fo much as shee neither to him or to any other had euer, (til that day in all her life) fthewd such fauour, as other suspicion could be conceiued, but that which was conuenable and meete for her honour. Which when the Countie of Pancalier vnderstoode, he toke his leaue of her, ashamed of that he had done. But hee following the custome of louers, not thinking hymselfe caft of for the first refuse, erstfones renewed his requestes: and framing a louing stile, befought her to haue pitie vpon him, and to respet the greatneffe of his passion: and that he could not prolonge his life without the fauour of her good grace, who onely was the very remedie of his euill. The Ducheffe petrified with such like talke, saide vnto him: "Sir Countie, me thynke you ought to haue satifffed your selfe with my first denial, without further
continuance in the pursuuing of your rash enterprize. Haue you forgotten the place that you keepe, and the honour whereunto my Lorde the Duke my husbande hath exalted you? Is this nowe the loyall reward that you render vnto him for creating you his Lieuentauent ouer all his landes and seignories, to demand the preheminence of his bedde? Affure your selfe for final warning, that if euuer hereafter you shal againe fall into like error, I fwear vnto you by the faith of a Princeffe, that I will make you to be chaufed in suche fort, as al femblable traytors and disloyal ferryants shal take example." The Earle seeing himselfe refued, and thus rebuked, and in doubt that the Princeffe woulde make her husbande to vnderstand his enterprize upon his retourne, chaunging his greaue loue into hatred more then mortall, determined whatioeuer should come thereof, to inuente all meanes possibile, vterly to de-stroye the Duchesse. And after that he fansied diuers thinges in minde, he deuised (by the instinct of the deuil) to caufe one of his nephewes, being of the age of xviii. or twente yeares, which was his heire apperant, for that he had no children, and was one of the fayreffe and beft conditioned gentlemen of all Thurin, to for to that deuilish attempt to purpose. And finding opportunitie, one daye he saide to the yonge man (that depended wholly vppon him) these words: "Nephew, thou knowest that all the hope of liuing thou haft in this world resteth in me alone, of whom I make so good accompte as of my childe. And for that it pleased God to giue me no children, I haue conftituted and ordeined thee my fole and ouely heyre with ful hope that from henceforth thou wilt dutifullly acknowledge thy selfe most bounde vnto mee, and there-fore obedient in all thinges which I shal commaunde thee, specially in that which may be most for thine aduancemente. The Duke as thou knowest, is abfent, olde, and crooked, and at all houres in the mercy of death through the daungers of the warres. Nowe if he shoule chaunce to die, my defire is to mary thee with some great Lady: yea and if it were possibile with the Duchesse her selfe, which God knoweth what profitable it would bring both to thee and thy frendes, and in my judgement an eafe matter to complaife, if thou wilt difpose thy selfe after my counfell, or at leaft wife, if thou canft not come to the title of husband, thou maiest
not faile to be receiued as her frend. Thou art a comly gentleman, and in good fauour with the Duchefse, as I have oftentimes per- cieued by her communication, albeit that holdinge faft the bridile of her honor, she hath been afraid hetherto to open herfelfe vnto thee. Spare not my goods, make thy felfe braue and gallant from hence- forth whatfoeuer it cofte, and be dilligente to pleafe her in all that thou maiest, and time shall make thee know that which thy tender yeares hath hitherto hidden from thee." The poore yonge man giuing faith to the vnfaithfull inuentions of his vncole (whom hee counted as his father) began oft to frequente the presence of the Duchefse, and shamefafslye to folici.te her by lookes and other offices of humanitie, as nature had taught him, continuing that order the space of a moneth. Which by the Duchefse wel viewed and marked, she was diligent for her part to accept the honest and affectionate servise which the yong man dailie did vnto her, and shewed vnto him likewise a certaine more curteous fauour than to the rest of the pages, as wel for the birth and beautie wherwithal nature had enriched him, as for that she saw him enclined to do her better servise than the rest, not thinking of any dishonest appetite in the yong man, nor the malice of his vncole, who conceiued none other felicitie but in revenge of the Duchefse, his ennemie, and not able to beare the cruell mallice rooted in his harte, determined to play double or quit. And callinge his nephew before him he said vnto him: "My childe, I do perceiue and see that thou art one of the moft happieth gentlemen of all Europe, if thou knewest how to follow thine owne good luck. For the Duchefse not onely is amorous of thee, but alfo consumeth for the earnest loue she beareth thee. But as thou knowest women be shamefaft and woulde be sued vnto in secrete, and do delight to be deceiued of men, to thend it might feeme how with deceit or force they were constrained to yeld to that which of their own minds they would willingly offer, were it not for a little shamefaftnes that doth withdwawe them. And thereof assure thy felfe, for I have oftentimes experimented the fame, to my great good lucke. Wherfore credite my counsell, and follow mine aduise. And thou thy felfe shalt confesse vnto me, before to morrow at this time, that thou art the happieth man of the world. I will, then, that this night when thou feest conuenient time, thou shalt
conveye thy selfe secretelye into the chamber of the Duchesse, and there hide thy selfe vnder her bede, for feare of being espied: where thou shalt remaine vntil an houre after midnight, when all men be in the depth of their sleepe. And when thou perceivest every man at rest, thou shalte closely rise, and approching the Duchesse bed, thou shalt tell what thou art, and I am sure for the earnest loue the beareth thee, and for the long absence of her husband, the wil curteouslie receive thee betwene her armes, and feast thee with such delights as amorous folke doe embrace their louers." The simple yong man giuing faith to the words of his vnclle that was honoured as a king (thinking perhaps that it proceeded by the perfwation of the Duchesse) followed his commaundement, and obeyed whollie his traiterous and abominable heft. Who (opportunitie found) accomplished from pointe to pointe, that which his cruel vnclle had commaunded. And a little before midnight, fearing leaft his treason shoulde be discouered, toke with him three counsellors, and certaine other of the guarde of the castell. Wherunto as Lieutenaunt to the Duke, he might both enter and issue at al times when he lift, and not opening the caufe of his intent, went straight to the portall of the Duchesse chamber, and knockinge at the dore, saide that the Duke was come. Which being opened, heentred in with a number of lightes, accompanied with the guarde, hauinge a rapier readye drawn in his hande, like a furious man besides himselfe, began to looke rounde about, and vnder the bedde of the Duchesse: from whence he causd his owne proper nephew to be drawne. To whom, without geuing him leasure to speake, for feare leaft his malice should be discouered, he said: "O detestable villain whose thou shalt die." And therewithall he thruste the rapier into him, to the hard hilles, and doubling another blowe to make him faile of his speache, hee pierced his throte, so fiercely, as the poore innocente after he had a little staggered, fell downe deade to the grounde. When he had put upp his rapier, he turned towards the Counsellers, and said vnto them: "My frends, this is not the first time I haue espied the lasciuious and dishonest loue betwene this my lecherous nephew and the Duchesse, whom I haue causd to die to honourably in respect of his defert, for by the very rigor of the law, he deffuered to haue bin burnt quick, or els to be torne in pieces with four horfes. But my Ladie..."
the Duchesse I meane not to punishe, or to provide chastifement for her: For you be not ignoraunt, that the auncent custome of Lombardie and Sauoye requireth that every woman taken in adulterie, shal be burned alue, if within a yeare and a day she finde not a Champion to fight the combate for her innocencie. But for the bounden dutie that I beare to my Lord the Duke, and for respect of the estate which he hath committed to my charge, I will to-morrow dispatch a poaffe, to make him vnderstande the whole accident as it is come to passe. And the Duchesse shall remaine in this chamber, with certaine of her maids, vnder sure keeping and safegarde.” All this time the Duchesse who had both judgemente and spirite so good as any Princesse that raigned in her time, suspected by and by the treafon of the Earle. And with a pitifull eye beholding the dead body of her page, fetching a deepe sigh, cried out: “Oh, innocent soule: which sometime gaued life to this bodye that nowe is but earth, thou art nowe in place where thou feest clearelye the iniquitie of the murderer, that latelye did put thee to death.” And having made an ende of this exclamations with her armes a croffe, shee remained as in a town with out mouing either hande or foote. And after she had continued a while in that state, shee deired the Counsellers to cause the bodye to be buried, and to restore it to the earth whereof it had the first creation. “For (quoth she) it hath not deferved to be tied to the gibet, and to be foode for birds of the ayre.” Which they graunted not without a certaine generous fulfipation betwenee her and the page. For so muche as she excused not herselfe, but the innocencie of him, without speaking any worde of her owne particular iufification. This pitifull adventure was out of hande published through all the Citie, with so great sorrow and murmure of the people, as it seemed the enemies had sacked the town. For there was not one, from the very least to the greateste of al, but did both loue and reverence the Duchesse, in such sort as it seemed vnto them, that this misfortune was fallen vpon euery one of their children. The Earle of Panci-lier did nothing all that day, but dispatch the poaftes. And hauing caufed all the whole matter to be registred as it was seen to be done, he commanded the Counsellers, and them of the Garde, to subscribe his letters. And all the matter being put in order he
sent away two currors with diligence, the one into Englande to advurtishe the king her brother, and the other to the Duke: who being arrived, ech man in his place, presented their charges. Whereunto both the brother and the husband gaue full credite without any maner of difficultie: persuaded principally thereunto by the death of the nephew: who (as it was very likely) had not been put to death by his owne vnCLE, and of whom he was also the very heire, without his most greuouse fault, prayinge greatly the fidelitie of the Earle, that had not pardoned his owne proper bloud, to conferue his dutie and honour to his soueraigne Lorde. And it was concluded betweene them, by deliberate aduise and counsaile, as well of those of the king of England, as by a great number of learned men of Fraunce, whom the French kinge made to assemble for that respect in fauour of the Duke, that the custome should be so innuiolably kepte, as if the Ducheffe were the most simple damsell of all the countrey: to the ende that in time to come, greate Lordes and Ladyes which be as it were lampes to gue lighte to others, might take example. And that from thenceforth they should not suffer their vertues to be obscured by the clouds of such execrable vices. The king of England to gratifie the Earle of Pancalier: who (in his judgement) had shewed himself right noble in this act, sent him an excellent harnesse, with a sword of the selfe fame trampe by the Curroure, with letters of aunswere written with his owne hand, how he vnderfode the maner of his proceedings. And the meffenger vfed such diligence, as within few daies he arrived at Thurin. Shortly after that the king of England had sent back the Curroure, the Duke of Sauoie returned his, whom he stayed so much the longer, because the matter touched him moft neere: for he would that the matter should be debated by moft graue and deliberate counfell. And when he had resouled what to do, he wrote to the counsellers and other Magistrates of Thurin, aboue al things to haue respecte that the custome should be innuiolably observed, and that they should not in any cafe fauour the adultery of his wife, vpon paine of death. Then in particular, hee wrote his letters to the Earle, whereby he did greatly allow his fidelitie, for the which he hoped to make him suche recompence, as both he and his shoulde taste therof during their lives. The Curroure of the duke arrived,
and the matter propounded in counsell, it was judged, that (following the auncient custome) a pillar of marble should be placed in the fieldes neere Thurin: which is betweene the bridge of the riuer Poo and the Citie, wherupon should be written the accusation of the Earle of Pencalier against the Duchesse, which the Duchesse vnderstanding (hauing none other companie but Emilia, and a yong damfell) dispoiled her selfe of her silken garmentes, and did put on mourninge weede, martired with an infinite number of fondrie tormentes, feing her selfe abandoned of al worldly succour, made her complaints to God: beseeching him with teares to be protector of her innocencie. Emilia who vnderstode by her that she was vnjuiftlie accused, and seing the iminent perill that was prepared for her, determined by her accufoamed prudence to prouide therafore. And after she had a litte comforted her she faide vnto her: "Madame, the cale so requireth that now you must not consume time in teares and other womanish plaints, which can nothing diminishe your euill. It seemes most expediente vnto mee, that you forstefe your self agaisnte your enemie, and finde some meane to fende maister Appian in poaste to the Duke of Mendoza, one of the beft renowned in prowesse of all the knightes in Spaine, whose being aduertized of your misfortune, will prouide so well for your affaires, (that your honour being recouered) your life shal remaine affured. Wherefore if you will follow mine advice, you shall write him an earnest letter (as you know right wel how to indite) which Appian shal present on your behalffe. For if you follow not this counsefl, I know none els (as the world goeth now) that will hazarde his life vnder the condicion of so strange a lotte as yours is, specially hauing respect to the renowne and magnanimitie of the Earle, who as you know, is in reputation to be one of the most valiaunt men and most happy in armes that is in all Sauoie or Lombardie." "My deare frende (quoth the Duchesse) doe what thou wilt: for I am so resolued and confirmed in my forowe, as I haue no care either of death or life, no more than if I had neuer been borne. For neither in the one nor in the other, can I forsee anye remedie for mine honour alreadie loft. "Madame (quoth Emilia) let us for this time leave the care of honour in the hands of God, who knoweth
both howe to keepe it and restore it, as shal seeme good vnto him. And let vs giue order for our parte that there be no want of diligence, for feare of being ouertaken." And hauing made an ende of her tale, thee gauel her incke and paper, sayinge vnto her: "Now Madame I shal see at this pincke, if your harte will serue you at a neede or no." The Duchesse withdrew her selfe a part, and after she had longe discoursed in her minde of that which was paste betwene the knight and her, she wrote vnto him as followeth: "My Lord Mendoza, I do not write these letters vnto you, vpon any hope to be deliuered by your meane from the poinaunt pricke of fierce death which doth now besiege me, knowing death alwayes to be the true port and sure refuge of all afflicted perfons. For since that God willeth it, nature permitteth it, and my heauie fortune confeneth to it, I will receiue it with righte good will, knowinge that the graue is none other but a strong rampier and impregnable castel, wherein we close our selues against the assaults of life, and the furious storms of fortune. It is farre better (as appeareth manifestly by me) with eyes shut to waite in graue, than no longer to experimente life (the eyes beinge open) liuing with so many troubles vpon earth. But gladly woulde I bringe to remembraunce, and set before your eyes how sometime I abandoned the place which was no lesse deare vnto me than mine owne country where I was borne, and delicately nourished in honor and delights, to extende my selfe into an infinite number of perills, contrarye to the deute of those that be of mine estate, losinge the name of a Princeesse to take the title of a caytife pilgrim, for the onely fervent and vnmeasured loue which I bare you, before I did euer see you, or by anye meanes bounde thereunto by any your preceding benefites. The remembraunce whereof (as I thinke) ought now to deliuer such an harde enterprize, to the port of your conscience, that breaking the vaile of your tender hart, you shoule therefore take pitie and compassion of my straunge and cruel fortune. Which is not onely reduced to the mercy of a most dolorous prifon, and resteth in the power of a bloudie and mercilefe tyrant: but (which is worse) in the continuall hazarde of a flamelfull death. Which I do not much lament hauing long desir'd to accelerate the fame
with mine owne hands, to finde rest in an other worlde: were it not that by death I shoulde leaue an eternall blot to my good name, and a perpetuall heritage of infamie to my houfe and kindred. Wherefore if it fo be, that friendfhip loketh for no rewarde, or that friendfhip cannot be paid but by the tribute of an other, make me now to taffe the auncient fruite of friendfhip. And if pitie be the fole and onely keye of Paradife, diplaye it now on the behalfe of her, who (forfaken of al humaine succour) attendeth but the fatall houre to be thrown into the fier as a poore innocent lambe in sacrifice. And for that the bearer shal make you vnderftand the refte by mouth (whom it may pleafe you to credite as mine owne felfe) I will make an ende of my heauie letter. Befeching God to giue a good life vnto you, and to mee an honorable death." The letter clofed and fealed vp with the feale of the Ducheffe, thee commandéd Emilia to deliver it to Appian, and to require him to vfe diligence, not ceasing to ride day and night vntil he come to the place where they left the knight Mendozza, giuinge charge to make him vnderftande (at length) her innocencie and false accusation. Appian being dispatched, was fo affected to please his maiftrefle, and fo defirous to fee her deliered of her imprifonmente, as hee ceaffed not to travaile day and night, till he came within the frontiers of Spaine. And after that he had ridden yet two or three dayes journey, approaching nere the place wher he thought to find the knight Mendoza, he began to iquire of the hoft of the inne where he laye that nighte, as well of his good health, as of his other affayres, whom made him aunfwere, that it wente euen fo euill with him at that prefent, as with the pooreft gentleman of al Spaine: although that he were in deede a very great Lorde. "For (quoth he) within these few monethes past, his ennemies of Tolledo, whom he hath diuers times vanquished, have fo wel allied themfelles together out of al partes of Spaine, that they haue brought a great armie to the field. And fortune of the warre hath been fo favourale unto them, that they discomfited Mendoza and all his armie. Who hath retired himfelfe, with thofe few of his people that hee could faue alioe, into a litle towne of his, where yet to this prefent he is befieged. And fo it is (as euery man fayth) that he
doth his endeavour marvellously well, in such sort as his enemies cannot enter the towne." Master Appian then demaunded of him, if the towne besieged were farre of. And he answere, that it was about VII. or VIII. paffes. Then withoute making any longer inquirie, he toke a guide that accompanied him eu en almofte to the campe. And when he fawe the towne a farre of, he fent the guide backe againe, and went the fame daye to offer his feruice to a certaine captaine of lighte horfemen, who receuied him into wages, and then he bought armour to ferue his purpofe. And maifter Appian besides his learning was a wife and politicke man, and determined fo fone as any skirmife did begin to be for- moft, and in deede he defired thofe that had taken him, to conduct him to the Lorde of Mendozza their chieftaine: whoe knew him by and by, for that in the voyage which the Duchelfe made into Spaine, he saw him eu er more neere her then any other of her gentlemen. And after that the Lord of Mendozza had demaunded of him by what meanes he entred the towne, vpon his aunfwere, he perceyued that he was a man of good experience, and well affected to the feruice of his maiftres, that durft hazard his life in fuch wife to obey her defire. Incontinently maifter Appian delivered vnto him the Duchelfe letter: which when he had read, he retired into his chamber with maifter Appian, hauing his face all bedewed with teares: and becaufe that the letter did import credite, he prayed maifter Appian to declare his charge. Who faid unto him, "My lady the Duchelfe which is at this day the moft af- flicted Princeffe vnder the coape of Heauen, commendeth herfelfe vnto your honour, and doth humbly befech you not to be offended for that at her laft being in Galifia, shee departed withoute accomplishing her promise made vnto you: prayinge you to imput the fault vpon the importunitie of the Duke her husband: whom being constrained to obey, she could not satisfie the good will that she bare vnto you. Then he began to declare in order bowe the Earle of Pancalierfell in loue with her, and not beinge able to obtaine his defire, caufed his nephew to hide him vnder her bede: and how hee had flaine him with his owne handes. Finallye, the
imprisonmente of the Ducheffe, and the iudgemente giuen againste her. Wherat the Lord of Mendoza was greatly aftonned: and when hee had heard the whole discoure, hee began to conceiue some euill opinion of the ducheffe: thinkinge it to be incredible, that the earle of Pancalier woulde fo forget himselfe, as to murder his owne proper nephewe and adopted fonne, to be reuenged of a feely woman. Neuerthelesse, he dissembled that which he thoughte, in the presence of maister Appian, and said vnto him: "Appian my frende, if mine aduerse fortune did not speake sufficiently for me, I could tel thee here a long tale of my miseries: but thou feest into what extremitie I am presentlie reduced, in forte that I am utterly-vnable to succour thy maiftresse, I my selfe still attending the houre of death: and all the pleasures which presentlye I can doe for thee, is to set thee at libertie from the perill prepared for vs." And without longer talke, hee caufed a hot skirmifhe to be giuen to his enemies, to set Appian at large: who being issued forth, made certaine of his men to conduct him to place of furetie. Appian feinge no way for Mendoza to abandon his citie for peril of death prepared for him and his, thoughte his excuse reaforable. And to attempt some other fortune, he vfed fuch diligentie, as he in short time was retourned to Thurin, wher hauing communicated the whole matter to Emilia, she went fraight to the Ducheffe, to whom she said: "Madame, God giue you the grace to be fo constant in your aduersitie, as you have an occasion to be miscontented with the heavy newes that Appian hath brought you." And then she began to recompt vnto her the misfortune of Mendoza, the thraldome wherunto his enemies had brought him, and for conclusion, that there was no hope of helpe to be expected at his handes. Which when the Ducheffe vnderfloode she cryed out: "Oh, poore vnhappy woman, amongste all the moft defolate and sorrowfull: thou mayft well now fay that the lighte of thy life from henceforth beginneth to extinguifhe and growe to an ende: leing the succour of him, vpon whom depended thine affurance, is denied thee. Ah, ingrate knight: now knowe I righte well (but it is to late) that of the extreme loue which I did beare thee, sprong the first roote of all mine euil, which came not by any accident of fortune, but from celestiall dispensation
and deuine prouidence of my God: who now doth permit that mine hipocrifé and counterfaite deuotion shall receive condeigne chastifemente for my sinne.” And then Emilia, seing her so con-founded in teares, said vnto her: “Madame, it doth euil become a greate and wise Princeſfe, (as you hitherto haue euer been reputed) to tormente her selfe, fith that you know howe all the afflictions which we receive from heauen, be but proues of our fidelitie: or as your selfe confeſseth by your complaintes, to bee iuſt punishment for our sinnes. Nowe then be it the one or the other, you ought to be fortified against the hard aflault of your forow: and to remit the whole to the mercie of God, who of his abundant grace, will deliuer you of your trouble, as he hath done many others when they thought thenſfelves forſaken of all helpe, by caufinge certaine droppes of his pitie to raine down vpon them.” “Alas, deare hart,” (quoth the Ducheffe,) “how eaſie a matter it is for one that is hole to comforte her that is sicke: but if thou felteſt my grieſfe thou wouldeft helpe me to complaine: so greuous a matter it is vnto mee, with life to loſe mine honour. And I muſt confeſſe vnto thee, that I suffaine a very cruell aflault both againſte death and life, and I cannot either with the one or with the other, haue peace or tru[e in my felfe. Ne yet do know, how to difſemble my forrowe, but that in the ende the famé will be diſcouered by the fumes of myne ardente fighes, which thinking to conſtraine or retaine, I do noſthinge els but burie my felfe within mine owne bodye: afluringe thee, that greater is one dropp of bloude that swelteth the harte within, then all the teares that maye be wept in the whole life without. Wherefore I pray thee leane mee a litle to complaine my dolor, before I go to the place from whence I shal neuer retorne.” Emilia, that willingly would haue sacrificéd herſelfe to redeeme the Princeſfe from perill, not beinge able anye longer to endure the hard attempte where-with pitie conſtrayned her hart, was forced to goe forth and to withdraw herſelfe into another chamber, where she began to lament after fo fraunge maner, as it seemed that it had been fhee that was defte ned to death. Whileſte these ladies continued thus in their forowes, the knight Mendozza toke no reſt by day or night, ne ceaſſed continually to thincke vpon the diſtreſſe of the
Duchesse. And after that he had well considered the same, hee accused himselfe for sayling her at that greate neede, saying: "Now do I well knowe that I am for euer hereafter utterly vn-worthy to beare armes, or to haue the honourable title of knight, fith the fame order was giuen me, wyth charge to succour afflicted persons, specially Ladies, whose force onely consisteth in teares. And yet neuerthelesse, I (like a caytife) haue fo shamefullye nege-lected my dutye towards the chiefe person of the worlde, to whom I am greatly bounden, as I die a thousand times that day wherein I thincke vpon the fame. It behoueth mee then from henceforth to eftablifhe new lawes to my deliberation, and that I breake the gate of mine auncient rigor: louing much better to die in honour, poore, and disinheritied, than to liue puiffant, vnhappie, and a cowarde. Wherfore let fortune worke her wil: fithens the Duchesse did forfake her countrie, to come to fee me in her prosperitie, I may no leffe do now, but viifte her in her aduerfitie." Pressed and solicited inwardlye with this newe defire, determined what-soever happened to go to her rescue, and hauing giuen order to all that was necessary for the defence of the Citie: putting his confidence in the fidelitie of thofe that were within, caufed all his Captaynes to be called before him: whom hee did to vnder-ftande, how he was determined to go feeke succour, to levie the siege of his enemies. Duringe which time he constituted his nere kinisman, his Liefetenaunte generall, and the nexte morning before the daye appeared hee gaue a great alarme to his enemies, wherein hee escaped vnknownen. Being mounted vpon a Ienet of Spaine and out of daunger, he toke poft horfe, and made such expedition as hee arrived at Lions, where he provided the befte armour that he could get for money, and two excellent good horses, whereof the one was a courfer of Naples. And hauing gotten a certaine unknownen page, toke his waye to Thurin, where beinge arrived, hee lodged in the suburbs, demaunding of his hoft if there dwelt anye Spaniards in the towne, whoe made aunfweare, that hee knewe but one, which was a good olde religious father, that for the space of twentie yeares was never out of Thurin, a man of vertuous life, and welbeloued of all the Citizens, and had the charge of a certaine conuente. Neuerthelesse his lodginge
was aparte from his brethren, to solace himselfe, and to auoide the incommoditie of his age. The knight hauinge learned of his boffe the place wher this good father dwelled, went with diligence betimes in the morning, to see him, and saied vnto him in the Spanish tongue: \"Father, God saue you: I am a Spaniarde comen hither into this country for certaine mine affaires, towrdes whom you mighte doe a charitable deede, if it woulde please you to suffer mee to remayne with you foure or fие dayes onelye, crauninge nothinge els but lodginge: for my servaunte shall prouide for other necessaries.\" Whiche the good father willingly graunted, muche maruellung at his goodlye personage. And whiles the servaunte was gone to the towne to bye victualls, the good father demaunded of him, of what countrye in Spaine hee was, whiche the knighte francklye confesse[d]. And the fatherlye man then hauinge his face all be sprent with teares, sayde: \"Prayfed be the name of God, that he hath giuen mee the grace before I dye, to see so great a Lorde in my poore house, of whom I am both the subjecte and neighbour.\" And then he began to tell him how for deuotion he had forfaken his natie cuntrey and had bestowed himselfe there, the better to withdrawe him from worldly vanitie.

Neuerthelesse he sayd: that he knew his father, his mother, and his groundfather. Desiring him to vse his house at commaundement, where he should be obeyed as if he were in his owne: and then the lord of Mendoza saied vnto him, that he was departed from Spaine of purpos to see Fraunce, and there to make his abode for a time. And that passing by Lions one aduertisef him of the infortunate chaunce of the Duchesse, whom if he thought to be innocent of the crime whereof she was accusat, he would defend her to the sheding of the laft drop of his bloude. Neuertheleffe he would not hazard his life or soule to defend her, if he knew her to be guiltie. Which wordes the good man greatly allowed, sayning vnto him: \"My Lord, touchinge her innocencie, I beleue there is at this day no man lyuing, but herselffe and the Earle, her accufer, that can judge. But one thinge I can well assure you, that wee heere, do deeme her to be one of the beste Princesses, that euer raigned in this cuntrey, specially for that a yeare past she went on foote to S. Iames, with suche devotion and hu-
militie, as there was no man but pitied to see her so mortified for her soules health. ' And to combate with the Earle of Pancalier, you seeme vnto me very yong: for besides the continual exercise that he hath alwayes had in armes, he is withal esteemed to be one of the strongest, readiest, and most redoubted knights of all Lombardie: the victorie notwithstanding is in the hand of God, who can give it to whom he pleaseth: which hee made manifest in the yong infante Dauid, against the monstrous Giante Golias.'

To whome the kynghite aunswered: "Father, I have deuised a waye how to prouide against the scruple of my conscience, touchinge the doubte conceyued by me, whether the combat that I shall take in hande against the earle of Pancalier, be iust or not, which is, that I vnder colour of confession, might vnderstand of the duchesse, the troubl of the matter. And therefere if you thinke good I may caue my head and beard to be shauen, and apparelling my selfe in suche habite as you do weare, we two may easelie (as I thinke) with the leaue of her keepers, go into the Duche's Chamber, to exhorte her to pacience: for about this time of the yeare, the day is expired." Wherunto the good father without any great difficultie, contented, aswell for respeect of his good zeale, as for his reuerent duty to the nobility of the stock whereof he came. And so all things prouided, they wente together towards the castle of the Duche's. And he that had seen the knight Mendoza in his fryer's apparell, would wnethes haue discerned him, to be so great a Lorde as he was: for besides his diuellished gestures and countenaunces, wherwith he knew right wel how to behaue himselfe, he was so leane and poore, aswell for the care of the battell he loft, and overthowe of his people, as for the mishap of the Duche, and the peril of his life at hand, by reason of the combate betweene the Earle and him, as he resembled rather a holy S. Hierome, mortified in some defert, then a Lorde, so noble and valaunt as he was. Arrived at the castell, the olde father addressed himselfe to the guarde and sayd: "Masters, because the time for the death of the miserable duchesse doth approche, we be come hither to geue her suche spirituall comforte, as wherwith God hath inspired vs, hoping that hee will this daye geue vs the grace to induce her to die paciently, to the intent that by losse of the bodye, her soule may be
faucd." Wherunto they accorded willinglye, and caused the chamber to be opened vnto them. They within the chamber went forth incontinently, thinking that the Gouernour had caused the good fathers to come to heare the laft confeffion of the poore Duchefse, who was so forowefull and penfife as she was forced to kepe her bed: which came very well to paffe, for the knight Mendozza, comming neare vnto her bedde, with his face towards her, fo counterfayted hym felfe as he coulde not in any manner of wyfe be knowne. And the good olde father fryer taried in a corner of the chamber a farre of, that he might heare none of their talke: and as the Lorde of Mendozza leaned vpon her bedfyde, he fayde vnto her in the Italian tongue, which was fo familiar to him as the Spanifhe: "Madame, the peace of our Lorde be with you." Wherunto the lady aunfwered: "Father why speake you of peace, fithe I am in continuall warre, depruied of al contentation, and doe but attende the laft end of my calamitie, whiche is a mofte cruell and shamefull death, without defert." And then the Lorde of Mendozza, who had confumed the moft parte of his youthe in good letters, faide vnto her: "I beleue madame you be not ignoraunt howe miferies and tribulations, fall not by accident or fortune, but by the prouidence or dispensa-
tion of God, before whome one little sparrowe onely is not for-
gotten, as the prophete Amos doth manifeffe vnto vs when he fayth: 'there is none euil in the Citie that I haue not fent thither:' whiche is alfo apparaunt in Iob, whome the Deuil could not affliete before he had firft obtayned licence of God. And it is necessafye for you to knowe, that tribulations and afflietion bee tokens of the fore chosen and electe people of God, and the true markes of our faluation: fo that if you confider the order of all the Scriptures, from the beginning of the worlde vntyll this tyme, you fhall fynde that they whome God hath alwayes best loued and cherifhed, he hath comman ded to drinke of the cup of his passion, and to be more afflieted than others: examples whereof be common in the Scriptures. As when Abell was afflieted by Caine his brother, Ifaac by his brother Ifmaell, Iofeph by his brethren, Dauid by Abfolon his fonne, the children of Ifrael (the electe people of God) by Pharao: whiche things beinge pro-
foundlye considered by Sainct Paul, he sayde: 'If we had not an other hope in Iesus Christe, than in the lyfe present, we might well say that we were the most miserable of al others. And yet moreover, faith he, it is little or nothing that we endure, in respect of that which Iesus Christe hath suffered.' Who (although he framed the whole worke of the worlde) was called the Carpenter's fonne, for preaching he was sclaundered, he was caried vp to a mountaine to be throwen down, he was called Glotton, Dronkard, lourer of Publicanes and sinners, Samaritane, Seducer, Diuell: saying, that in the name of Belzebub he did cast out Diuels. But let vs consider, madame, a little further, what things were done vnto him, bee was naked to clothe vs, prifoner and bounde to vnbinde vs from the chain of the Diuell, made a sacrific to cleanse vs of all our inward filth, we doe fee that he suffred his fide to be opened, to close vp hell from vs, we fee his handes whiche in fo comely order made both heauen and earth for the love of vs, pearced with prickinge nailes, his head crowned with three sharped thornes to crowne vs with heauenly glorie. Let vs way that by his dolour came our ioye, our health grew of his infirmitie, of his death was derived our life: and shoulde we be ashamed to haue our head touched with a fewe thornes of trouble? Strengthen your self then (madame) in the name of God, and make you ready to receiue death in the name of him that was not ashamed to indure it for you. Is his strong hande any thing weakened? Is it not in him to ouerthrow the furie of your enemie, and so to humble your aduerfarie that he shall never be able to be relieued? How many poore affliccted perfones haue there bene seene to be abandoned of all succour, whom he hath behelde with his pitifull eye, and restored to greater easie and contentation, then euer they were in before? Learne then from henceforth, to comforte your felle in God, and say as the great doctor holy Ignatius sayd in his Epifle to the Romaines: 'I desire that the fier, the gallowes, the beasles, and all the tormentes of the Diuil might exercize their crueltie vpon me, so as I may haue frution of my Lorde God.'” And after that the knight had made an ende of his consolation, the Ducheffe was so rapte in contentation, as it feemed her soule had already tafted of the celestiall delightes, and would fie euen vp
into heaven. And then feeling her selfe lightened like one that had escaped some furious tempest of the seas, she began to confesse her selfe vnto him from point to point, without omitting any thing of that whiche she thought might greue her conscience. And when she came to the accucation of the Earle, she prayed God not to pardon her sinnes, if she had committed in deed or thought, any thing contrarie to the dutie of marriage, except it were one dishonest affection that she had borne to a knight of Spaine, whom vnder pretence of a fained devotion she had visited in Spayne, not committing any thing sauing good will whiche she bare vnto him. "Which maketh me think (quod she) that God being moued against myne hypocrisie, hath permitted this false accucation to be rayed against me by the Earle of Pancalier, whiche I will pacientely suffer, fithe his will is so." Her confession finished, she plucked of a rich diamond from her finger, saying: "Good father, albeit I haue heretofore bene a riche Princeffe, as you knowe, yet nowe myne enimies have taken awaye all my goodes from me (this diamond except) which my brother the kyng of Englande gaue me, when I was married to the Duke of Sauoie. And because I can not otherwise doe you good, I geue it vnto you, praying you to remember me in your prayers, and to kepe it for my sake: for it is of a greater price then you thinke, and may serue one daie to supply the necessitie of your contenent." The confession ended and the diamond receivd, the two friers retournd home to their contenent. And so sone as they were arriued there, the Lorde of Mendoza saide vnto hym: "Father, nowe doe I know certeinly, that this poore woman is innocent, wherefore I am refolued to defende her so long as life doth last. And I feele my selfe so touched and pressed in mynde, as I thinke it long till I be at the combat. Wherefore I praye you if it chaunce that fortune be contrary vnto me, after my death, make it to be openly knowen what I am, and chiefly that the Duchesse may vnderstande it, for speciall purpole. And if it fortune that I escape with life (which can not be but by the death of the Earle) be secrete vnto me in these things which I have declared vnder the vayle of confession." The good father promised so to doe. And
having pafted all that day and night in prayers and supplications, he armed himselfe, and made ready his courfer. And when the dawning of the daye began to appeare, he went in his armour to the gates of the Citie, and calling one of the Guarde, he sayd vn
to him: "Good fellowe, I pray thee bidde the Counte of Pancalier to prepare him selfe, to maintaine the false accusation, which he hath falsely forged againft the Ducheffe of Sauoie. And further tell him, that there is a knight here, that will make him to deny his horrible vilany before hee parte the fiede, and will in the presence of all the people cut out that periured toung, which durft commit fuch treafon against an innocent Princeffe." This matter was in a moment publifhed throughout all the citie, in fuch forte, as you might haue sene the churches full of men and women, praying to God for the redemption of their maiftrefse. During the time that the guarde had done his ambaffage, the Lord of Mendoza went towards the piller where the accusation was written, attending when the accufer should come forth. The Earle of Pancalier advertifed herof, began incontinentely to feele a certaine remorfe of conscience, which inwardly gript hym so nere, as he endured a torment lyke to very death. And being vnable to difcharge him-
selvtherof, would willingly haue wiified that he had neuer attempted the difhonour of the Lady. Neuertheleffe that he might not feeme fackle in that he had begonne, he sent woord to the knight, that he shoulde write his name vppon the piller, to whom Mendoza made aunfwer, that he might not know his name, but the combat he would make him feele before the daye went downe. The Earle of Pancalier made diicultie of the combat, if firfte he knewe not the name of hym with whom he shoulde haue to doe. The matter well aduifed, it was clearely resolued by the Judges, that the statues made no mention of the name, and therefore he was not bounde thereunto, but that the statute did expressly fauour the defendant, going vnfo to him the election of the armour, and sem-
blablie it was requisite that the perfone accused shoulde be brought forth in the presence of the twoo Champions. Which things understood by the Earle, albeit that he trusted not his quarell, yet making a vertue of necessitie, and not vnlearned in the order of fuch conflitcs, forthwith armed hymselfe, and came
into the place ordanyned for the campe, where he founde his enemy armed in a black armour, in token of mourning. Imme-
diately after they sent for the Duchesse, who ignoraunt of the matter wondered much when she vnderstode that there was a knight in the field all armed in black, seming to be a noble man, that promisde some great matter by his dexterity and bolde counetance, and would also mainteine against the Earle of Pance-
calier his accuation to be false. The poore Duchesse then not being able to imagine what he shoule be, greatly troubled in mind, and comming forth of the Castel was conducted in a litter couered with black cloth, accompanied with more then two hun-
dreth ladies and damfels, in semblable attire vnto the place where the Judges, the people and the two knightes were, who did but attend her comming. And after they had wayted her going vp to a little stage ordainyd for that purpofe, the Deputies for the as-
surance of the campe, demanded of her thefe wordes, saying: "Madam, for that you be accused of adulterie by the Earle of Pancalier here present, and the custome requireth that you pre-
sent a Knight within the yeare and daye, by force of armes to trye your right: are you determined to accepte him that is here pre-
sent, and to repose your felfe vpon him, both for your fault and innocencie?" The Duchesse aunfwered: that fhee committed all her right into the mercie of God, who knew the inwarde thoughtes of her harte, and to the manhode of the knight, albeit she thought that she had neuer seen him. And when she had ended those woordes, she fell downe vppon her knees, then lifting vp her eyes all blubbered with teares towards heauen, she prayed: "O Lorde God, which art the very veritie it self, and knowest the bytternesse that I fele in my harte, to see my self falsely accused, shew forth now the treASURE of thy grace vpon me wretched Princefle: and as thou diddest deliuer Sufanna from her trouble, and Judith from Holofernes, deliuer me from the hande of a tiraunt: who like a lion hungrie for my bloud, deuoureth both myne honour and life." And having made an ende of her prayer, shee remained vnmoveable as if shee had bene in a trauance. And nowe the knight Mendoza, offended to see the Earle to prauance his horfe vp and downe the campe, making him to vaut and leape, with a
countenaunce very furious sayd vnto him: "Traytour Counte, because I am certayne that the accuation which thou haft forged against this Princefse, is inuented by the greatest villany of the world, I do maintaine here before al the people, that thou haft falsly accused her, and that thou liest in thy throte, in all that thou haft contribuied against her, and that thou hafte deferued to bee put into a facke, to bee caste into the River for the murder that thou haft committed vpon thy Nephewe, the innocent bloud of whom doth nowe crie for vengeance to be taken for thy fynne before God." And scarce had he made an ende of his woordes but the Earle aunswered him with a maru 일을ous audacitie: "Infamous villain, which hideft thy name for feare left thy vices should be known, thou arte nowe fouly deceiued by thinking to warrant her, who hath offended against the Duke her hufbande, by her whoredome and adulterie: and for that thou haft parled fo proudly, and wilt not be known, I can not other-wyse thinke but that thou art some one of her ruffians: and therefore I doe maintaine, that thou thy felfe doest lie, and that thou defereuest to be burnt in the fame fire with her, or els to be drawn with foure hores by the croffe pathes of this towne, to ferue for an example in the worlds to come, not onely for all lafcious Ladies and Damfels, but also for fuch abominable whoremongers, as be lyke thy felfe." Incontinently after, the Harraulde of armes began to make the accustomed crie, and the Knightes to put their launces in their reftes: they let run their hores with such violece, as ioyning together their shields, their bodies and heads, they brake their ftaues, even to their Gauntlets, so roughly, as they fel both down to the ground without lofing, neverthelef, the raines of the bridles. But the heate of the harte, and defire to vanquifhe, made them ready to get vp againe, and hauing cast away the troncheons of their ftaues, layd handes on their swordes, and there began fo fraunge and cruell a flourre betwene them, as they which were the beholders were affrighted to fee them able to endure fo much: for they were fo fleshed one vpon another, and did fo thicke bestowe their frokes without breathing, as the lookers on confessed neuer to haue scene any combat in Piemonte betwene twoo fingle
persons, so furious, nor better followed then that of the Earle and of the knight Mendoza. But the Spanishe knight encouraged with the Iustice of his quarell, and the rewarde of his fight, seemed to redouble his force: for euen when euer man thought that power must needes fayle him, it was the houre wherein he did beft behaue himfelfe. In such fort, as his enemy not being able any longer to futeine his puiffaunt frokes, being wounded in diuers partes of his bodye, did nowe no more but defende himfelfe, and beare of the blowes which were bestowed vpon hym without intermiſſion: whiche the Spanishe knight perceiuing, defirous to make an ende of the combat, made fo full a blowe with all his force vpon the top of his helmet, as he wounded his head very fore. Wherewithall the harte of the Earle began very muche to faint, and staggering here and there like a dronken man or troubled in his fenfes, was conſtrained to fall downe from his horſe: and then the Lorde of Mendoza difmounting him felfe, and takyng holde vpon the corps of his shield, plucked it fo rudely to him, as he ouerturned him on his other fyde. Then with the pomell of his fword he did fo fweetely bumbata him, as he made his helmet to flye of his head: and fetting his fooe vpon his throte, made as though with the point of his fwearde he woulde haue killed hym, faying: "Counte, the houre is now come that thou muſt goe make an accompt with God of thine vntrouth and treaſon which thou haft committed against the Ducheffe." "Ah, fir knight (quoſth the Earle) haue pitie vpon me, and kil me not I befche thee, before I haue a little bethought me of my confcience." "Villaine (quoſth the Spaniard) if I had any hope of thine amendement, I would willingly gene thee dalay of life: but being a traytour as thou art, thou wilt neuer ceaſſe to afflicte innocentes. Neuertheleſſe if thou wilt acknowledge thy fault publikely, and require pardon of the Ducheffe, I wil willingly leaue thee to the mercy of the Duke, although that if I did obſerve the rigour of the lawe, I should cauſe the prefently to receiue the payne prepared for the Ducheffe." To whom he obedied for safegarde of his life, and kneeling on his knees before the Ducheffe in the preſence of al the people, made a long difcourſe of his loue towards her, of the repulſe that
she gaue him, and that for reuenge, he ayded him self with his nephewe, thinking to ouerthrowe her chaflitie. Finally, howe he had flayne his Nephewe, to induce the Duke to iudge her to be culpable of the adulterie. And then tourning his face to-wardes the Ducheffe, sayde vnto her: "Madame it behoueth me to confeffe that the losse of this one life is to litle to paye the tribute of the curelesse faulte that I haue committed againft you. Yet fithe it is fo, I befeche you by preferring pitie and mercy before the rigor of your iustice, you will permit that I may liue yet certayn dayes to make a view of my life past, and to prouide for the scruple of my confeience." Then new ioye approched to garnifhe the spirite of the Ducheffe, and both the soule and the harte began to shewe theim felues joyful, in such wyse, as she was a long tyme without power to speake, and did nothing els but ioyne her handes and lifte vp her eyes to heauen, saying: "O Lorde God, prayfed he thy holy name, for that thou haft caufed the bright beames of thy diuinitie, to flyne vpon the darkenesse of my sorrowfull life, enforcing fo well the mynde of this traytour the murderer of mine honour by the prickes of thy rigorous iustice, openly to acknowledge before all men, the iniurie that he hath done me." And without speaking any more wordes, she torned her face for feare left she should make him any other aunfwere. Then all the people began to laude and magnifie God, and to sing pſalmes for ioye of the deliueaunce of their Ducheffe, who was brought backe and recondu6led into the Citie, with fo great triumpe, as if she had made a feconde entrie. Whileſt these things were adoing, the Deputies for the suretie of the campe cauſed the wounded Earle to be borne to pryfon. The knight Mendoza faile secretly awaye, and after that he had in the next village dresſed certaine small woundes that he had receiued in the combat, he toke his way into Spain. In the meane time, the Ducheffe cauſed him to be fough for in every place, but it was not poſſible to know any more newes of him, than if he had ben neuer feene. Whereat being grieued beyond meafeure, she made her mone to Emilia, to know where-fore he shoule fo abfent himſelf from her. "Madame (quoth Emilia,) he is sure some French knight, or els it may be some
kinsman of your own, that is come out of England into these partes for certayne other affaires: and fearing leaft he should bee staied here, will not be knowen, referuing the manifestation of himself till an other tyme more apte for his purpose.” “Let him bee what he may bee (sayde the Duchesse) for so long as my soule shall remayne within this bodye, I wyll doe hym homage during life: for the whiche I am so duelye bounde debtour vnsto him, as neuer subieete was to his soueraigne Lorde.” In this tyme whyleft thefe matters went thus at Thurin, the Duke of Sauoie, the Lieuten-ant generall for the king against the Almaines, encountuiring with his enemies in a skirmiſhe, by fortune was slayne: whereof the king of England being aduertifed, and specially of the deluierie of his fyfter, desirous to haue her about him, fente for her to marrie her agayne, and to leaue vnsto her the entier gournement of his householde: and to gratifie her at her firſte arriuall, he gaue the rule of his daughter vnsto her, which was of the age of fixtene or feuentene yeares, with whom by certayne meanes there was a mariage practized for the Prince of Spayne. Let vs now leaue the Duchesse to liue in honor with her brother, and retorne we to the Lorde of Mendozza, who being arriued neere vnsto his Citie, vnderſtode incontinently that they which had beſedged it had leuied their campe. For that they of the towne had fo well done their endeauour as not onely their enemies were not able to enter, but also they had in a certain ſkirmiſhe taken the Lord Ladolpho their chieſtaine prifoner, who was yet to that prefent detained: becaufe meanes were made for peace to be con-cluded on al fides: neuertheleſſe they durſt doe nothing without hym: whereat the Lorde of Mendozza beyng replenyſhed with greate joye to fee his affaires prosper fo well in all partes, entred the Citie: and the articles of the peace communicated vnsto him, hee founde them verie profitable for him: and being concluded and approved by him he began to folace himſelſe in his owne houſe, without taking care for any thing faue onely from thence-forth to thinke by what meane he might goe to fee the Duchesse, and recount vnsto her the ifſue of his affaires. But fortune prepaed him a more readie occasion than he thought of: for the kyng of Spaine being aduertifed of certaine talkes that had bene
bruted of the mariage of his sonne with the daughter of the king of Engelande, determined with speed to send a great company of noble men thither, to demande his daughter in mariage: of the which the Lorde of Mendoza, as well for his nobilitie, as for the knowledge he had in languages and other good disciplines, was elected chiefe, with speciall comission to accorde the mariage in case it should so please the kyng. The Ambassadours vfed suche expedition, that they arrived at London, where the kyng for that prefente made his abode: who aduertised of their comming, gaue commandement to the Princeffe his daughter, and to the Duchesse his fitter, to prepare them selues to receyue a great companye of Lords of Spayne, whiche that daye would come to his Courte to treate of the aforesayde mariage. And God knoweth if the ladies spared oughte of that, whiche they thought might augmente their beautie. The king also for his part, to doe them more honour, wente to meete them in person, and at their arrivall, gaue them a moite friendly welcome: but sodaynly as they presented them-selues to doe their reverence to the ladies, the Duchesse who incontinently knew the Lord of Mendoza, began so to deteste him as she was not able to rule her selfe, but (with a sodayne mutation of colour) she abandoned the company: the Lorde of Mendoza knowynge the originall of her grieue, lefte not his dutie undone towards the Princeffe and other ladyes which accompanied her, dissembling to have taken no regard to the absence of the Duchesse. And Emilia, who had followed her mistresse into the chambre, fearynge leaft there were some sodaine mischance happened, demaunded of her, wherfore she was retired from a company to honourable: and sayd that she did great wrong to her owne estimation: to whom the Duchesse (with extreme cholera) made aunswer: "Why Emilia, thinkest thou that I haue the harte to suffer my hand to be kis'd by that most trayterous and moiste cowardly knight of the world, who made no conscience to abandon me in the greatest necessitie of my life? where as I, contrary to the dutie of all the lawes of honour, and contrary to my sexe, did so muche abase my selfe as to viste hym in Spayne. Nayre rather my dayes shall ceasse their course than myne affection shall euer reuie in him: he shall neuer receiue any other
favour of me, but as of his most cruel and mortall enemy." And then Emilia smiling, sayd vnto her: "In good earnest, madame, I thought that the sharpeneffe of your imprisonement, with the other tormentes past, whiche you indued, might haue put all these matters quite in oblivion, and woulde fo haue mortified you, that you had wholly loft all desire of revenge: but so farre as I can perceiue, I am deceiued of mine accomplte, feying that sodaynly fo soone as you behelde the knight Mendoza, you began to flie, as if your ghostly enimie had come before you, in his most hideous and horrible forme." Yet could not Emilia perfwade her, to flewe her selfe abroade before dynner, tyll the king fent for her, with woorde that if she came not, he would himselfe fetche her. And then a little shamefaft colour began to renew her alabafter cheekes, which rendred her fo ruddye and fayre, as the Spanyards confessed neuer to haue seene in any parte of the worlde, where they had bene, one fo faire and beauti-full a wydow. The tables couered for dynner, the king tooke his place, and for their more honourable entertainement, caufed them to be fet at his owne table: and made the Lorde of Men- dozza to be placed right ouer against the Duchesse his fister: who was fo inflamed and moued with choler, as fhee dufte not lift vp her eyes for feare leafe vpon the sodayne she should bee percey-ued: whiche eyes sparkeling sometymes with greate yre, re-sembled properlye twoo fтарres of the night, that fhoote forth their brightneffe vpon the earth, when all thinges be in silence. And all this tyme the Lorde of Mendoza conceyued suche pleasure at thefet pretie toyes, as he would not haue chaunged his joy for the beft Cittie in all Englaende: and as the Duchesse in this order did firmeely fix her eyes, fhee fawe by fortune a ryche diamonde that Mendoza ware vpon his finger, wherupon having oftentimes cafte her eyes, fhee sodaynly knew that it was the very same that fhee had geuen to the good father that confessed her at Thurin, the daye before fhee was leadde to the Piller, and began then to imagine with her felfe, how it micht be that he could come by the same: and not knowing what to faye, immediatly after fhee had dyned and the tables taken vp, fhee caufed maifter Appian her Phifitian to be called vnto her: whome fhee defyred to know
of the Lord of Mendoza, by what means he came by the Diamonde
that he ware vpon his finger: which Appian did. And after he
had talked with the knight of certain common matters, he sayde
"My Lorde, you haue a very fayre Diamonde there,
whiche as I thinke I haue fene before this tyme, wherefore sir I
praye you tel me where you had it." To whom the Lorde of
Mendoza answered in laughing wise: "Maister Appian, where
I had the ring, is to secret for you to know, but tell my lady the
Duchesse, that the knowledge thereof onely appertayneth vnto
her." Whiche answere Appian declared to the Duchesse: and
albeit that she tooke no great pleasure in the aunswers, yet
neuertheless very defyrous to vnderstande the truth, she repayred
to the Knight whiche the fame time walked alone in a Gallerie,who
after he had kyfled her handes, began to discouffe of his fortunes
paft, declaring vnto her, that he repentted of the refuall that he
made to maister Appian for her succour, and howe within a while
after he rode to Thurin: adding the deuife whereby he had heard
her confession, and how the Diamonde came into his handes,
putting her in remembrancc from worde to worde, of all his
talke with her, during the tyme that he was in frier's weede, then
finally his victorie against the Earle, his secret flyght, and all the
whole as before hath bene declared. Whereat the Duchesse no
leffe abashed than rapt with ioy and admiration, fel downe in a
swoune betwene his armes, holding her mouth fo fafte closed
against his, that it seemed she would drawe the foule out of his
bodye, to ioyne and vnite with her's: and after she had remayned
a whyle in this tranunce, shee cried out: "O poore harte so long
tyme plagued, whiche haft for the space of a yeare nowe paffed,
bene toffed with fo many tempestes and diuers affaultes of for-
tune: receive at this prefent the medicine apt for thy health,
fithens thou enioyest him betwene thine armes, that by the pryce
of his blood, valiant force and extreme trauiles, hath rafed thee
from death to life: let fortune from henceforth doe her will in that
she is able to deuife against me: and yet wyll I, for this onely
benefite, confesse my selfe this daye to be eternally bounde vnto
her." "Madame (quod the knight) I pray you let vs not renewe
the memorie of our former grieues: wherein, if by any meane I
haue done you good, I was but the organe or instrumente thereof: for God, who is the righter of all wrong, did neuer suffer justice without his due acqüitall, howe long so euer he taried. So (you not beyng in any wyse culpable) if I haue neuer enterpryféd the combate whereunto I was bounde, our Lorde God would haue rayfed some other to achieue the fame.” “Well then my Lord, (quoth the Duchesse) fithens it pleafeth you not, that I renewe my dolours past, which have taken ende by your meane, I shal humbly beleche you to excuse mee, if this daye I haue not geuen you that honour and good entertainement whiche you defuered: affuring you that before you shall departe this countrey, I wyll make you amendes according vnto your own difcretion.” “Madame, (quod the knyght) for all the wronges that euer you did vnto me, (if they may be called wronges) the curtefie, favoure and gentlenesse which alreadie I haue receiued, doth at one instant requite and recom pense. Neuerthelesse if it may pleafe you to receyue me for your seconde hufbande, fithe it hath pleafed God to call your first out of this lyfe into an other: that is and shal bee the fulnesse of all the felicitie that I looke for in this worlde.” “My Lorde Mendoza, (layd the Duchesse) the recompe f汝e whiche you demaunde of me, is very little in reſpect of the amendes and fatisfacion whiche I ought to make you. But of one thing I can well affure you, that if I had the whole world at my com maundement, and that I were the greatest Princeffe of the earth, in all kinde of beauties and giftes of grace, I would willingly sub mitte my felf vnto you, in confideration of your worthineffe, and benefits bestowed vpon me with fo willing a minde, as presently I do yeſde vnto your request: and I must nedes confesse, that I am now greatly bounde to fortune, that hath deliered me into your handes, from whome I hope never to be feuered fo long as my foule shall reſte within my body: being predefinated as I beleue to no other ende but to feue and obey you.” And as they thought to make a louger discourse of their talke, Emilia told them that the king was in counfell, and that the other Lordes of Spaine attended his comming: who with his company being come before the king, and hauing done their reuerence vnto him, he began to declare his charge, and how they were of purpoſe
fente to his maieftie in the behalfe of the king of Spaine, to demande the Lady his daughter in mariage, for his fonne the Prince of Spaine: which he had chofen afwel to haue his alliance (a matter by him only defired) as for the beautie and good grace, for the which she was specially recommended. And if fo bee, he had willed to haue chofen his matche els where, that there was not at that day any Prince in al Europa, that woulde not willingly haue accorded vnto him. To whom the king answered: "My frendes, I feele my felfe fo much honored, for that it hath pleasfed the king to fend vnto me, as if he had not preuented me, I had thought to haue fent vnto him for the fame purpofe. And albeit that herein he hath vanquished me in ciuilite and courtefe, yet I will not faile if I can to furmount him in amitie. For he hath bound me during life, in fuch wife as he, and my Lord his fonne, may boldly vaunt themfelves to haue a king of England and a realtime from henceforth at their commaundement." The mariage concluded, the Ducheffe diligentlye made fute to talke with the king alone, to communicate vnto him the agreement betwene the Lord of Mendoza and her. And perceiuing that the king was gone into his chamber, she went vnto him, and being alone with him, hauing her face al bedewed with teares, kneeling, she faid vnto him: "My Lord, when I confider my miseries past, and the cruell affaultes that I haue receiued of fortune, being not onely committed to the mercy of a mofte cruell prifon, but (which is more) at the very laft point of a shamefull death, I am fo afflicted, that the onely remembrance of thofe miseries terrifieth me, and caufeth a certaine extreme bitterness to rife in my hart. And when on the other fide, I thinke of the great goodneffe that Almighty God hath shewed vnto me, by fretching forth his mighty hand to deliuer me out of that perill, chieflie to make mee triumphe over the death of mine enemy: I feele fuch comforte of minde as all the delightes of the world be but griefes, in respect of the ioye, pleaffeure and contentacion that I receive: wherein nothing offendeth me fo much as hetherto that I haue not acknowledged the benefit receiued of him, who was electe of God to be my deliuerer: neuertheleffe Sir, by your onely word, you may both satisfie him, and content mee, yea and (as it were) prolong the
dayes of my life." The king, who loued his sister no leffe than his daughter, seeing her pitifull complainte and teares, and to speake with such affection, toke her vppe, and holdinge her by the arme, faid vnto her: "Deare sister and frende, if I have not to this present satisfied him that was the caufe of your deliueraunce, I cannot be accused of ingratitude, for that hitherto I haue not known him, ne yet your selfe doth knowe what he is, (as you haue oftentimes tolde me:) but of one thing you maye be assur'd, and I fware vnto you at this present, by my Scepter, that fo done as I shall vnderstande what he is, I will vse him in such wise as he shall thincke himselfe satisfied and contented, though' it did coste me the one halfe of my kingdome: for the pleasure which he hath done vnto you bindeth not you alone, but mee also, to be partaker of that band, both our honours being jointly bound thereunto." "Alas, my Lord, (faid the Duchesse) it is the knighte Mendoza, chiefe of this ambaßade, to whom, if it please you to giue your consent that we two might marrie, all auncient bands and deites shal remain extinct, and so by a smal reward you shal restore life to two perfons, almost dead, for the excesstue love which one beareth the other." And therewithal she began to declare to the king, thoriginal and processe of the whole discouer. Firft, the voyage of the sister of Mendoza into Piemont: her owne peregrination to S. Iames, the honest amitie betweene her and Mendoza, the message of maister Appian to Mendoza, his refufall of that request, his retorne after to Thurin, her confession, the Diamonde knowen againe, finally, how all the whole had passed betwene them: the counterfaite devotion to Sainct Iames onelye referued, which, for her honour's sake, shee would not tell him. The kinge understanding this straunage discouer, was so rapte with ioye and appalled with gladnesse, as hee could not for a longe time make any aunfwere. When his paffion was moderated, hee faid to his sister: "But be you well assured, that hee will receiue you for his wyfe." "Yea, my Lord, (quoth shee) I ought well to be assured of it, since he himselfe hath made the requeste." "And truly, (quoth the kinge) God forbidde that I should be the cause to breake so holy an accorde: for if the Lorde of Mendoza were inferior in qualitie, nobility, and goods, than hee is: yet
hath hee so much done both for you and mee, as we may not honeflie refuse him. Howe much more then be we bounde to him: being a greate Lorde as hee is, issued of noble and famous families of Spaine, rich in goodes, and hauinge hazarded his life for the conseruation of your honour: and therewithall seeketh mine alliaunce. Goe your wayes, (dere fister and frend) goe your wayes, make much of him, and entreate him as you thincke beft. And when I haue walked two or three tornes here, I will come vnto him, to communicate more amplie of these matters.” Scarce had the Ducheffe leyfure to auertife the Lorde of Mendoza of that which was concluded betweene the kinge and her, but he came downe into the hall, where the mofte parte of the Spanifhe gentlemen walked, and with a very ioyfull countenaunce wente to the knight. To whom hee said: “My Lorde Mendoza, I praye you to embrace mee: for so farre as I see, I haue a better intereite in you than I thought.” And the Lorde of Mendoza thinking to embrace him, his knee vpon the ground, was immediately defired to f tand vp, Whom the kinge sleeping aboute the necke, faide vnto him so loude as euerye man mighte heare: “Sir knighte, by the God of Heauen, since that I might com maunde in the realme of Englande, I haue not entertayned Gentleman nor Prince, to whom I have bin more endebted than to you: nor neuer was there any dearer vnto mee than you, for the greate gratitude and kindneffe, wherewith you haue bound me, and wherby I shal not from henceforth be satiﬁed, vntil I haue in some thinge acknowledged the bonde wherein I am bounde vnto you.” When hee had spoken theоф woordes, hee began to declare from point to point, in the presence of all the afsemblie, the conten tes of the whole before declared historie. Whereat there was none in all the company, but was greatly astonned at the prudence of Mendoza, by so well difsembling, and accomplishing so great enterprifes, without making them manifeft. And the king of Englande commaunded that the mariadge of him and his fister shoulde be publisht through out his realme, that all his nobilitie might be afsembled. And for his greater honour, the kinge did from henceforth conﬁtute him his high Conftable of England, and repofed himselfe in him, as vpon a firme pillar, for the ad-
ministration of the wayghtieft affairs of his realme. The mariaige
solempnized and confummate with the Duchesse, he retourned into Spaine, to accompanye the Prince into England,
whose mariaige was celebrated at London, with the
king of England's daughter, in such pompe
and solempnitude, as semblable Princes be
commonlie accustomed to do in
such like cases.
A King of England loued the daughter of one of his noble men, which was Countesse of Salesburie, who after great fute to atchieue that he could not winne, for the entire loue he bare her, and her greate constancie, hee made her his queene and wife.

This historic enuinge, describing the perfect figure of womanhode, the naturall qualitie of loue incensinge the hartes indifferentlye of all nature's children, the lively image of a good conditioned Prince, the zealous loue of parentes and the glorious reward that chafftie conducteth to her imbracers, I deeme worthie to be annexed to the former Nouell, wherein as you haue hearde, bee contayned the straunge adventures of a fayre and innocente Duchesse: whose life tried like gould in the fornace, glittereth at this daye like a bright farry planet, shining in the firmament with most splendent brightnesse aboue all the rest, to the eternal prayse of feminine kinde. And as a noble man of Spaine, by heate of Loue's rage, purfued the louinge trace of a king of England's fister: even so a renowned and most victorious Prince (as the Auctour of them both affirmeth) thorow the furie of that passion, which (as Apuleus sayth) in the firfte heate is but small, but aboundinge by increafe, doth fet all men on fier, maketh earnest fute by discource of wordes to a Lady herselfe, a Countesse, and Earle's daughter, a beautifull and faire wighte, a creature incomparable, the wife of a noble man his own subieft: who seing her constante forte to be impregnable, after pleauntes fute and milde requefte, attempteth by undermining to inuade, and when with fiege prolix,e bee perceiueth no ingenious devise can atchieue that long and painfull worke, he threateth mighte and maine, dire and cruell assaults, to winne and gette the same: and lasie of all surrendred into his hands, and the prifoner cryinge for mercie, he mercifully is contented to mitigate his conceyued rigour, and pitifully to releafe the Lady, whom for her womanlye stoutnesse and coragious constancie hee imbraceth and entertayneth for his owne. This greate and worthy king, by the
first viewe of a delicate Ladie, thorowe the fappe of loue soaked into his noble harte, was transported into manye passions, and rapte with infinite pangues, which afterwards bredd him great disquietnes. This worthie Prince (I say) who before that time like an Alexander, was able to conquer and gain whole kingdoms, and made all Fraunce to quake for feare, at whose approch the gates of euery Citie did flie open, and fame of him prouoked each Frenchman's knee to bowe, whose helmet was made of manhods trampe, and mace well steeled with floute attemptes, was by the weakeft staye of dame Nature's frame, a woman (shaped with no vifage sterne or vglie loke) affrighted and appalled: whose harte was armed with no lethal sworde or deadly launce, but with a curat of honour and weapon of womanhode, and for all his glorious conquests, the durst by singuler combat to glie refuflall to his face: which singuler perfeueration in defence of her chastitie inexpugnable, esclarifheth to the whole flocke of womankinde the brighte beames of wisdome, vertue and honestie. No prayers, intreatie, fuplication, teares, fobbes, fighes, or other like humaine actions, poured forth of a PrincefTe hart, could withdrawe her from the boundes of honestie. No promife, prefent, praftife, defuife, fute, freinde, parent, letter or counfellour, could make her to fray oue of the limits of vertue. No threate, menace, rigour, feare, punifhmente, exile, terror, or other crueltie, could diuert her from the fiege of confancie. In her youthly time till her mariage day, shee delighted in virginitie: from her mariage day during her widow state, shee rejoyfed in chastity: the one shee conferred like a hardie Cloelia, the other shee kept like a confant Panthea. This notable historie therfore I haue purposed to make common, aswel for encouragement of Ladies to imbrace confancie, as to imbolden them in the refufl of dishonest futes, for which if they do not acquire feemblable honour, as this Lady did, yet they shall not be frustrate of the due reward incidente to honour, which is fame and immortall prayfe. Gentlemen may leurre by the succeffe of this discouerfe, what tormentes be in Loue, what trauailes in purfute, what passions like ague fittes, what disconueniences, what lofte labour, what plaints, what
griefes: what unnaturally attemptes be forced. Many other notorious examples be contained in the same, to the greate comforte and pleasure as I trut, of the well aduised reader: and although the auctour of the same, perchaunce hath not rightlye touched the proper names of the aucthors of this tragedie, by perfecke appellations: as Edward the third for his eldest sonne Edward the Prince of Wales (who as I read in Fabian) married the Countesse of Salesburie, which before was Countesse of Kent, and wife vnsto fir Thomas Holland: and whose name, (as Polidore sayth) was Iane, daughter to Edmond Earle of Kent, of whom the same Prince Edward begat Edward that died in his childifh yeres, and Richard that afterwards was king of England the second of that name, and for that she was kin to him, was deuorced: whose sayde father married Philip, daughter to the earle of Henault, and had by her vii. sonnes: and Ælips for the name of the sayde Countesse, being none suche amoges our vulgar termes, but Frofard remembreth her name to be Alice, which in deede is common amonges vs: and the Castell of Salesburie, where there is none by that name, vpon the frontiers of Scotlant, albeit the same Frofard doth make mention of a castell of the Earle of Salesburie’s, giuen vnsto him by Edward the third when he was fir William Montague and married the saiide Lady Alice for his seruice and prouewe against the Scottes: and Rofamburghe for Roxborough: and that the saiide Edwarde when hee saw that hee could not by loue and other perfwafions attaine the Countesse but by force, married the same Countesse, which is altogether vntrue, for that Polydore and other aucthors do remember but one wife that hee had, which was the sayde vertuous Queene Philip, with other like defaults: yet the grace of the historie for all thowe errours is not diminifhed. Whereof I thoughte good to giue this aduertifemente: and waying with my selfe that by the publishing hereof no dishonour can dedounde to the illustre race of our noble kinges and Princes, ne yet to the blemifhinge of the same of that noble kinge, eternized for his victories and vertues in the auncient Annales, Chronicles and Monuments, forren and domesticall, (because all nature’s children be thrall and subiecte to the infirmities of their first parentes,) I do
with submission humblie referre the same to the judgement and correction of them, to whom it shall appertaine: which being considered, the Nouell doth begin in this forme and order.

There was a kinge of Englande named Edwarde, which had to his first wyfe the daughter of the Counte of Henault of whom hee had children, the eldest whereof was called also Edward, the renowned Prince of Wales, who besides Poitiers subdued the Frenchmen, toke Iohn the French king prifoner, and sent him into England. This Edwarde father of the Prince of Wales, was not only a capittall enemie of the Frenchmen, but also had continual warres with the Scottes his neighbours, and seing himself so disquieted on every side, ordayned for his Lieutenant vpon the frontiers of Scotland, one of his Captaynes, named William, Lord Montague: to whom because he had fortified Roxborough, and addredded many enterprizes against the enemies, he gaue the Earle-dome of Sarisburie, and maried him honourable with one of the fairest Ladies of England. Certaine dayes after, kinge Edward sent him into Flauders, in the companie of the Earle of Suffolke, where fortune was so contrarie, as they were both taken prifoners, by the Frenchmen, and sente to the Louure at Paris. The Scottes hearing tell of their discomfiture, and how the marches were delittute of a gouernour, they speedely sente thether an armie, with intente to take the Countesse prifoner, to rafe her Castle, and to make bootie of the riches that was there. But the Earle of Sarisburie before his departure, had giuen so good order, that their success was not such as they hoped: for they wer so lively repelled by them that wer within, as not able to endure their furie, in speed of making their approches, they were constrayned to go further of. And hauinge intelligence by certaine spyes, that the king of England was departed from London, with a great armie, to come to succour the Countesse, perceyuing that a farre of, they were able to do little good, they were faine shortly to retire home again to their shame. King Edward departed from London, trauayling by great iournyes with his armye towards Sarisburie, was aduertized, that the Scottes were difcamped, and fled againe into Scotland. Albeit they had so spoyled the castle in manye places, as the markes gaue sufficiencte witnesse, what their intente
and meaning was. And although the kinge had thoughte to retourne backe againe vppon their retir, yet being advertized of the great battrie, and of the hotte assault they had giuen to the Caftell, he went foorth to vist the place. The Countesse whose name was Ælips, vnderstanding of the kinge's comming, causyng all things to bee in so good readinesse, as the shortnesse of the time could ferue, furnysshed her felle so well as shee could with a certayne number of Gentlewomen and Souldiours that remained, to issue forth to meete the king, who besides her natural beautie, for the which she was recommended aboue all the Ladies of her prouince, was enriched with the furniture of vertue and curtesie, which made her so incomparable, that at one infante, she rauished the hartes of all the Princes and Lordes that did behold her, in fuch wife, as there was no talke in all the armie but of her graces and vertue, and specially of her excellent and furpaffing beauty. The kinge hauyng made reuerence vnfo her, after hee had well viewed all her gestures and countenaunces, thoughte that hee had never seen a more goodlier creature. Then rapte with an incredible admiration he said vnfo her: "Madame Countesse, I do beleue, that if in this attire and furniture wherein you now be, accompanied with so rare and excellent beautie, ye had beene placed vppon one of the rampiers of your Caftell, you had made more breaches with the lokes and beames of your sparkling eyes, in the hartes of your ennemyes, than they had beene able to haue done in your caftel, with their thundring ordnaunce." The Countesse somewhat shamefaft and abasshed, to heare herselfe so greatly prayfed of a Prince so greate, began to blushe and taint with rofeall colour, the whitenesse of her alablafter face. Then lifting vp her bashfull eyes, somewhat towards the king, she said vnfo him: "My foueraigne Lord, your grace may speake your pleasure, but I am well assured, that if you had seen the number of shotte, which by the space of xyn. houres were beftowed fo thicke as hayle, vpon every part of the fort, you might haue judged what good wil the Scots did beare vnfo mee and my people. And for my felle I am assured, that if I had made proufe of that which you faye, and submited myselfe to their mercie, my bodye nowe had been disfolued into duft." The king astonned with so sarge and wise aunswere, chaunging
his minde, went towarde the castell: where after interteignement and accustomed welcome, he began by litle and litle, to feele himselfe attached wyth a newe fier. Which the more he laboured to refist, the more it inflamed: and feelinge this newe mutacion in himselfe, there came into his mind, an infinite number of matters, balancing betwene hope and feare, somtimes determining to yeld vnto his passions, and somtimes thinking clerely to cut them of, for feare leaft by committinge himselfe to his affections, the vrgent affayres of the warres, wherwith hee was involued, should haue ill successe. But in the ende vanquished wyth Loue, hee purposed to proue the hart of the Counteffe, and the better to attayne the fame he toke her by the hand, and prayed her to shewe him the commodities of the fortreffe. Which thee did so well, and with so good grace intertainde them all the whyle wyth infinite talke of diuers matters, that the litle grifts of loue which were scarceely planted, began to growe so farre as the rootes re-mayned fast grounded in the depthe of his harte. And the kyng not able any longer to endure such a charge in his minde, pressed with grieue, deuised by what meanes he might enjoye her, which was the cause of his difquiet. But the Counteffe seing him so pen-sifie, without any apparaunt occasion, sayde vnto hym: "Sir, I doe not a little manuell to see you reduced into these alterations: for (me thincke) your grace is maruelously chaunged within these two or thre houres, that your highnes vouchfaed to enter into this castel for my succour and reliefe in so good time, as al the dayes of my life, both I and mine be greatly bound vnto you, as to him which is not onely content liberally to haue bestowed upon vs the goods which we possesse, but also by his generositie, doth conferue and defend vs from the incursions of the enemie. Wherein your grace doth deuerue double prayse, for a deede so charitable: but I cannot tell nor yet deuise, what shoulde be the cause that your highnesse is so pen-sifie and sorowful, fith without great losse on your parte, your enemies understandinge of your stoute approche, be retired, which ought, as I suppofe, to driue awaye the Melancholie from your Stomacke, and to revoke your former joy, for so much as victorie acquired without effusion of bloud, is al-ways most noble and acceptable before God." The king hearing
this angel's voice, so amiably pronouncing these words, thinking
that of her owne accord shee came to make him mery, determined
to let her vnderstand his griefe, vpon so conueniente occasion
offred. Then with a trembling voice he saide vnto her: "Ah Ma-
dame, how farre be my thoughtes farre differente from those which
you do thincke me to haue: I feele my hart so opprest with care,
as it is impossible to tell you what it is, howbeit the same hath
not beene of long continuance, being attached therewithall, since
my comminge hether, which troubleth me so fore, as I cannot tell
whereupon well to determine." The Countesse seing the king thus
moued, not knowing the caufe whye, was vncertaine what aunswere
to make. Which the king perceyuing, saide vnto her, fetching
a deepe fighe from the bottome of his flomacke: "And what fay
you Madame thereunto, can you giue mee no remedie?" The
Countesse, which newer thoughte that any such discourses could
take place in the kinge's hart, taking things in good part, saide vnto
him: "Syr, I know not what remedie to giue you, if firft you do
not discouer vnto me the griefe. But if it trouble you, that the
Scottifhe kinge hath spoyled your countrie, the losse is not soe
greate, as therewith a Prince so mightie as you be, neede to be
offended: Sithens by the grace of God, the vengeaunce lieth in
your handes, and you may in time chaffe him, as at other times
you haue done." Whereunto the kinge seinge her simplicitie,
aunsweread: "Madame, the beginninge of my griefe ryfeth not
of that, but my wounde resteth in the inwarde parte of my harte,
which pricketh mee so foore, as if I desire from henceforth to
prolonge my life, I muste open the same vnto you, referring the
caufe thereof so secreete, as none but you and I must be partakers.
I must now then confesse vnto you, that in comminge to your
Cafell, and casting downe my head to behold your celestiall face,
and the rest of the graces, wherewith the heauens haue prodigally
endued you, I haue felt (unhappie man as I am) such a sodaine
alteration, in all the most fenible partes of my body, as knowing
my forces diminished, I cannot tel to whom to make complaint of
my libertie loft (which of long time I haue so happily preferued)
but onely to you, that like a faithfull keeper and onely treurer of
my hart, you may by some shining beame of pitie bring againe to
his former mirth and ioye, that which you desire in me: and by
the contrarie, you may procure to me a life more painefull and
greeuoues than a thousand deathes together." When he had ended
these woordes, hee helde his peace, to let her speake, attendinge
none other thing by her aunfwere, but the last decree either of
death or life. But the Countesse with a grauitie conformable to
her honestie and honour, without other movings, said vnto him:
"If any other besides your grace had been so forgetful of himself
to enter in these termes, or to vfe such talke vnto me, I knowe
what should be mine aunfwere, and so it might be, that he shoulde
have occasion not to be well contented, but knowing this your
attempt to proceede rather from the pleafantnes of your hart,
than for other affection, I wil beleue from henceforth, and per-
fwade my felfe, that a Prince fo renowned and gentle as you be,
dothing thincke, and much leffe meane, to attempt any thing
against mine honour, which is a thousand times dearer vnto mee
than life. And I am perfwaded, that you do not so little esteem
my father and my husband, who is for your seruice prifoner in the
hands of the Frenchmen, our mortal enemies, as in their abfence
to procure vnto them such defamation and flaunder. And by
making this request your grace doth swarue from the bounds of
honestie very farre, and you do great injury to your fame, if men
should know what termes you do vfe vnto me. In like manner, I
purpose not to violate the faith, which I haue given to my husband,
but I intend to keepe the fame vnspotted, so long as my soule
shalbe caried in the Chariot of this mortall body. And if I shoulde
so far forget my felf, as willingly to commit a thing so dishonest,
your grace oughte for the loyal seruice of my father and husband
toward you, sharply to rebuke me, and to punishments according
to my defert. For this caufe (moft dradde soueraigne Lord) you
which are accustomed to vanquifhe and subdue other, bee nowe
a conqueror ouer your felfe, and throughly bridle that concu-
picence (if there be any) vnder the raynes of reafon, that being
quenched and overcome, they may no more reuife in you, and
hauing liuely refifted the first affaultes, the victorie is but eafe,
which shalbe a thousande times more glorious and gainefull for
you, than if you had conquered a kingdome. The Countesse
had scarce made an ende of her tale, but one came to tell them
that the Tables were couered for dinner: the king well fedde with
Loue, dined for that time very soberly, and not able to eate but
vpon amorous dishes, did cafte his lokes inconstantly here and
there, and stille his eyes threw the laft loke vpon that part of the
table where the Countesse made, meaneinge thereby to extinguiish
the boiling flames, which inceffantly did burne him, howbeit by think-
ing to coole them, he further plonged himselfe therein. And
wandering thus in diuers cogitations, the wife aunfwered that the
Countesse made, like a vaunt currour, was continually in his re-
membrance, and was well assured of her inincible chaftitie. By
reason whereof, seing that so hard an enterprize required a longer
abode, and that a hart so chaft, could not so quickly be removed
from purpose, carefull on the other side to giue order to the weightie
affayres of his realme, disquieted also on every side, through the
turmoile of warres, determined to depart the next day in the
morning, referring till another time more convenient the purfute
of his loue. Having taken order for his departure, in the morn-
ing he wente to seeke the Countesse, and taking his leave of her,
priaed her to thinke better of the talke made vnto her the daye
before, but aboue al, he besought her to haue pitie vpon him.
Wherunto the Countesse aunfwered, that not onely shee praied
God inceffantly to giue him victorie ouer his outward enemies, but
also grace to tame the carnal passion, which did so torment him.
Certaine dayes after that king Edward was arriued at London,
which was the place of his ordinarie abode, the Countesse of Saris-
burie was aduertised, that the Earle her husband, being out of pryfon,
confumed with griefe and sicknes, died by the way homewards,
And becaufe they had no children, the Earledome returned to the
kinde, which first gaue the same vnto him. And after shee had
lamented the death of her husband the space of manye dayes, shee
returned to her father’s hous, which was Earle of Warwike. And
for so much as he was one of the king’s privie Counfel, and the
most part of the affayres of the Realme passed by his aduise and
counfell, he continued at London, that hee might be more neare
vnto the kinde’s person. The king aduertised of the comming of
the Countesse, thoughte that fortune had opened a way to bring his
enterprife to desired effect, specially for that the death of her husband, and the witnesse of his earnest good will, would make her more tractable. The kinge feing all thing (as he thought) to succeed after his desire, began to renew his first affections, seeking by all meanes to pradtife the good will of the Counteffe, who then was of the age of xxvi. yeares. Afterwards he ordeyned many triumphes at the Tilt and Torney, Mafkes, Momeries, Feastes, Banquettes, and other like pastimes, whereat ladies accustomedlye doe assemble, who made much of them all, and secretely talked wyth them. Notwithstanding he could not so well disguife and counterfaite his passions, but that he still shewed himselfe to beare befe good will to the Countefse. Thus the kinge could not ye such discretion in loue, but that from his secret fier, some evident flames did issue oute: but the Countefse which was a wife and curteous Ladye, did easely perceiue, how the king by chaunging the place, had not altered his affection, and that hee still prosecuted his talke began at Sarifburie. She despying all his amorous countenances, continued her firm and chaste minde: and if it chaunced that sometimes the king made more of her than discretion required, sodainly might have been discrived a certaine pale-neffe in her face, which declared the little pleasure that she toke in his toyes, with a certaine rigour appearinge, that yielded to the king an affured testimonie that he laboured in vaine. Neuertheleffe, she, to cut of all meanes of the kinges purflute, kept still her father's house, shewing herself in no place where the king mighte see her. The king offended, feing himselfe depruied and banished her presence, whom he esteemed as the comfort of his life, made his secretarie priuie to the whole matter, whose fidelity he had wel proud in matters dangerous, with mind to pursufe her by other way, if it chaunced that she persifted in her wonted rigour and refual. Howbeit before he procended any further, fithe he could not secretely talke with her, he purposed to send her a letter, the tenor whereof influeth:

"Madame, if you please by good aduise to confider the begin-ning of my Loue, the continuance of the same, and then the last issue wherunto it tendeth, I am assured that laying your hand on your hart, you wil accuse your selfe, not only of your curst and froward
flomacke hitherto appearing, but also of that newe ingratitude, which you shewe vnto me at this houre, whoe not contented to bathe and plondge mee into the mischappe of my paines paste, but by a newe onset, to abandon your selfe from my presence, as from the sighte of your mortall enemie: wherein I finde that heauen and all his influences, doe crye out for myne ouerthrowe, whereunto I doe agree, since my life taking no vigor and increafe, being oneely sustaine by the favoure of your diuine graces, can not be maintained one oneely minute of a daye, without the liberall helpe of your sweetenesse and vertue: befeching you, that if the hartie prayers of any mortal tormented man, may euuer haue force and power to moue you to pitie, it may pleafe you miraculously to deliuer from henceforth this my poore miserable afflicted mynde, either from death or martyrdom:

He that is more yours than his owne,
Edward, the desolate king of England."

The letter written with his own hande, and sealed with his seal, he commaunded the Secretarie to go to the Countefle, at her father's house, and secretly to deliuer the same. The Countefle hauing red and perufed it, sayd to the Secretarie: "My frende, you shall tell the kyng, that I doe befeche him most humbly, to sende me no more letters or messages touching the matters whereof he hath written: for I am in such wyfe resolued in the aunfwerere, which I made him in my cauffle, as I wyll perfitte immutable, to the ende of my life." The Secretaire retorninge the aunfwerere of the Countefle, the king rapte with an impacient and extreme choler, defired eftfones to glie another attempt: and consuming by lide and litle in this amorous fier, began to fort out of the limits of reafon. And almoft out of his wittes, demaund of his Secretarie: "Do you thinke it expedient that I make request to her father, whose counsell I want in other things?" To whome the Secretarie boldly aunfwered, that he thought it unreasonable to feeke ayde at a father's handes to corrupt the daughter: faithfully telling to the king, the reproche and infamie that would follow thereof, as well for the olde seruice, that her father hadde done to his auncelstours, as for his great prowesse in armes for which he was so greatly commended. But loue, the mortall enemie of all
THE COUNTESSE OF SALESBURIE.

good counsell, so blinded the eyes of the kyng, that without anye further deliberation, he commaunded the Secretarie to go seke the father, to demande his counsell for matters of importance: whiche the Earle vnderstanding, obeyed incontinently, where the king alone in a chamber lying vpon a bed, after hee had commaunded him to shut the dore and to fit downe by him, fayde these wordes: "My lorde, I haue caused you to come hither for a certaine occasion, whiche toucheth me so nighe, as the losse or preferuation of my life. For neuer through any affaut of fortune (the sharpe-neffe wherof I haue often felt) haue I bene vanquished with so great disquiet, as nowe. For I am so vexed with my passions, as being overcome by them, I haue none other refuge, but to a most unhappie death that euer man can suffer, if prefently I bee not holpen. Knowe ye therefore, that I deeme him onely to be happy that by Reason can rule his wyrtas, not suffering hym selfe to be caried into vayne desires: in whiche pointe we do differ from beastes, who being lead onely by naturall order, doe indifferently runne headlong, whether their appetite doth guide them: but we with the measure of Reason, ought to moderate our doings with suche prouidence, as without straying we may chooce the right way of equitie and iustice: and if at any time, the weake flethe doth faint and giue ouer, we haue none to blame but our selues: who deceined by the fadinge shadow and falfe apparaunce of things, fall into the ditche by our selues prepared. And that which I do allege, is proven, not without manifest reason, wherof I nowe doe fele experience, haung let slip the raynes of the bridle to farre ouer my disordinate affections, beyng drawn from the right hande, and traiterously deceiued. And neuerthelesse I can not tell howe to retir to take the right waye, or howe to retourne my back from that which doth me hurt. Wherefore nowe (unfortunate and miferable that I am) I acknowledge my selfe to be like vnto him, that followeth his game in the thicket of a woode, rushinge through thicke and thynne at all aduentures, not knowing howe to finde the waye he entred in, but rather the more he desiereth to follow the trace, the more in the ende he is wrapped in the bushes. So it is my Lorde, that I can not and may not for all my forefayd allegations, so colour my fault, or purge myne error, but that
I must confesse and acknowledge it to be in me: but I speake to this ende, that seeking a farre of the originall of my grieue, you would helpe me to complayne, and thereby to take pitie vpon me. For to tell you the truthe, I am so intricated in the labarinthe of my vnbrideled will, as the more I doe aspire to the better (alas) the worfe I am. Haue not I good cause to complaine my Lorde, that after so manye famous victories achieved by Sea and Lande, wherewith I haue renowned the memorie of my name in all places, am now bound and daunted with an appetite so outrageous, as I can not helpe my selfe, whereby myne owne life, or rather death, is consumed in suche anguifhe and mortall paine, as I am become the very manfion of all mifchies, and onely receptacle of all miferies? What sufficient excuse for my fault may I henceforth alleage, that in the end will not display it to be both unprofitable and voyde of reafor? But what shall be the buckeler of my shame, if not my youthly age, which pricketh me forewarde to love like a sharpe nedle, the force whereof I haue so ofte repelled, as nowe being vanquished, I haue no place for reft, but in thy mercy, who in my father's dayes diddest liberally spende thy bloud, in manye notable enterprifes in his seruice, whiche afterwardes thou hast so well continued, that in many daungerous affaires, I haue divers times proued the fidelitie of thy counsell, whereby I haue brought to passe thinges of great importaunce, and therein hitherto never founde thee flacke and vnfaityfull. Whiche when I remember doe prouoke me to be bolde to declare vnto you mine entent, whiche by youre onely worde you may procure, the fruite whereof being gotten, you shal winne the heart of a king, to be vfed as you life for euer. And the more the thing shal feeme harde, difficult or painefull, the greater shal your merite be, and the more firmely shal he be bounde, whiche doth receive it. Consider then my Lorde, howe profitable it is, to haue a king at your commaundement. You haue also foure fones, whom you cannot honourably aduaunce with out my fauour: swareing vnto you by my regall Scepter, that if you comfort me in these my troubles, I will endure the thrée yongest with so large posieffions, as they shal haue no caufe to be offended with theire eldeft brother. Remember likewyse, what
rewardes I haue bestowed vpon them that ferue me. And if you haue knowne how liberall I haue bene towards other, thinke then I praye you, how bountifull you bynde me towards you, vpon whome my life and deathe dependeth.” The king ending his forowfull complainte, stopped by fobbes and sighes, helde his peace. And the Earle who tenderly loued his Prince, hearing this pitifull discours, (the faithful witnisse of his inward passion) and not able to coniecture the occasio, was maruellously troubled in him selfe, and without longer aduise, overcomne with pitie, he made a liberall and very fodayne offer to the king of his life, his children, and of all that he was able to doe. “Com-
maunde, my soueraigne Lorde (quod he with weaping teares) what it shallow pleafe you to haue me doe, if it be, euen to bestowe my life for your fake. For by the faiythe and fealtie that I do owe to God and to your grace, I sware, that many daies and yeares paffe, I haue bound my selfe inviolably, and all mine abilitie without exception, so long as this tongue is able to flurre, and breathe shall remayne within this bodye, faithfully and truely to ferue your maiestie, not onely for that dutie bindeth me, but if it were for your fake, to tranfgreffe and exceede the bondes of mine honour.” But the good olde Earle, whiche never thought that a request so vniust and dishonest would haue proceeded out of the mouth of a king, with franke and open harte made that liberall offer. The king then hauing founded the depth of the Earle’s affection, chaunging colour, his eyes fixed on the grounde, sayde vnto him: “Your daughter the Countesse of Sarifburie, (my Lorde) is the onely medicine of my trauayles, whome I doe loue better than mine owne life, and doe feele my selfe so inflamed with her heauenly beautie, as without her grace and favoure I am not able hereafter to liue: for this con-
ideration, fith you desire to doe me service, and to preferue my life, I praye you to deale with her, that she with compaffion may looke vpon me. Craving this request at your handes, not without extreme shame, considering as well your honorable state, as your auncient merites imploied vpon me and my progenitours: but according to your modestie and accustomed goodnesse, impute the faulte vpon amorous loue, which in such wife hath alienated

THE COUNTESSE OF SALESBURIE.
my libertie, and confounded my heart, that now ranging out
of the boundes of honour and reason, I feele my selfe tormented
and vexed in mynde. Whereby I am prouoked to make this
requeft, and not able to expel the mortall poyfon out of my
hart, which hath diminifhed my force, intoxicated my fense,
and hath depriued my minde from all good counsell, as I can
not tell what to doe but to feek to you for helpe, hauing no
kinde of reft but when I fee her, when I speake of her, or
thinke vpon her. And I am at this prefent reduced into fo
pitifull plight as being not able to wynne her by intreaties, offers,
prefentes, futes, embaffages and letters, my onely and laft refuge
and affured port of all my miferies, refeth in you, either by
death to ende my life, or by force to obtayne my desire.” The
Earle hearing the vanciuile and beaftly demaunde of his foueraigne
Lorde, blushing for blaze, and throughly aftonned, filled alfo
with a certaine honeft and vertuous diflayne, was not able to
diffolue his tongue to render a worthy aunfwere to the afflicted
Prince. Finally, like one awaked from his dead sleepe, he faid
vnto him: “Sir, my witte fayle, my vertue revolte, my
tongue is mute, at the wordes that proceege from you, whereby
I feele my felfe brought into two ftraunge and perilous pointes,
as paffing either by one or other, I muft nedes fall into very
great daunger. But to refolue vpon that which is moft expedi-
ten, hauing geuen vnto you my faithe in pledge, to succour and
helpe you euene to the abandonning of honor and life, I will not
be contrarie to my wordes. And touching my daughter, for
whom you make requesft, I will reueale vnto her the effecte of
your demaunde: yet of one thing I muft tell you, fir, power I
have to entreate her, but none at all to force her. Inough it
is that he vnderstand of me, what hart and affection you beare
vnto her. But I doe maruell, yea and complaine of you, pardon
me (moft drad foueraigne) and suffer me without offence to
discharge my grief before your preffence, rather than to your
blame and mine eternal infamie, it shoule be manifefted and
publifhed abrode by other. I fay, that I maruell, fir, what
occaffion moued you to commit fuch reproch in my stock and
bloud, and by an act fo shamefull and laftiuious, to difhonour
the same: whiche neuer disdained to serue both you and yours, to the vtermost of their powers. Alas, vnhappy father that I am, is this the guerdon and recompence that I and my children shall expect for our trusty and faithfull seruice? O sir, for God's sake, if you lifte not to be liberall of your owne, feke not to dishonour vs, and to inflict vpon our race such notable infamie. But who can loke for worfe at the handes of his mortall and cruel enemie? It is you, even you it is (most noble Prince) that doth rauife my daughter's honor, dilpoyle me of my contentation, ye take from my children hardinesse to shewe their faces, and from all our whole house, the auncient fame and glorie. It is you that doth obfcur the clearenesse of my bloud, with an attempt so dishonest and deteftable, as the memorie thereof shall neuer be forgotten. It is you that doth conftraine me to be the infamous minister of the totall destruccion of my progenie, and to be a flameleffe Pandarus of my daughter's honor. Doe you thinke to helpe and succour me, when others shall attempt to object vnto my face this flaunnder and reproche? but if your selfe doe hurt me, where shall I hereafter feke reliefe and succour. If the hande which ought to helpe me, be the very fame that doth geue me the wounde, where shall the hope bee of my recouerie? For this caufe, may it pleafe your maieftie, whether iuftlie I do make my complaints, and whether you geue me caufe to aduance my cries vp into the heauens, your selfe shall be the judge: for, if like a judge in deede you doe geue ouer your difordinate affection, I then appeale to the judgement of your incinible minde, of late accomplisht with all curtesie and gentlenesse. On the other side, I doe lament your fortune, when I thinke vpon the reaons which you haue alleaged, and the greater caufe I haue to plaine, because I haue knownen you from your youth, and haue alwayes deemed you at libertie and free from such passions, not thrall or subiect to the flames of loue, but rather geuen to exercice of armes. And nowe seing you to become a prisoner of an affection vnworthy your estatte, I can not tell what to thinke, the noueltie of this sodain chaunce femeth to be so strange. Remember sir, that for a little suspicion of adulterie, you caufed Roger Mortimer to be put to death. And
(being scarce able to tell it without tears) you caufed your owne mother miserable to die in prifon: and God knoweth howe fimple your accusations were, and uppon howe light ground your suspicion was conceived. Do not you knowe howe woonderfully you be molested with wares, and that your enemies, trauell day and night to circumuen you, both by Sea and Lande? Is it nowe tyme then to give your felfe to delightes, and to captuate your mynde in the pleasures of Ladies? Where is the auncient generofitie and nobilitie of your bloud? Wher is magnanimitie and valour, wherewith you haue aftonned your eunemies, flewed your felfe amiable to your frends, and wonderfull to your subiefts? Touching the laft point, wherin you threaten, that if my daughter doe not agree to your desire, you will forcibly enioye her, I can never confeffe that to be the fait of a va- liaunt and true king, but of a vile, cowardly, cruell and libidinous Tryaunt. I truft it be not the pleasure of God, that nowe at the age you be of, you will begin to force Gentlewomen that be your humble subiefts, which if you do, this iland shall lose the name of a Realme, and hereafter shalbe deemed none other, but a fane-
tuarie of theues and murderers. If then, (to conclude this my sorowefull and heauie complaint) you may, or can by your flatter-
ries, promifes and presentes, allure my daughter to your vn bri-
deled appetites, I shall have occasion to bewayle her difhonestie, and to deeme her, as an incontinent daughter, degenerated from the vertues of her progenitors. But touching your owne perfone, I haue nothing to faye, but that herein you doe followe the common fort of men, that be futors to Ladies, willing to pleafe their fanfies. There refeth onely nowe for me to aunswere the favour, whiche in time to come you promise to me and my chil-
dren: I couet not after any thing reprochfull to me or them, or to any of our posteritie, that may make vs ashamed, knowing in what contempt and reputation they be, which being borne of baue parentage, be arrived to goods and honour, by gratifying and obeying Princes and kings in their dishonest lustes and appetites. Remember sir, that within these fewe dayes, being in campe against the Scottes, you vpbrayed a certaine man (which shalbe namelesse) for being a minifter of your father's loue, who
from the state of a barber, was advanced to the degree of an Earle, and how you sayd, that if in time to come he amended not his manners, you would send him to the shop againe. And for my part, I am of opinion, that honest pouertie hath euer bene the ancient and greatest inheritance amongst the noble Romaines, which if it be condemned by the ignoraunt multitude, and if we therefore shoulde gene place, making greater accompt and estimation of richeffe and treasures, then of vertue: I doe say for mine own part, that by the grace of God, I am abundantly provieded, for the maintenance of me and mine, not like an ambitious man or couetous, but as one satisfied with the good wil of fortune. I do most humbly then beseech you (sir) for conclusion, to take in good parte, that which my dutie and honour doe contraine me to speake. And so by your grace's leaue, I will departe towarde my daughter, to let her understand from point to point your majestie's pleasure." And without tarying for other replie of the kyng, he went his way discoursing divers thinges in his minde, vpon that which had pased betwene the king and him. The reasons which the Earle had made, so pearced the affeftions of the passionate Prince, as vn Certaine what to saye, he condemned himselfe, knowing very well, that the Earle not only vpon right and iust cause, had pronounced these wordes: but also that he had done the office of a faithfull servaunt and truflie counsellor, in such fort, as feling his conscience touched at the quicke, he could not excuse himselfe from committing a dishonest charge to a father so commendable and vertuous in the behalfe of his daughter. Thus he determined to chagne his opinion. Afterwardes when he had throwen forth many sighes, he spake these wordes to himselfe.

"O miserable man, cut of this amorous practife, howe arte thou defrauded of right senfe to caste thy mynd vpon her, whom thou oughteft to vfe with such reverence as thou wouldest doe thine own proper fister, for the seruice which thou and thy progenitors have receiued of the good Earle her father? Open the eyes of thine understanding and knowe thy selfe, geue place to reaflon, and reforme thy vnshamefull and difordinate appetites. Refift with al thy power this wanton will which doth enuiron thee.
Suffer not this tyrant love to bewitch or deceive thee.” Sodainly after he had spoken those words, the beautie of the Countesse representing it self before his eyes, made him to alter his minde again, and to reiect that which he before allowed, saying thus: “I feele in minde the cause of mine offence, and thereby doe acknowledge the wrong, but what shal I doe? fithe I am not able any longer to withftande beautie, that cruell murderer, whiche doth force and maifter me fo much? Let fortune then and loue doe what they lift, the faire Countesse shalbe myne, whatsoeuer come of it. Is it a notable vice in a king to loue his subiecke’s daughter? Am I the first vpon whome such inconuenience hath come?” This talke ended, he deluded himself, and thinking vpon the contrary, he accufed himself again, and then from this he altered again to the other. And being in this perplexitie, he paffed daye and night, with such anguisf and dolor, as euer man doubted his health: and floting thus betwene hope and defpaire, he refolued in thend to attend the father’s answere. The Earle then being gone out of the king’s chambre, aggauated with sorrowfull thoughtes, full of rage and discontent, thought good to delay the matter till the next day, before he spake to his daughter: and then calling her vnto him, and caufing her to fit against him, he refolued the matter in such wise. “I am affured, deare daughter, that you will no leffe maruell than be aftonned to heare what I shal fay vnto you, and fo much the more, when you doe fee, how farre my tale shal exceede the order of Reafon. But for fo much as of twoo euils the leaffe is to be choene, I doubt not, but like a sages and wise woman, which I haue alwayes knowne you to be, you will flay vpon that whiche I haue determined. Touching my self, fith it hath pleaed God to geue me knowledge of good and il, hitherto I haue still preferred honoure before life, bicaufe (after mine opinion) it is a leffe matter to die innocently, than to live in difhonour and shame of the worlde. But you know what libertie he hath, which is vnder the power of another, being sometime con-tryned to make faire weather of thinges not onely clean contrary to his mynde, but alfo (which is worse) against his owne conscience, being oftentimes forced according to the qualitie
of the tyme, and pleasure of the state, to chaunge his maners, and to put on newe affections. Whereof I haue thought good to put you in remembrance, because it toucheth the matter, whiche I purpose to tell you. Thus it is (deare daughter) that yeaster-
day after dynner, the kyng sent for mee, and being come before him, with a very instant and pitiful prayer, he required me (his eyes full of teares) to doe a thing for hym that touched his life. I whiche (besides that I am his subiect and seruant) haue always borne a particular affection to his father and him, without deliberation what the matter should be, betrothed to him my faith to obey his request, if it coste me the price of mine honour and life. He assuring himselfe of my liberall promife, after many wordes ioyned with an infinite number of sighes, discover-
ing vnfo to me the secrete of his harte, told me, that the torment which he indured, proceeded no where els but of the fervent loue that he bare vnfo to you. But, O immortall God, what man of any discretion would haue thought that a king could be fo impudent and vnshamefaft, as to committe to a father a charge so dishonest towards his own daughter?" The Earle hauing recited in order the historie past betwene hym and the kyng, sayde thus vnfo her: "Consider you, swete daughter, myne vnaduifed and simple promife, and the vnbrideled mynde of an amorous kyng, to whome I made aunfwere, that intreate you thereunto I was able, but force you I could not. For this caufe (deare daughter) I doe praye you at this instant to obeye the kynges pleasure, and thereby to make a present by your father of your honest chaftitie, fo dearely esteemed and regarded by you, specially, that the thing may fo secretly be done as the fault be not bruted in the cares of other. Neuerthelesse, the choyfe reseth in you, and the key of your honour is in your own hands, and that which I haue sayde vnfo to you, is but to kepe promife with the king." The Countesse all the while that her father thus talked, change her colour with a comly shamefaftneffe, inflamed with a vertuous disdaine, that he whiche had behold her then, would haue thought her rather some celestial goddefe than a humaine creature: and after long filence, with an humble grauitie she began thus to make her aunfwere: "Your wordes haue so confounded me, and
brought me into such admiration (my Lorde and right honourable father) that if all the partes of my bodie were converted into tongues, they could not bee sufficient worthily to expresse the least part of my sorrowe and disquietnesse: and truely very iustly may I complayne of you, for the little estimation you haue of me, which am deried of your owne fleche: and for the ranfome of the fraile and tranfitorie life which you haue geuen me vpon earth, you wyll for recompence nowe defraude me of myne honour: whereby I do perceiue that not onely al nature's lawes be cancelled and mortified in you, but which is worfe, you doe exceede therin the cruelties of beastes, who for all their brutifheneffe be not fo unnatural to do wrong to their owne yong, or to offer their fruite to the mercie of an other, as you haue done yours to the pleasure of a Kyng: for notwithstanding the straight charge and authoritie whiche you haue ouer mee, to commaunde me being your right humble and very obedient daughter, yet you oughte to thinke and remember, that you haue neuer feene in mee any acte, mocion, figne, or woord, to incite you to move such dishonest talk. And although the king many times, with infinite number of prayers, prefentes, meffages and other such allurementes of persuaion hath displaid and uttered all the art of his mynde to seduce and corrupt me, yet he was neuer able to receiue other aunswere of me, but that honor was a thousand times derer vnto me then life, which fiill I meant to kepe secret from your knowledge euyn as I haue done from other of mine aliaunce, for feare leaft you should be induced to commit some trefpas, or confpire against our king, foreseeing the strange accidences whiche haue chaunced for like matters, to the ruine of many cities and prouinces. But, good God, my doubt is nothing to purpose, fithat that your selfe is the shamefleffe poft of an act so dishonest: and to conclude in fewe wordes, daily I had good hope, that the king feing me at a point fiill to conferue my chaftitie inuiolable he would give ouer to pursufe me any longer, and would haue suffered me hereafter to luye in quiet with mine equals, but if fo be he doe continue obstinate in his olde folly, I am determined rather to die, than to doe the thing that shall hurt me and pleasure him: and for feare that he take from me by force
that which of mine owne accord I will not grantt, following your counsell, of twoo euilles I will chose the leaft, thinking it more honourable to destroy and kill my felfe with mine own handes, then to suffer such blot or shame to obscure the glorie of my name, being desirous to committe nothing in secrete, that sometime hereafter being published, may make me ashamed and chauge colour. And wher you say that you haue sworn and gaged your faith to the king, for the assurauence of your promife, it was very ill done, before you did consider, what power fathers haue over their children, whiche is so well defined by the lawe of God, as they be not bound to their parentes in that which is against his deuine commandementes: much leffe may they bynde vs to things incestuous and dishoneft, which specially and straitly be inioyned vs not to perfourme, if we therunto be required: and it had bene farre more decent, and excuuable before God, if when you made that foolyfhe promife to the kyng you had promished him, rather to strangle mee with your owne handes, than to content to let me fall into a faulte so abominable: and to thend I may tell you the last determination, and conclusion of that whiche I am determined by good aduife and immutable counsell: thus it is. You shall tell the king, that I had rather lose my life after the moste cruell and Shameful maner that may be deuised, then to consent to a thing so dishonest, hauing long time fixed this sayyng in mind, "That honest death doth honor and beautifie the forepausst life." The father hearing the wife aunswerd of his daughter, gaue her his blessing, in his hart praying her godly minde, befeching God to helpe her and to kepe her vnder his protection, and to confirme her in that holy and virtuous determination. Then feling him greatly comforted, he repaired to the king, to whom he said: "Pleaeth your grace, to thintent I might obserue my promife, I swere by the faith that I doe owe vnto God and you, that I haue done what I can with my daughter, discloising vnto her your whole minde and pleasure, and exhorting her to satisfy your request, but for a refolute aunswere she faith, that rather she is contented to suffer most cruel death than to commit a thing so contrarie to her honour. You know (Sir) what I sayd vnto you still, that I might entreate her,
but force her I could not: having then obeyed your command-
ment, and accomplished my promise, it may please you to geue
me leaue to go home to one of my Castels, from henceforth to re-
cline my selfe to quietneffe, and to eafe my decrepit and feeble
age." Which the king willingly granted. The same daye hee
departed from the Courte with his fonnes and went home to his
Countrie, leauing at London his wife and daughter and the reste
of his houfholde, thinking therby to discharge himselfe of those
thinges with out the kinge's displeasure. The king on the other
side was no foner aduertised of the Earle's departure, and that he
had left his daughter behinde him at London, but he knew the
father's minde and purpoſe, and fell in suche dispaire of his loue,
as he was like to haue runne out of his wittes for forrowe. The
nightes and dayes were all one to him, for hee could take no reft,
he gaue ouer vie of armes and admiinistration of iustice, hunting
and hauing, wherin before that time he had great delight:
and all his study was many times to paſse and repaſse before the
gate of the Countefle, to proue if he might atteaine to haue some
fight of her: and thinges were brought to fo pitifull flate, that
within fewe dayes the citizens and other gentlemen began to per-
ceiue the raging loue of their Prince, euerie of them with common
voice blaming the crueltie of the Countefle that was vnmarried, who
the more she proud the king inflamed with her loue, the more
fqueymifh she was of her beautie. The peres and noble men feing
their king reduced to such extremitie, moued with pitie and com-
passion, began secretly to pratiſe for him, fome with threatninges,
fome with flatteries and perfuasions: fome went to the mother,
declaring vnto her the eternall reſt and quiet prepared for her
and all her friendes, if she would persuade her daughter to encline
to the kinge's mind, and contrariwyte the daunger imminent ouer
her head. But all theſe deuifes were in vayne, for the Countefle
moued no more then a harde rocke beaten with diuerfe tempestes:
and at lengthe feing that euery man fpake diuerſfly, as their affec-
tions ledde them, she was fo troubled and penſſe in harte, as
fearing to bee taken, and that the kyng vanquifhed with his strong
passion, by succession of tyme would vfe his force, and violentlye
oppreſſe her, founde means to get a great sharpe knife, whiche
she caried about her secretly vnder her gowne, of purpofe, that if she faue perill to be defloured, fhee might kill her felfe. The Courtiers offended with the martyrdom of their matfer, and de-fyrous to gratifie and feke meanes to doe hym pleafure, confpyred all againft the Earle's familie, lettyng the kynge to vnderftande that it were moft expedient, for that things were out of hope, to caufe Ælips to be brought to his Palace, that there he might vfe her by force. Wherunto the king (being dronke in his own paffion) did willingly agree: notwithstanding, before he paffed any further, for that hee faithfully loued the Counteffe, he determined to aduertife her mother of that which he intended to doe, and commaunded his Secretarie to go feke her with diligence, and without concealing any thing from her knowledge, to inftuite her of the whole. The Secretarie finding the mother of the counteffe, faid vnto her: "Madame, the king hath willed me to fay vnto you that he hath done what he can, and more then his eftate requireth, to win the grace and loue of your daughter, but for that she hath defpifed his long fute, difdained his preffence, and abhorred his griefes and complaintes, knowing not what to do any more, his laft refuge is in force, doing you to vnderftande herof, to the intent that you and fhee may confider what is to be done in this behalf: for he hath determined whether you will or no, to fetch her out openly by force, to the great diſhonour, flander and in-fame of all your kinne. And where in time paff, he hath loued and fauoured the Earle your husband, he meaneth shortly to make him vnderftand what is the effect of the infi indignation of fuch a Prince as he is." The good Lady hearing this fodaine and cruel meffage, was afstonned in fuch wife, as she thought how the faue her daughter already trained by the heares of her head, her garments haled and torn in pieces, with ruffull and lamentable voyce crying out to him for mercy: for this caufe with blubbering teares, trembling for feare, fhe fell down at the Secretaries feete, and straightlye imbracing his knees, fayde vnto hym: "Maifter Secretarie, my deare louing friend: befeche the king in my name to remember the payne and fervice done by our auncefours. Intreate him not to diſhonoure my house in the abence of the Earle my husbande: and if you be not able by your perfwafion
to mollifie his hard hart, desire him for a while to take pacience, vntill I have aduertised my daughter of his will and pleasure, whom I hope to perfwade, that she shall satisfy the kinge's requet.” When she had made this aunswer, the Secretary declared the fame to the kinge, who madde with anger and passioned with loue, was content, and neverthelesse commaunded his gentlemen to be in readinesse to seeke the Countesse. In the mean time the mother of faire Ælips went to her daughter's chamber, and after she had commaunded all her maids, which accompanied her, to withdraw themselfes out of the chamber, shee began in few woordes to recite vnto her the message done vnto her by the Secretary: finally with sobbinge sighes shee laid vnto her: “The dayes have been (deare daughter) that I haue seen thee to keepe thy state amonges the chiefeffe of all the Ladies of this Realme: and I haue counted my selfe most happie that euuer I did beare the in my wombe, and haue thoughte, by meanes of thy beautie and vertue, one day to see thee become the ioye and comfort of all thy frendes: but now my cogitacions be turned cleane contrary, through thine vnluckie fate: nowe I thinke thee to be borne not onely for the vnuenfall ruine of all our familie, but also (which greeueth me most) to be an occasion and instrument of my death, and defolation of all thy frendes: but if thou wilt somewhat moderate thy rygor all this heauines shortly may be turned to ioye: for our king and foueraign Lorde is not onely in loue with thee, but for the ardent affection and amitie that he beareth thee, is out of his wittes, and now doth confpire against vs, as though we were traytors and murderers of our Prince: in whose handes (as thou knowest) doth rest the life, honor and goods both of thy selfe and of vs all: and what glory and triumph she shall be reported of thee to our posterity, when they shaal know how by thy obstinate crueltie, thou haft procured the death of thine old father, the death of thy hoore hedged mother, and the destruction of thy valiant and coragious brethren, and dispoyled the rest of thy bloud of their posessions and abilitie? But what sorowe and grieue will it be, to see them wander in the world like vagabounds banished from their liuings, and remaine in continuall povertie, without place and refuge of their miferie? who in stead of bleff-
ing or prayinge the houre of thy birth, will curse the in their minds a thousand times, as the cause of all their ouerthrow and ill fortune. Thinke and confider vpon the fame (deare daughter) for in thee alone refeth the conferuacion of our liues, and hope of all our frendes.” This lamentable discouerfe ended, the afflicte Counteffe not able anye longer to refite that pangue, began to waxe so faint as wyth her armes a croffe she fell downe halfe deade vpon her daughter: who feinge her without mouinge and without any apparaunce of life, and all the partes of her bodye to waxe cold, she quicklye layde her downe, and then with helpe and other thinges apt for fowninges, shee made her come to herselfe againe, and thinking wholly to recouere her, she earnestly promised to do what she would haue her, saying vnto her: “Do awaye your teares (Madame) moderate your tormentes, reuoke your former ioye, and be of good cheere, for I am dispoed to obey you. God defende that I shoule be the caufe of the paine which I fee you to suffer: newe am I ready to goe with you to the kynge, where if it shall plesse you, we two withoute other company will do our owne errande and attempt the beginning of our enterprife.” The mother full of ioye, lifting vp her hands to the heauens, tenderly embraced her daughter, and manye times did kisse her, and after shee had commaunded her Coche to be made readye, she wente forth with her daughter, accompanied onelye with two Gentlewomen to the kynge’s Palace. Being come thither, they fente worde to the Secretary, that brought her the messadge, who conducted them to the kynge’s chamber, and presentinge them before him, fayde: “Syr, beholde the companye which you haue so long time defir’d: who are come to do your grace humble reuerence.” The king greatly aftonied, went forth to meete them, and with joyful countenaunce faide: “Welcome, Lady Counteffe, and your long defir’d company. But what good fortune hath brought you hither nowe?” The Counteffe hauing made her obeyfance, yet all frighted with feare, aunswered him: “Beholde here my Lorde your fayre Ælips so long time wished for, who taking repentance for her former cruelty and rigor, is come to render herselfe at your commaundement.” Then the king beholding the yong Counteffe tremblinge for feare, like a leafe shaken with the winde (with her
eyes fixed on the grounde) approaching neer her, toke her by the hande, and kissing her, sayd: “Welcome, my life and soule.” But she no more moved than a fierce lion environed with cruell beastles, flood still and helde her peace, her harte so confrayned for sorrow and despite, as she was not able to aunsweare a word. The kinge who thoughte that such passion proceeded of shame, commaunded the Gentlewomen, that were in her company, to departe the chamber, fauing the mother which broughte her to the entrie of his chamber, who withdrawing herselfe backe, left her to the mercy of lone and the kinge. So soon as the king was entred the chamber he shutte the doore after him. Which ælips perceivinge beganne to feel a furious combate betweene her honour and life, fearing to be defloured, and seing her abandoned of al humaine succour, falling downe prostrate at his feete, she sayd vnto him: “Gracious and redoubted Prince, sith my heavy fortune hath broughte mee hither, like an innocent Lambe to the sacrifie, and that my parents amazed through your furie, are become rauifhers of me against my will, and contrary to the duety of their honor, haue deliuered me into your handes, I humbly beseech your maiestie, if there remaine in your noble personage any sparker of vertue and Princely affection, before you passe any further to satisifie your desire, to let me proue and vnderstande by effecte, if your loue be such, as oftentimes by letters and mouth you haue declared vnto me. The requeste which I will make vnto you shall be but easie, and yet shall satisifie mee more than all the contentacion of the world. Otherwise (sir) doe not thinke that so longe as my life doth continue, I am able to do that which can contente your desire. And if my fortune shall seeme reaonable, and grounded vpon equitie, before I doe open and declare the same more at large, assure the performance thereof vnto me by oth.” The king hearing her prayer to be so reaonable, wherunto rather then to refuse it, he swore by his Scepter, taking God to witnesse and all the heauenly powers for confirmation of that which he pretended to promisse: faide vnto her: “Madame, the onely maistresse and keper of my louing harte, fith of your grace and curtesie you haue vouchsafed to come vnto my Palace, to make request of my onely faououre and good will,
THE COUNTESS OF SALESBURIE.

which now I irreuocably do content and graunt, swearing vnto you by that honourable sacramente of Baptisme, whereby I was incorporated to the Church of God, and for the loue that I beare you (for greater assurance I cannot giue) I will not refuse any thing, that is in my power and ability, to the intent you may not be in doubt whether I do loue you, and intend hereafter to impoy my selfe to serue and please you: for otherwyse I should falsifie my faith, and more fervently I cannot bind my selfe if I shoulde sweare by all the othes of the worlde." The fayre Countesse sitting still vpon her knees, although the king many times prayed her to rife vp, reuerently toke the king by the hand, saying: "And I do kiffe this royal hand for loyall testimonie of the fauour which your grace doth shew me." Then plucking out a sharpe knife, which was hidden under her kirtle, all bathed and washed in teares, reclining her pitifull eyes towards the king, that was appalled with that sight, she said vnto him: "Sir, the gift that I require, and wherfore your faith is bound, is this. I moost humblie desire you, that rather then to dispoile me of mine honour, with the sworde girded by your side, you do vouchsafe to ende my life, or to suffer me prefently, with this sharpe pointed knife in my hand to thruft it to my hart, that mine innocent bloud, doing the funerall honour, may beare witnesse before God of my vndefiled chafltity, as being vverterly resolued honourablie to die. And that rather then to lose mine honour, I may murther my selfe before you wyth this blade and knife in preuent hand." The king burning with amorous heate, beholding this pitifull spectacle, and consideringe the inexpugnable constancie and chafltity of the Countesse, vanquished by remorfe of conscience, joyned with like pitie, taking her by the hand, said: "Rife vp Lady, and lye from henceforth assurred: for I will not ne yet pretende all the dayes of my life, to commit any thing in you against your will." And plucking the knife out of her hand, exclaimed: "This knife hereafter shall bee the purfuant before God and men of this thine inexpugnable chafltity, the force whereof wanton loue was not able to endure, rather yelding place to vertue, which being not alienated from me, hath made me at one instant victorious ouer my selfe, which by and by I will make you to vn-
therflande to your greate contentacion and greater maruel. For affu-
rance wherof I desire none other thing of you, but a chaffe kiffe.”
Which receyued, hee opened the doore and caufed the Counteffe
to come in with the Secretarie and the gentlewomen, and the same
time hee called alfo the Courtiers and Piers of the Realme, which
were then in the base Court of the Palace, among whom was the
Archbifhop of Yorke, a man of great reputacion and singular
learning, to whom with the knife in his hand he recited particularly
the difcourfe of his loue: and after he toke the Counteffe by the
hande, and fayde vnto her: “Madame, the houre is come that for
recompence of your honest chaitly and vertue, I wil and confent
to take you to wife, if you thinke good.” The Counteffe hearinge
those wordes began to recoloure her bleake and pale face with a
vermilion tente and rofeal rude, and accomplifhed with in-
credible delight and ioye, falling downe at his feete, faide vnto him
“My Lord, for afo much as I neuer loked to be aduanced to fo
honourable fiate as fortune nowe doth offer, for merite of a benefi-
fo high and great which you prefent vnto me, vouchfauing to
abafe your felfe to the epoufal of fo poore a Lady, your maiesties
pleaure being such, behold me ready at your commaundement.”
The king taking her vp from kneeling on the ground, comma-
unded the Bifhop to pronounce with highe voice the vifual words of
Matrimonie. Then drawing a riche Diamond from his finger hee
gave it to the Counteffe, and kiffling her, faide: “Madame, you
be Queene of England, and prefently I doe give you thirty thou-
flande angells by the yeare for your reueneu. And the Duchie of
Lancaster being by conficnation fallen into my hands, I guie alfo
vnto you, to beftowe vpon your felfe and your frends.” Al
which inrolled according to the maner of the countrie, the king
(accomplifhing the mariage) rewarded the Counteffe for the
rigorous intereftes of his fo long loue, with fuche hap and content
as they may iudge which haue made affay of like pleaure, and
reouered the fruite of fo long purfuete. And the more magnifi-
centlye to feomnize the mariage, the kinge assembled all the
Nobilitie of Englannde, and fomoned them to be at London the
first day of July then folowinge, to beautifie and affift the Nup-
cialles and coronation of the Queene. Then he fente for the
father and brethren of the Queene, whom he embraced one after another, honouring the Earle as his father, and his sons as his brethren, wherof the Earle wonderfully rejoied, feinge the conceyued hope of his daughter’s honour sorted to so happie effecte, as well to the perpetual fame of him and his, as to the everlafting aduancement of his house. At the appointed day the Queene was broughte from her father’s house apparelled with Royall vestures, euen to the Palace, and conducted with an infinite number of Lords and Ladies to the Church, where when service was done, the kinge was maried (againe) openly, and the same celebrated, shee was conueyed vp into a publike place, and proclamed Queene of England, to the exceedinge gratulacion and ioye incredible of all the subiectes.
AN ADVERTISEMENT

To the Reader.

After these tragical Nouelles and dolorous Histories of Bandello, I have thoughte good for thy recreacion, to refresh thy mind with some pleasantaunt deuises and disportes: least thy spirites, and senses shoule be apalled and astonned with the fondrie kindes of cruelties remembred in the vij. of the former nouelles. Which be so straunge and terrible as they be able to affright the stoutefl. And yet considering that they be very good lefsons for auoyding like inconueniences, and apt examples for continuacion of good and honest life, they are the better to be borne with, and may with leffe astonnishment be read and marked. They that follow, be mitigated and sweetened with pleasure, not altogether so fower as the former be. Prayinge thee most hartely, paciently to beare with those that shall occure, either in these that folow, or in the other that are past before.

END OF VOL I.